

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

Season Two

Insert 1

★
★
★
★
★
★

SURPRISE!! 🎉💎

★
★
★

💎LISA💎

★
★
★

Today will be the happiest day
the happiest day of your life.

You look so lovely
just standing there
hes so lucky to have as a wife
Just count your blessings
and feel in love
may your love be blessed
for ever

caz you look so lovely standing there hes so lucky to have you as his wife. Chorus: Its
your wedding day x3 bayashada namhlanje.

Its your wedding day-Halala ntombazane baku nnyala ka jennyu...Brenda Fassie 🎵🎵

★
★
★

Pastor:"feel free to share with us on why and what are the little things that make you two
so sure,that you love each other and you indeed have to spend the rest of your life
together"

He turns his head to look back at me,he smiles then takes both my hands into his
I return the smile voluntarily,his smile turns into a smirk,hes about to say something
stupid,I can feel it ,I squint my eyes
he sighs

Quinton:"I love the faces you make when you stretch, I love that you let me tickle you as
much as I do, and I love that I can truly be myself with you, as crazy as I can be, and
you love me all the more for it"

I pout my lips as a reaction to his sweet yet funny words

Me:" I love you for never being afraid to be silly with me, for putting up with my unique
sense of humor, and for giving me the privilege of being the only one who knows how
truly hilarious you are"

Quinton:"I love the passion, determination, and perseverance you maintain in everything

you do. It has always been, and I know it will always be, an inspiration"

Me:" I love you for being my best and most supportive friend, for always treating me with love, trust, and respect, and for your infinite understanding and patience"

Quinton:"I love you for always loving me,even though I dont deserve it"

Me:" I love you for always believing in me, for making me feel strong, and for helping me to believe in myself"

we remain quiet and the crowd ululates

My tears prickle as I look at the man standing in front of me and confessing his love for me in front of so many witnesses

Pastor:"WOW...love...so much love between two very young people,and here I was starting to believe that we now live in a generation with a bunch of broken people who Dont know how to love anymore"

the crowd makes those disappointed sounds "mmh mh mh"

Quinton hasnt removed his eyes from me ,I love the fact that his eyes decided to be more greenish today with a mixture of light blue

Pastor:"you can now share your promises and vows to each other before the presence of God.....remember,the promises you make to each other now,you will fulfill them till death do you part"

he says looking at Quinton

Pastor(whispers)"be careful what you promise boy,they Dont forget that easily,she be reminding you every single day"

we both burst into laughter including the crowd as he was speaking through a headset microphone so everyone heard him

Quinton clears his throat and gets lost deep in my eyes once again,he has that silly grin on his face,gosh hes going to say some stupidotic things this one.

Quinton:"Lisa...bub,I just realised that,from this day forward,we will be officially stuck together,we'll be inseparable,theres no turning back now,so lets make the most of it hey...we'll be the coolest married couple alive!"

I nod as I giggle...and laughs come from the crowd...

Me:"Yeah..we'll show these peeps how its done"

Quinton: "Lets be dumb together..just plain stupid. Make bad choices, eat the wrong things, take wrong turns, and then lets tell great stories, the same ones...for ever and ever until no one can stand us but each other"

I cant help but laugh,even the pastor is in stitches

Me:"yes love...you know Q I love you so much and I dont want much from you really... I just want your company, thats it. Just your company and your support..your undying support. Oh, and for you to forswear all others besides mejust all those things. Oh, and your kidney.... can you give me a kidney? Just one...and oh, your whole life...everything in your whole life...so I guess that includes your other kidney and your internal organs and soul and such. So thats all I want. Just that. Think you can handle that?"

his eyes are popped out,the "yoohh and haaahhs" come from the crowd as they laugh,his facial expression is priceless,thank God this is being recorded on camera
Quinton(clears throat):"yeah sure...I Im pretty sure I can handle that...well....I want your worst—give me your bad hair days, your long commutes, your burnt coffee, lost keys, splashed shoes, annoying coworkers, broken copiers. Give me your everyday and I will

give you my love to make it alright.”

Me:“I vow to love every last bit of you... even your snoring”

Quinton:“In front of our friends and family gathered here. I promise to put down the toilet seat – and to replace the toilet roll when it’s over and to never, ever, ever forget our wedding anniversary or your birthday”

Me(giggle):“I vow to always do all the stuff neither of us wants to do when I know that you really, really don’t want to do it a lot more than I really, really don’t want to do it”

Quinton(laughs):“With the deepest joy, I promise to cherish you, To support and honour you, To frustrate and challenge you, And to share with you the wonderful moments in life. And, someday, if the stars align, I may even let you win an argument”

I gasp holding my chest,as if I dont always win an argument..ok maybe I dont..well atleast sometimes

Me:“Now that we’ve gotten skinny for this wedding, let’s get real fat together...Let’s forget when to shut up, forget being polite, let’s be “that” couple, “those” people, and have the time of our lives until we drop dead.....Let’s grow old disgracefully together.”

Quinton:“I Quinton, do solemnly swear to protect you, Lisa, from spiders as long as we both shall live..”

Everyone is in stitches

He smiles and becomes all serious with a genuine smile,now I know that we done with the jokes,he’s about to say something from his heart so I just smile back and there is suddenly silence that has filled up the garden only birds chirping

He takes a huge breath

Quinton:“I want to spend the rest of my life with you....I vow to love and care for you as we both shall live,I take you with all your faults and strengths,as I offer myself to you,with all my faults and strengths...I vow to help you when you need help and turn to you when I need help. I vow to choose you,over and over in good times and bad,in sickness and in health”

he looks behind him then Aidan makes his way towards us and gives him the ring he takes my left hand and places the ring at the tip of my finger

Quinton:“And with this ring,I take you,to be my lawfully wedded wife,my constant friend,my partner in crime and my love,from this day forward..till death do us part”

Me:“This journey, this adventure that we’re on, has already challenged us as a couple, to work through hardships and obstacles, and to become stronger in our communication, in our commitment and to our love. It has been the biggest growth I have ever had for myself by far as a partner. Our relationship is full of more love and support than I could ever ask for. I have never been more adored or felt more safe and the trust that we have built, that we have worked so hard to protect, is invaluable. So thank you....I’ve heard it said...It is better to not make a vow, than to make one and not be able to keep it. Therefore, I know what this commitment means. I promise... To help shoulder our challenges and celebrate all of our little wins. To tell you every day how much I love you and appreciate all that you do. To continue to learn from you and to follow the examples of patience and respect that you continuously set. To continue to build upon the trust that we have and to be by your side fully and faithfully. To put you first and above all, always. To try my hardest, to step away from my stubbornness, and accept that I make mistakes and that I am ..to my dismay.. not always right.... You are my forever, my best friend, my dream come true and now my husband. With these

words, and all the words of my heart, I marry you and bind my life to yours. Forever and always. I love you."

I slide the golden thick ring on his finger, Clyde comes towards us and hands him a handkerchief, he chuckles and wipe the tears he didn't realise he had Yes! I just won a bet, he didn't believe that I would make him cry in front of all these people, look who's crying now.

Pastor: "with the power invested in me..I now pronounce you husband and wife, you may now kiss your bride"

he mouths "finally" as he pulls me closer, we share a passionate kiss but kept it short before it arose other emotions, if you know what I mean, we turn to look at the crowd, mom was in tears and a few other people as they were clapping and making joyfully noise...

we all head back to the big hall where the rest of the ceremony would take place so that everyone can eat and speeches be said...Quinton and I were now seated behind the main table as friends and family were given the opportunity to share a few words and gifts.

Quinton's mom is one of the family that took the opportunity to share a few words, I must say we've grown to be very close these past weeks

Q's mom: "The first time I laid eyes on Quinton I was instantly in love. He was my little baby who grew into a wobbly toddler, and then a curious child. Then came the pre-teen and teen years and the next thing I knew, my little baby was a man.... Quinton you have always been a boy that I could be proud of. And now that you are a man, I could not be any prouder of who you have become. As your mother, I am so very happy and proud for you because you were able to find Lisa a loving, beautiful woman who will love you for the rest of your life. I know you will treat her with respect and shower her with love..... To my lovely son Quinton and his wonderful wife Lisa, may you continue to grow together in love. My wish for you is that today is only the beginning of your happy days together. May you learn to cherish each other more and more over the years and may your love for each other grow stronger with each passing day...i love y'all"

She gives us a hug and a kiss before heading back to her seat, just then my mother comes forth

Mom: "Like many other moms, I have always prayed for my daughter. Not because she gave me trouble, but because no matter how great your child is, you still worry and want the best for them. She was a generous girl, a kind soul. I always wanted her life to be full of happiness. I never knew what I was praying for until Lisa met Quinton Even though she was always a happy girl, he brought out something in her that we had never seen before. With him, she was complete. And I cannot thank God enough that they were able to find each other. Even though Lisa and Quinton have only known each other for a few years, you can tell that it feels like they have known one another for a lifetime. And years from now, that same love will still be there.....Lisa, you are very special...even as an infant we knew how precious you were, when you came into our lives you rekindled our commitment and passion to each other as a family, Growing up, you never gave us a reason to worry about as you made sound choices every step of the way. When I look at you, I see in you true beauty, love and a commitment to family. I remember when you took various jobs at school and on weekends to support yourself and the family when your dad passed away a couple of years ago...(she wipes her nose

then snigles)...he'd be so proud of you if he saw you now,but i know that he's watching right now with your granma and they couldn't ve been more happy...(tears escape my eyes as her words hit home)...Quinton and khanya, I have a few words to give you before I take my seat. Marriage is a test of real love and you should expect both good and bad times, including some rough storms. Riding through these storms together, leaning on each other for strength and courage as allies, strengthens the marriage bonds. As long as you weather the storms together, your marriage will endure. No matter what, keep your sense of humor and you'll make it through these storms just fine, with love. Love you both and God bless you"

She hugs us and gives us kisses on the cheek,as soon as she hugged me i held onto her for dear life

Me(crying):"I love you mom...thank you,for everything"

She also held me tight

Mom:"i love you more my Angel..and Im so proud of you"

We break the hug and she goes back to her seat..

Aidan had to be the last one to say something,as the MC was about to move on to the next activity on the program,Aidan quickly makes his way to the front coming from God knows where,he kinda disapeared for a while...I spot yonela coming towards me,where is she coming from? She sits on her seat by the bridesmaids next to Thelma then winks at me and blows a kiss,i squint my eyes at her as I shift my focus back on Aidan who just took the mike

He tapped it with his fingers

Aidan:"testing one two...testing ...(he chuckles) oh it works,sorry i just always wanted to do that..yes i watch too many movies..(the crowd bursts into laughter..he might be a bit drunk)

I feel Quinton's warn breath hit against my ear

Quinton:"if he embarrasses me in front of all these people ,I vow this to you,Im going to chop off his dick"

I try my best to keep my laugh as silent as I can but I fail and a few eyes look our way Aidan:"Good evening everyone! Let's lift our glasses and toast to the newlyweds! Don't worry, your arms won't get tired. My speech is going to be like a mini- skirt: long enough to cover the essentials and short enough to hold your attention(he smiles mischievously looking at the bridesmaids and obviously they all charmed by this idiot). Quinton, thank you for being such a stable force in my life, a great friend and an even better brother.

Lisa I think we can all agree that you're stunning this evening and Quinton has won the lottery.... So, too, do the bridesmaids. If any of them are interested, I can give them my number after this is over (,he winks and i swear all the ladies giggled..heee this guy,he thinks hes all that)... Lisa..Quinton, tonight we celebrate you. We all wish you a lifetime of happiness, love, health, success and laughter. May you continue to find humor in the bad and appreciation for the good. May your friendship continue to grow throughout all the years to come. Cheers!"

Crowd:"CHEERS!"

After that everyone was now eating while some were dancing and everything is going perfect as Quinton is feeding me while whispering sweet nothings in my ear making me giggle and blush every now and then

Quinton:"can this be over already(seductively)...I just wanna be buried inside you

right now"

I giggle as i bite my bottom lip

Me:"its almost over....then I'll show you how much I missed you"

We haven't been sexually intimate since we got back together(after being separated for five months) and proposed to me,so its been months.. since last year December to be precise!!! It was the ceremony we had to do for dad,he requested we should not be intimate until we officially married,and,hey,who are we to defy the ancestors,specially dad...

Quinton:"you about to take in worth seven months of cum inside your little honeypot ...think you can handle that,wife dearest?"

I feel the shivers down my spine and my bean beating uncontrollably as i think of the wild things we'll do to each other later on

Me:"oh Im more than ready hubby dearest"

We laugh mischievously and deviously at each others sexual thoughts...gosh people must think we crazy or we have lost our minds.

So we decided to have a winter wedding theme since we in June now..the colours are baby blue and white,we even managed to get fake snow,its was so magical in the garden it was like a fairytale.

MC:"now if we could call upon the special couple for the day to come down to the center and dance to their favorite song"

We stood up and went to the dance floor, he held me closer and we danced to our song by james author

I met you in the dark

You lit me up

You made me feel as though

I was enough

We danced the night away

We drank too much

I held your hair back when You were throwing up

Then you smiled over your shoulder

For a minute I was stone-cold sober

I pulled you closer to my chest

And you asked me to stay over

I said, I already told you

I think that you should get some rest

I knew I loved you then

But you'd never known

Cause I played it cool when I was scared of letting go

I knew I needed you

But I never showed

But I wanna stay with you

Until we're grey and old

Just say you wont let go

Just say you won't let go

I wake you up with some

Breakfast in bed

I'll bring you coffee
With a kiss on your head
And I'll take the kids to school
Wave them goodbye
And I'll thank my lucky stars
For that night
When you looked over your shoulder For a minute I forget that I'm older
I wanna dance with you right now,oh
And you look as beautiful as ever
And I swear that every day you get better
You make me feel this way somehow
I'm so in love with you
And I hope you know
Darling, your love is more than worth its weight in gold
We've come so far, my dear
Look how we've grown
And I wanna stay with you
Until we're grey and old
Just say you won't let go
Just say you won't let go
I wanna live with you
Even when we're ghosts
Cause you were always there for me When I needed you most
I'm gonna love you til
My lungs give out
I promise til death we part
Like in our vows
So I wrote this song for you
Now everybody knows
That its just you and me
Until we're grey and old
Just say you wont let go
Just say you wont let go
Just say you wont let go Oh,
just say you wont let go
The song finished i had tears on my face once again ,he looks at me,smiles,then wipes
them before laying and faint lazy kiss on my lips

Mom:"now,i dont want to spoil anyone's mood on this very blessfilled day...but,if there
was one thing that Lisa's father would've loved is to share the father daughter dance
with you baby...believe it or not he always knew this day would come since you were
just a little baby and he wished to live to see it,but sadly he didn't...so if its okay with
you,i can dance with you on his behalf?"
I force a smile and nod,only God knows how bad i wish he was here today,Quinton
hands me to my mom and we start dancing to Luther Vandros's song

Back when i was a child
Before life removed all the innocent
My father would lift ne high
And dance with my mother and me
And then
Spin me around till i fell asleep
Then up the stairs he would carry me
And i knew for I was loved
If i could get another chance
Another walk
Another dance with him
I'd play a song that would never ever end
How I'd love love love
To dance with my father again

..

We danced till the song came to an end
Now i was just down straight crying
Im so hurt,I miss him more than ever right now,mom just holds me and shushes
me,shes crying too,i know she misses him more with each day that passes,why does
God have to take the best?
I was now calm as Im back in Quinton's arms by the table,Yonela being my maid of
honour fixed my make up since i was a mess and we have now changed into other
outfits as the day is almost coming to an end,everyone is chilled now,the music is loud
and the booze is out for everyone to enjoy
I feel his warm breath in my neck once more
Quinton(whispers):"lets disapear"
Me:"we cant do that...what about the people ?"
Quinton : "we dont need their permission to leave,we didnt ask for their permission to be
here in the first place"
Me:"what about our families we have to say our goodbyes properly and have a proper
send off"
Quinton:"woman...you think too much,Im not saying we should leave...lets just feel the
urge to go use the loo,and have running tummies,coincidentally , both at the same time"
I laugh
I look at him and our faces are only an inch apart,i smirk and so does he
Me:"you so smart....I'll go first"
Quinton:"right after you Mrs O'Brien"
I get up and run to the toilet careful not to bump into anyone who
would want to conversate with me ..i make it to the toilet safe as i wait for Quinton, i look
at myself on the mirror,wow,i didn't know i could be this beautiful
"There you are"
I turn and he immediately smashes his lips on mine,picking me up as he walks towards
the nearest wall he can pin me against,my pussy clenches to the feel of his hard crotch
against it,he runs his hands under my dress while nibbling on my neck,his hands
caressing and squeezing my butt cheeks,he slides my panty a bit down and replaces it
with his fingers doing wonders to my vibrating clits,Im dripping wet,he puts me down,he

was about to reach for his pants but i beat him to it,i need him as in yesterday,he pulls me from behind my neck to kiss me lustfully,while I somehow manage to pull down his pants and my favorite guy springs out with full determination pointed right at me,he pushes me against the wall and presses himself on me
Me(breathlessly):"Im in desperate need my love"
Quinton(whispers):"I feel you bub"
He picks me up,my hand reaches for MrB,i rub him and i can feel all his viens popped out and the pre cum on the tip..he holds my hand and we both rub his buddy,we rub him against Miss M..his kisses on my lips are making me weak
"Lisa!! Uphi na lomfazi!"(where is this woman)
That cant be mom calling me right now ? I refuse!!
Quibton:"fuck...no no no"
"Lisa! Ayibo Lisa!...excuse me,have you seen the bride?"
"No mam"
"Alright then"
Shes right outside i hope she doesn't come in here
Me:"quick, put it in"
Hes about to put it in
"Mabe she's in the toilets"
Me(whispering):"fuck put me down"
Quinton(whispering) : "this is not fucken happening? Fucken hell!"
We both curse as we pull ourselves together,I quickly walk out and bump into her just by the door
Mom:"there you are..kunini ndikubhuqa"(Ive been looking evrywhere for you)
Me:"just had to use the toilet urgently"
Mom(worriedly):"are you okay"
Me : "Im totally fine now"
Not!!! I need my husband and Mr B!
Mom:"oh good,hurry,now we need to find Quinton,he also disappeared...i dont know what happening with people disappearing here,first yonela,you now the groom...ayi ayi kukhona ubugqwigwa noko"(this must be some sort of witchcraft though)
I laugh...oh mother,if only you knew how much i feel like strangling you right now! Ahh can this day be over already,my nunu is so painful...
Me(mummers):"thanks alot mom"
Mom:"what was that?"
Me:"love you alot...mom"
Mom:"aaww i love you too my angel"
I fake a smile...yeah sure you do 😊☹

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 2

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

💎LISA💎

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

Honeymoon Part one

♡

♡

♡

He only drinks two bottles during the night...please at exactly midnight check his nappy, it irritates him when its full and he can become restless, specially if you dress him up in alot of clothing, I know its winter now but still dont dress him up all warm at night, that baby loves coolness so just his light PJs will do but he must have his warm bath before he sleeps and his warm bottle that keeps him warm in the inside....what else am i forgetting ...oh, he loves attention so if you want to keep him occupied give him Mrs cuddle noodle, hes teddy, he loves her to bits....and...

Mom: "Lisa...Im a mother myself , i think i know how to babysit...look at you, who do you think lost weight running up and down to keep you satisfied while raising and grooming you to be the person you are today?"

I smile

Me: "you did, of cause"

Mom: "just go..enjoy your honeymoon dont stress about Kyle, hes in good hands"

"Bub! Lets get going!"

Me: "Im coming !"

Mom: "where is he taking you anyway ?"

Me: "some five star hotel in Sandton"

Mom: "wow, but arnt yall already used to Joburg, i thought you would go out of the city or something "

Me: "No, I told him we cant afford to be spending so much money, we have kyle now and the wedding already used so much of our savings"

Mom: "kanti isnt he rich or something ?"

I laugh

Me: "mom, hes parents are rich, we trying to make a life of our own and not depend on our parents riches, thats for emergencies"

Mom: "wow, youve always been responsible and too mature for your age....but Lisa, its okay to take advantage of some situations sometimes and have fun, you still young, you have your whole life ahead of you and i know you will be very successful...but if Quinton wants to spoil you, dont shut him out from doing so...hes a man, and every man whos in love, likes to make their woman feel special, the less you allow him to do so, the less of a

man he feels...Im not saying be a gold digger,but Im just saying, its okay if he wants to spoil you now and then,you his wife....I mean,you wouldnt like it if he starts using his money to impress other woman..cause his wife doesnt seem to be impressed"

Me:"I think I understand what you trying to say....let me get going "

"Lisa! Can we please go?!"

The desperation in his voice makes me laugh

Me:"bye mah...call me if you need anything or something's wrong"

Mom:"yeah yeah...just go already..and enjoy"

She winks and smirks mischievously

I laugh

Me:"ahh mah!..bye!"

I run out the house to the car where Quinton is leaning against it

Quinton:"about damn time!"

I giggle,peck his lips as he opens the door for me and we drive away after ten minutes of warming up the car of cause...yep,we still use the golf,hes first wife,so he calls it,so he cant just divorce it just because of other beauties

Me:"Quinton"

Quinton:....

I look at him

Me:"Quinton ?"

Quinton:.....

Is he ignoring me?

Me:"love bug?"

He looks at me and smiles

Quinton:"yes bub"

Wow seriously ?

Me:"so we no more approving Quinton ?"

Quinton:"you dont call your husband by name babe,its either my surname or pet name"

Me:"yoh...hectic...okay ke O'Brien ...where are you taking me cause Sandton hotel is not that way?"

Quinton:"I wanna show you something cool first"

Me:"oh yeah? That is?"

Quinton ::"its a surprise"

Me:"mmmh okay! Sounds exciting!"

Quinton:"it is"

Me:"it it something Ive seen before?"

Quinton:"Im not giving you any clues Lisa"

Me:"come on...please"

Quinton:"No"

Me:"pretty please"

Quinton:"Ugly No"

I laugh

Theres silence as we continue to drive a bit out the city

Me:"you bought a new car for us?"

He bursts into laughter ?

Quinton:"nice try bub"

Me:"wouldve been the best surprise though"
Quinton:"we stuck with this baby,till death do us part"
Me:"cant wait till Im rich"
Quinton:"then youll buy the latest golf"
Me:"like hell"
He laughs harder at me as we approach what looks like an airport
He parks the car and we get off
We walk towards a couple of Jets and Planes
My legs are getting a bit wobbly as excitement gets the best out of me
I dont ask anything as we get closer to the beautiful black Jet written "LQK O'Brien's
international " in gold...
whoaaa this is the most beautiful Jet Ive ever seen...well..its kinda the only Jet Ive ever
seen
Me:"love ?"
Quinton:"surprise!"
I look at him in disbelief in most confused way
Me:"what is this?"
He smiles widely
Quinton:"its a Jet"
Me:"yeah...but why are we here?"
Quinton:"because I wanted to surprise you then we could test ride it above the city on
this beautiful night before we head back to the hotel"
Me:"Quinton your mom doesnt mind?"
He shrugs his shoulders
Quinton:"well..why should she...this is our wedding night and this is our Jet"
Did he just say what i thought i just heard him say?
Me:"our?"
He rolls his eyes
Quinton:"damn do I have to spell it out for you?...I bought us a private Jet and now Im
surprising you...tada!..then this is the part you jump up and down then.....
I attack him with a hug before he could finish,he picks me up and we hug for a long time
Quinton:"I love you bub"
We still hugging with my legs around him and my face burried in his neck
Me:"I love you more....i love you so very much"
Im such a cry baby,tears are already streaming down my cheeks
Quinton(whispers):"dont cry bhabha...you deserve all the luxury in the world"
Me:"I cant believe you did this for me....for us"
I remove my face from his neck and stare into his eyes...we stay like that for a while,just
searching deep within each others eyes
Quinton:"I feel like going back and marry you all over again..."
He puts me down
Quinton:"come on now...lets go try our baby"
Me:"OMG...this is so cool"
The door opens..i swear it looks like a treasure chest full of gold has been open,thats
how bright and beautiful the sight is
I lead the way inside,thats how excited lam

I look around touching everything

Me : "wow ...love bug..we could actually live here..look at these couches,damn...where does that door lead?"

I walk towards it before he could utter a word,i open and find a room with a huge bed with white covers,everything looks so perfect,expensive and royal,i admire the room when i feel his hands snake me from behind

Quinton:"this is where we'll make magic (he kisses my neck)..sweet,beautiful mindblowing magic"

I giggle I think my pussy also giggled with me as well,weird

"Welcome to private class LQK O'Brien's international...please settle down and buckle your seatbelts as we get ready for take off in three mintues"

Im looking around like an idiot

Me:"Oh my goshhhh is there a pilot in here!?"

He laughs

Quinton:"darh...you didn't think I'd let you fly this did you?"

Me:"no silly....I want to meet the pilot...do we have flight attenders too?"

Quinton:"the works"

He says pulling my hiped up self to out of the bedroom to the comfy seats that have seatbelts that are next to the couches, we buckle up,and the ground starts shaking..fear automatically possesses me

I feel his cold hands lock with mine

Quinton:"its okay bub....just breath,Im right here...dont be scared"

I nod my head..I know I always talked about overcoming my fears and trying to do all the thrilling activities when Im working one day...but damn this is really upsetting my tummy

Quinton:"open your eyes bub....I want you to mesmerize this moment"

I open my eyes,everything is shaking as the Jet goes higher and higher,my eyes are fixed on my husband and so are his on mine,he smiles,I return the smile,although mine is very nervous and fake cause i really feel like screaming,feels like Im in a car that has lost control of its breaks or even worse a train!

After a few more minutes it stopped and was now calm

I take a huge breathe

Me:"its over? We've landed?"

He laughs

Quinton:"No...we have now settled in space"

I gasp

Quinton:"wanna take a look?"

I nod continuously with all my teeth out smiling

He chuckles he presses a button and the cover window opens revelling the trasparent window,I move closer to the window and look out at the beautiful lights of the city

Me:"whoa everything is so beautiful and cool from up here"

Quinton:"it is hey"

Me:"I wish Kyle was here...he would love being up here"

Quinton:"well,this is definitely not the last time we fly this baby...kyle will even get bored of it"

Me:"hayi no...my baby wont get used to flying...I love him too much to make flying his

usual transport"

Quinton:"you overthink too much though...I mean i dont see a difference between a car, motorcycle,train,bus or taxi and a plane...they all get into accidents and if you watch the news,planes hardly crash,its mostly cars that are always involved in accidents...cause a pilot is always in a sober mind no matter what,he cant get in the plane without being checked for any substances in him..thats why flights are always smooth rides and safe,unlike...down there"

He points out the window

Me:"yeah yeah whatever...but when they do get involved ...theres never a survivor"

Quinton:"we should stop talking about accidents now"

Me:"so how long will we be up here?"

Quinton:"as long as we want"

He unbuckles his seat belt and so do I

He stands up and helps me stand on my feet

Me:"what about the hotel?"

Quinton:"we can check in anytime we want"

He pulls me closer locking me between his arms

Quinton:"kiss me"

I obey as always,this is one command I find literally impossible to disobey

His hands find their way to my butt cheeks he massages them,his one hand slides right under inbetween my butt cheeks and starts playing with my nunu,my mouth slightly opens distracting the kiss as I struggle to keep up with my breathing, i dont know whether Im breathing in or out,its out of control as my heartbeat has lost its rythm.

He recognizes my reaction and immediately picks me up to hug against his big bulge,he unzips my dress at the back,then pulls it up throwing it on the floor as we enter the bedroom,he throws me on the bed roughly causing me to bounce,I giggle deviously,he takes a remote and presses a button that makes the lights go deem,but the colour has turned red which makes the room look so sexy,he presses another button and the lights form polka dots all over as a disco light, he presses another button and music comes on.....he takes off his shirt in a sexy way ...

🎧 Ooh I'm about to dive in ooh ooh I was thinking about taking a couple laps, I just wanna dive in Yeah, dive in, yeah-eah🎧

He moves his waist and abs in slow motion

🎧 Splash, baby girl that's your water fall...

Feel it coming down on me, so crazy Yeah, girl I love the way your body talk ...

Come a little closer just like that Keep on talking girl you got me..... Wanting to go deeper then you'll ever know

Wanting to feel, the way you flow..... Ooh you got that look up in your eyes

What we 'bout to do ain't no surprise🎧

He takes off this pants, I wish i had moves like that..damn he's turning me on like crazy,my pussy clenches with every move he makes..the lyrics of this song aren't doing any justice either

🎧 I'm about to dive in

Baby girl hold your breath

We about to get so wet

Swimming in your body, let me dive in

You know ain't no running 'round this pool
Going under just for you
Baby you, watch me stroke
Left stroke, right stroke Back stroke, girl there ain't no running 'round this pool
Ooh I'm about to dive in
Baby girl hold your breath
We about to get so wet
Put me to the test girl when I dive 🏊
He gets ontop of my naked body,he stares at my swelled hard breasts
He kisses my lips for a short while then goes down to entertain his babies licking and softly suckling and smooching on them
My pussy is vibrating like crazy,
"God damn!" A moan escapes my mouth followed by a few more as the pleasures are too much
I think I just creamed my panties
He continues going down on me,planting wet kisses down my tummy my skin sinks with every kiss,his lips reach my panties,he kisses Miss M softly above the panty,he starts licking and moving his tongue along my pussy line,,shit..this teasing is getting too much,how many orgasms will he give me before he actually pull out the big guns?
"Quintooon" Im loosing my patience
It aches,I cant take it any longer
He slowly removes my panty before he fully buries his face between my thighs eating my pussy like his life depends on it
Aahh uuuhh..baby...mmhhh"
I dont know what to do with myself im all over the place,I wrap my legs around his neck and lock him inside,I hear him groan and curse against my nunu as he carries on doing wonders working with his fingers too...I swear I can see the gates of heaven open as a sudden rush of liquid vibrates against my pussy canal as it streams out,my legs shaking like crazy as my baby's tongue cleans me up
He comes up and lays his forehead on mine
I extend my hand to go feel Mr B..I misses him so much, I need him even more,I rub him,he's hard yet smooth at the same time he's a bit too wet to be just pre cum
Me:"you came?"
Quinton(breathlessly):"while feasting on you"
He holds my hand which is on his big guy and we both lead him inside, we groan loudly as he slide in,occupying every part of my pretty tight hole,he starts moving slowly
"Uuhhh..oohhh baby" I helplessly moan
"Fuck...you so warm...mmmh you hot baby"
He's moving so slow but with every stroke,it goes deeper and deeper
I can feel every vien of his dick,just like me,he's not going to last
"F..faster..pplease"
I beg for more
He increases his pace,next thing I know he's banging real hard on me...Im failing to keep up to his strokes,I dont know where to hold on,he lifts my legs up over his shoulders then lays his body on me pressing my legs on me as he takes my hands and holds them above my head ,he moves even faster and faster,harder aand deeper,my

moans have gotten louder,Im think Im gonna loose my mind!!

"Ahhh!...Im...uhmmm..mmmhh"

I explode as I feel my juices leaking on either sides of his dick,he doesn't stop but just moves in a slower pace

He looks deep into my eyes which are bearily open

Quinton:"hope you ready for this"

He moves my one leg down while the other rests on his shoulder,I turn my body to rest with my side as he is between my legs,he increases his pace again,tears are streaming down my face,the pleasures are too much

"Shit!..fuck..." he groans

With that said he releases a whole lot of thick warm liquid,i feel it in every part of my uterus,oh yeah,it went in that deep,he puts down my leg then collapses on top of me,still buried deep inside of me..he's groaning,and I feel that he's still cumming

Me(whispers):"I hope you not peeing inside me?"

He chuckles

Quinton:"told you...its seven months worth of cum"

Me:"whoaa that's too much"

He gets off me and pulls Mr B out he rubs him up and down as he releases his cum ontop of Miss M

...shit! Ive never seen so much cum in my life,all in one round,he finishes then gets insie the covers

Me:"that was awesome...I didn't know sex as a married couple was so much more fun"

Quinton:"you haven't felt nothing yet"

He smirks...oh boi, i forget how he never gets enough

Me:"you not even going to get a towel and wipe us?"

Quinton:"will do that once we done"

Me:"aren't we?"

Quinton:"Not anytime soon"

He gets closer and kisses me,my pussy aches just from his touch...I get on top this time and take charge,I lead Mr B inside, for a moment I become weak but as soon as he settles I regain my energy and start doing my thing,riding him in circular motion slowly balancing my hands on his chest,his eyes are barely open as he looks at me with so much lust..

Quinton(breathlessly):"faster"

He commands

I start twerking on him

"Oh yeah..thats it"

He grabs my ass and helps me up and down,he ends up taking over completely as I loose myself,next thing I know we both resting with our side while he's hitting it from behind,grabbing onto my boobs and nibbling on my neck and ear,he ended up tying my hair up since it was distracting him. We both release same time while he rubs my nunu,making me loose my breathing control once again...we stay like that for a while

Me(out of breath):"towels?"

Quinton:"For the why?"

He gets up

Quinton:"on your knees"

I dont protest

Me:"yes master"

I obey instead ...that turns the shit out of him as i hear him curse after I said that

Quinton:"fuck...i cant get enough..bub"

He holds my waist and pounds me from behind,increasing the pace by the second,things have gotten real wild,we no longer

Controlling the volume of our moans and groans anymore,I hope non of the flight attenders can hear us...oh well..not that I care..at least not now

He's grabbing on my hair tight

As he releases, I follow

As if this was not enough,after a few minutes we were ontop of each other again

....damn I missed him,this is going to be one long night

Im woken up by a bright light from the window as the sun rays Pierce through my skin

I stretch moving all over the bed

I open my eyes disappointed not to feel my husband's body against mine...I could get used to this..it just feels so right calling him that..My Husband

I giggle at my thoughts

Where is that sex freak anyway?

I get off the bed..and head to the bathroom which is in the bedroom

This is one hella big Jet,no different from a house

I peek outside through the window,its cloudy....cant believe we flew all night ,to no where..Lol, just to go back to Sandton

I take a warm shower,it took me quite a while to figure out since everything has buttons here.

After a nice long shower I brush my teeth comb my wet hair and tied it up into a ponytail,I walk back to the room on the bed I find a new set of outfit,it's a black casual dress,looks like it's going to be really short and too revealing,it's off should and has a completely open back,it has an opening in front which will expose my clivage...mmmh too sexy,but wearable, I dont remember packing anything,our luggage was taken to the hotel for us,so when the hell did Quinto get the time to buy this? ohh yeah,this was a surprise,of cause he planned it out, I put on the matching black lacey lingerie and the dress, heels!! okay,why do I have to wear heels though? not that I can't handle them..but I'm just the vans and sneakers kinda girl,you know what I mean..I put them on..I find a make up box on the table,wow,okay my love bug has totally impressed me,exactly the type of shit I use..just when I thought he couldn't know me any better,I pamper my face,then finish off with dark maroon lipstick...I notice a small wrapped box,obviously it has to be mine to I just rip off the wrap to find a box written platinum egoiste Channel,I half scream,I puff some on my neck. oohh my the smell is refreshing,Although I dont like Quinton wasting money on me,but I appreciate everything he does,whether it's expensive or the cheapest thing. I dont want to make him feel like he should try impress me with expensive gifts,and he gets me,that's why he only does it once in a while,but the cute little things he does that dont cost a dime are the ones that are worth way more to me.

I make my way out to the lounge,that's what I call it since it has couches and everything you find in a lounge,he's dresses in black casual adidas shorts and a black short sleeve

shirt that hugs his strong muscled body, he got black air force 1 Nike shoes and a white small Panama hat on his head,he's too concentrated on his phone as I walk closer after I've finished observing him,he lifts his head as I approach him a smile creeps on his face as his eyes lighten up with amusement and adoration looking at me up and down

Me:"good morning my handsome husband"

Quinton:"good morning my gorgeous beautiful sexy fabulous hottest most flawless wife"
I blush and giggle

I push imaginary hair off my face with attitude

Me:"I woke up like this"

he laughs as I sit next to him then give him a peck,which obviously has to end up being deeper than that

I break the kiss then stare at his lips while wiping off the lipstick off his lips

Quinton:"you smell so breathtaking..New cologne perhaps?"

I laugh

Me:"not at all....this is my natural scent actually"

he laughs really hard

Quinton(laughing):"yeah right!....you wish"

I gasp in total shock,does he have to laugh this hard....is my natural scent that bad?

Me:"wow..is my natural scent that bad? is that why you bought such an expensive cologne for me? you so evil!"

he laughs even harder,one of the ladies pass by also laughs because of how hard he's laughing

Me:"mxm"

I move and go sit by the couch opposite him,I fold my arms and sulk...

he eventually calms down and stares at me,I click my tongue and look away from him,I feel him as he sits really close to me

Quinton(whisper):"your natural scent smells better than that R7000 cheap cologne bub"
he's being sarcastic mxm idiot

he laughs a bit

Me:"just jump off this plane Quinton"

Quinton:"I'm just kidding bub...come on,take a joke"

Me:"okay..fine"

he looks shocked at my response,he must've thought I was gonna give him a hard time

Quinton:"really? you'll take the joke?"

Me:"yeah...I know you love joking around,so I'll just let it be and laugh about it"

I laugh a bit

he looks at me confused

I laugh even harder at his reaction

Quinton:"I Dont know whether to be releaved or scared right now?"

I'm laughing so hard right now

Quinton:"O-kaay...I should be careful now"

Me(laughing):"Dont worry love bug...I just love your sense of humour"

I'm so gonna get him for this

Quinton:"yeah....sure"

we go back to being lovely dovey

"please buckle your seatbelts as we get ready for landing"

I attempt to go to the seat but Quinton holds me

Quinton:"you Dont have to do that all the time...when I'm right here,hold onto me"
my heart melts I wrap my arms around him and hold onto him for dear life as the Jet
heads down for landing,after a few minutes we have landed

Me:"Phew! finally....we home safe,thank the good Lord"

Quinton:"you didn't enjoy the ride??"

Me:"I did...alot..but I'm just thankful we still alive,you know"

Quinton:"coward"

Me:"what did you call me?"

Quinton:"nothing"

Me:"nxa utsho nges'shwapha angthi indlovu isithela" (elephant ass)

he gasps

Quinton:"excuse you but I got an ass for days sister"

he says swaying his bones side to side..I'm in stitches ..oh God he looks so ridiculous!

Me(singing):"shake it..Dont break it..shake it... dont break it"

he holds on his knees and tries twerking...I'm dead with laughter and so is the staff as
they walk past us

his whole waist is moving but his butt is not doing anything

Me:"twerk for your woman baby...twerk twerk twerk....damn....oh my God, look at that
butt!!"

he stops and we laugh he comes towards me and grabs my butt as he pecks my
lips...we make our way out still laughing and all jiggly

we step out of the Jet and I'm hit by the fresh cool breeze,the sun is out and about... I
look around,this is not the same airport we left from

Me:"which airport is this?"

Quinton:"the one not in Joburg"

huh? what does he mean?

I look around and notice a sign written "welcome to Dubai"

Me(shocked):"what the hell!...Whaaat?"

I look at him and he has the biggest grin on his face

Quinton:"Surprise!! Again!!"

Me:"noooo waaay Quinton!..Dubai!? are you freaken kidding me right now!?"

Quinton:"you didn't think I'd really make us spend our honeymoon in some hotel in
Joburg now did you?"

I'm looking around in disbelief

Me:"DUBAI QUINTON!! I've always wanted to come here"

Quinton:"I know bub..I listen to every word you blab"

I hug him tightly and tears prickly my eyes as I'm overwhelmed by joy

I dont even know how to begin thanking him,ever since I've been in high school I'd
dream about coming here,I always googled pictures of this place

Me:"thank you so much"

Quinton(chuckles):"Dont thank me just yet bub, wait until you see what I have for us in
store for our month here"

I get off him

Me(surprised):"A MONTH!"

he nods

I push him playfully
Me:"what are we waiting for"
Quinton(shouts out loud):"HELLO DUBAI!!"
Me(shouts out loud):"READY OR NOT HERE WE COME!!"
we run towards the huge airport building
Me:"oh my gosh I'm so fucking you when we get to whatever hotel you booked"
we got a few weird and shocked stares after I bursted that out quite loudly
he laugh
Quinton:"I'll fuck you even harder"
Me:"let's agree to disagree...cause we both know I'm king when it comes to tapping that
ass"
we burst into laughter as we approach the exits where our ride awaits

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 3

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

💎LISA💎

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

HONEYMOON PART 2

☆

☆

☆

Me(breathless):"well...that was the best welcome to Dubai ever"
Quinton(breathless):"yeah...now we are rejuvenated to explore the City"
Me(laughs):"we didn't even explore this beautiful house...we dont even know where the
bedroom is"
Quinton:"you the one who couldn't contain yourself...ended up doing it living room"
we are cuddling on the floor next to the couches in the lounge.
We've been seducing each other the whole way to the penthouse,that the minute we
stepped into that door,we just couldn't wait any longer,even skipped the whole

foreplay,well except the boobs,those are never denied attention by my big baby here,no matter the rush,sometimes I get jealous that he loves them more than me...am I being ridiculous? maybe a bit..but still.....oh, about the "penthouse" can you believe this idiot rented us a penthouse instead of us booking in hotels,I didn't have words for this, he obviously planned to shower me with expensive surprises,I was just speechless,was crying throughout our whole love making session,tears of joy,love,happiness and mindblowing dick...I love this handsome idiot with my all...but this dare leave us broke and homeless when we go back home,I'll kill him with my very own bare hands I tell you

Quinton:"are you going to get up from that floor and see the rest of the house? or you need one lasts boost from MrB?"

he's already up and putting on his pants

Me:"I wouldn't mind riding on that big fella all day"

he smirks,I notice the bulge that just formed under his pants,I laugh

Me:"just not right now"

I say as I get up

he curses underneath his breath

I put my dress back on...

we walk around the house,it's huge

Me:"this is a big house"

Quinton:"it is hey"

Me:"it's so beautiful and spotless"

Quinton:"you admire every little thing...one would swear that our house is not way better than this"

Me:"yeah well when something is beautiful you have to admire and appreciate no matter how many more beautiful things you've seen"

Quinton:"and that's why I admire you so much"

Me:"that doesn't mean you should admire other beautiful woman though"

I give him a warning look,he chuckles

Quinton:"but you just said we should admire other beautiful...."

Me:"Dont start with me Quinton"

he laughs

Quinton:"hahaha just busting your chops"

Me:"be careful with your jokes..next time you'll make a really bad joke that will get you into trouble"

Quinton:"I can never make a bad joke.....unlike someone I know.."

I give him an angry look

Quinton:"I didn't say any names"

Me:"mxm"

we got to the bedroom and we took a shower,he had already bought toiletries for us

Me:"when did you manage to organize all these things?"

Quinton:"what do you mean?"

Me:"I mean...all these surprises,the jet,Dubai,the penthouse...everything,but you were with me the whole time"

Quinton:"I planned everything while we were separated,during the whole scandal with the johnsons,I knew when I was done with them I would come back to you and marry you"

Me:"what made you so sure I'd take you back?"

Quinton:"I knew you would...you nothing without me"

I laugh

Me:"wow,you so sure of yourself"

Quinton:"uyaphika nah?"(you arguing?)

Me:"ndyaphika"(yeaah)

his eyes widen,I'm already six feet away from him

Quinton:"come say that in front of me"

Me:"you shouldn't be so sure of yourself Quinton Ambrose O'Brien!"

he charges towards me...I make a run for it back down the stairs,I can hear his footsteps right behind me

Quinton:"better pray to your God he blesses you with flying powers cause I GOT YOU!!"

He holds my dress and pulls me to him,just when I was by the main exit door

Me(laughing):"Quinton!! I'm sorry!! I didn't mean it baby!!"

he turn me to face him while locking me tightly in his arms

Quinton:"oh really now?? you had to make me run after you to tell me you were joking?....now you going to pay for your bad joke and for making me run"

I smirk

Me:"come on babe...I mean...there's so many other ways a girl can be forgiven?"

I slide my hand to massage Mr B he moans as his eyes close

his grip lossens as his crotch gets even harder

I kiss his pouted red lips he kisses me back...

I remove his hands from my waist and hold them into my hands,I quickly let them go and make a run for my life out the door...

"Ah!! come on Lisa! Dont play like that!"

I run towards the gate,but it's closed and it's an electrical gate,dammit. I look behind me and he's walking calmly behind me with that 'where do you think you going' grin on his face, I burst into laughter when I notice the cushion he is holding against his crotch

Me(laughing):"are you hiding your boner?!!"

he looks around

Quinton:"ssshhhdamn girl,you want everyone to know"

I laugh even harder then run towards the small gate that's next to the big gate,luckily it's not locked

Quinton:"you can run....but you can't hide!"

I run across the road all the way to the beach..wow the beach is very close,I run along the white crystal clear sand ..I look behind me and a tired husband walking calmly still holding the cushion against him...I can't help but laugh as a few girls pass him,he smiles and waves at them they giggle pointing at the cushion,he shrugs his shoulders,they laugh even harder as they continue walking past him....he looks at me with an angry face,I'm dead with laughter.

he walks faster towards me I walk faster backwards keeping my eyes on him,he pick up the pace and jogs I do the same still going backwards....

he throws the cushion away and picks up more pace,I turn and run,to my misfortune I trip and stumble but save myself from falling,but before I could focus back to running his arms were already locked around my waist from behind...

Me(laughing):"No no no! let go of me!"

he picked me up and I started kicking my legs in the air trying to fight him to let me go
Quinton:"you think you can out run me ...think again"
he turns me around then picks me up bridal style
I start tickling him and he drop me on the sand,he reaches to help me up but I tickle him
him instead he lays ontop of me trying hard not to giggle,before I know it I'm being
tickled,unlike him I let out my horrible loud laugh and screams...I roll my body away from
him cause my legs are too weak to get up ,he rolls himself too coming after me,before I
know it I feel cold water splash over my body,that's when I realise I've rolled too close to
the sea shore,I try to roll my body back but Quinton is right here blocking my way , he
shows me his tickling fingers,now I dont know whether to roll towards him or the sea?
he jumps on me before i can make up my mind he picks me up...
"aaahhh I'm sorry babe!...please dont throw me in aaahhh heellppp!"
he runs into the sea,I'm shit scared of the ocean...my legs are wrapped around his waist
and my arms around his neck,I'm squeezing the life out of him as I make sure he
doesn't let go of Me even by mistake
Me:"Quinton...love bug...I'm sorry..please Dont make me go in there"
Quinton:"the ocean Dont bite bub...relax"
I feel the water on my back as we get deeper inside the sea water he keeps jumping a
bit as small waves pass us by
Me(breaking voice):"Quinton...please...let's go back to the house"
Quinton:"you the one who lead us here"
I feel tears threaten my eyes
Quinton:"get ready bub...it's a big one"
I scream as he jumps and the water lifts us very high,as we jump over the biggest wave
ever....many heart is beating out of control
Me(crying):"get me out of here!! Quinton!!"
I shout as I hold on even tighter with my face over his shoulder looking at how far away
we are from the shore
Me:"oh God...this man wants to kill me...oh heavenly father this was his plan all along,to
take me away from my home marry me and come bury me alive in the deep oceans of
Dubai!!...oh father why have you forsaken me!!!"
he bursts into laughter while i burst into tears..I really am scared it's not even funny...he
stops laughing as he hears my loud sobs
Quinton:"it's okay bub...the water is not even deep...look..I'm standing on my feet"
I dont pay attention to him I just want him to get me out of here
Me:"I want to go home...please get me out of here"
Quinton:"No...Lisa...I'm gonna need you to stop crying and calm down"
Me:"we going to drown Quinton..this is the ocean..it's swallows people"
he moves my head away from his shoulder and we look at each other in the eyes
Quinton:"look around you...you see that child she's way younger than you,no parental
guidance but she's way ahead of us..yet she's not drowning"
Me:"she probably takes swimming lessons...I can't swim"
Quinton:"but I can"
Me:"just get me out of here"
he jumps as another wave passes by
Quinton:"this is actually fun once you get the hang of it...Lisa,I want us,by the time we

leave Dubai...we both would've left all our greatest fears right here...we not taking them back home with us...you understand me?"

I shake my head no...he chuckles

Me:"I just want to get out of here"

Quinton:"do you trust me?"

I nod

Quinton:"do you trust me?"

Me(sighs):"yes..I trust you"

Quinton:"we'll do this together okay?"

Me:"No Quinton...dont let go of me"

Quinton:"I won't I promise...I won't let you drown...you have to trust me"

I search his eyes for a while,they tell me he loves me and would never let anything bad happen to me,his eyes...God dammit his eyes..I hate how they can convince me to do anything

Me:"okay..I trust you"

Quinton:"now...let your legs loose and stand on your own"

I shake my head,my nerves are out of control

Quinton:"Dont worry..you can still hold on to me with your arms"

I look at him shaking my head

Quinton:"go on...you can trust me"

I loosen my legs around him and slowly find their way to the group,which shocks me to find its not that far...I gasp

Quinton:"told you it wasn't deep"

I still hold on around his waist for dear life

Quinton:"jump"

I jump and so does he as a wave passes by I smile nervously

Quinton:"you see...that wasn't so bad?"

Me:"no..it wasn't"

Quinton:"now...you going to let go of me"

I shake my head

Me:"No..please ...I Dont want to let go"

Quinton:"relax...you will just turn...then I'll hold you from behind so you can see the waves coming"

Me:"No I dont want to see them....they'll scare me"

Quinton:"that's what we trying to achieve...for them not to scare you"

I look into his eyes once more they manage to convince me once again

I let go of his waist and hold his hands as they help me turn,I'm now facing this gigantic ocean

he holds me around my tummy immediately

he whispers against me ear

Quinton:"would you look at that beautiful site"

he's right...it's beautiful,the water is so blue,and the sunset just makes it look even more breathtaking.

I notice a wave coming

Quinton:"dont be scared...now the trick is to jump once it's right close to us"

it gets closer

"jump"

we both jump ...as the wave also lifts us very high up..my heart felt like it was going to come out my mouth ..

I giggle

that was kinda fun

Quinton:"you liked that?"

I nod

Me:"yeah"

more waves come by and we jump them smoothly, I've now become comfortable in his arms that I stopped holding his hands cause I know he got me,I'm now enjoying the waves,I just love the way they pick us up...

"bub!"

I look around and notice he's next to me not behind me or holding me...my heart accelerates in fear

Quinton:"relax...you got this,I haven't been holding you for more than twenty seconds now...and you still not drowning"

I jump as another wave hits me..oh my...I'm doing it! on my own!!

Me:"aaahhh...I'm not drowning!...oh my gosh...I'm really doing it!!"

I hear some people clap...oh yeah..they have been watching us since I kinda made a scene about being afraid since we got inside the sea

we jump more waves,while holding each other's hands..till we got tired. I went on

Quinton's back and he swam us back to the shore

Me:"that was so coooooo!!!!!"

Quinton:"and tiring...the clothes have become a heavy weight on me"

he's right the clothe are now heavier since we wet

I get to the house all tired and we head straight for the shower since our bodies are full of sand..he helps wash my hair and I wash his,he loves it when I wash his hair since I have long nails he like the way I scratch his scalp...we dry up,we now lotioning our body

Me:"what are we going to wear..we didn't even bring clothes?"

Quinton:"I'm sure you'll find something in the closet"

I look at him over my hooded eyes with a stupid grin on my face

Me:"mmh oh really now?"

I say as I walk up to the closet with my eyes fixed on him

Quinton:"you look so ridiculously beautiful with that stupid looks on your face you know that?"

Me(whispers):"I know baby.....I know"

he laughs I turn and open the closet to find a bunch of clothes on the one side and shoes on the other side

Me(in awe):"woow...this is a mf dream"

I look back at him

Me:"no love...this is too much"

he walks closer to me

Me:"I can't accept this love"

Quinton:"and why not? it's too little from what you deserve"

Me:"No Quinton,first it was the Jet..the expensive dress and cologne then

Dubai....now..this?...I it's just....

"ssshhh...I want to do all these things for you....please just let me...okay?"

I turn to look at him

Me:"it's ...it's unfair"

Quinton:"how?"

I wrap my arms around his waist then pull him closer

Me:"I also wanna spoil you"

Quinton:"are you kidding me...compared to the things you do for me....I have done nothing"

I chuckle

Me:"you give me way too much credit for small things"

Quinton:"that's how they seem to you...but to me they way too much...just like how you feel about this"

Me:"I have a feeling this whole month will be full of surprises"

Quinton:"you bet your life on it"

I giggle and throw my head back

he kisses my neck

Quinton:"now get dressed before we end up doing wild things all over this room"

he moves away from my naked body and we choose clothes to wear....I decide on a short sexy red body hugging dress and heels,being the copy cat he is he also wore a red shirt and white chinos.

can you believe this idiot also rented out a grey Audi A5....it's a beautiful machine,I feel so superior in this car,I Dont even know where we going but I Dont want us to get there,I'm enjo the ride

Me:"so where you taking me good sir"

he chuckles

Quinton:"good question"

I look at him in anticipation

Quinton:"I'm not answering it"

I huff

Me:"do you wanna hear a good joke?"

he laughs a little

Quinton:"you are the best when it comes to those....please.....do tell"

Me:"how far are we from our destination first?"

Quinton:"we very close"

I reach for his pants and unbackle his belt,pull down his zip then pull out Mr B

He gasps

Quinton:"Lisa?...what are you doing?"

I rub him up and downhe groans and moans

"Fuck Lisa" he groans

I move my head towards Mr B and circle his tip with my tongue...I keep doing that and just teasing with my teeth and tounge without putting him inside my mouth

"damn...bub...please put it in your mouth"

I look up at him

Me:"you want it in my mouth?"

he nods while concentrated on the road

Me:"cant hear you"

I'm rubbing his hard dick slowly

Quinton(breathless):"yes..."

Me:"mmmh...do you want it real bad?"

his breathe hitches

Quinton:"very very badly"

I go down and tease with my tongue again..I stop and bring my face right next to his as I whisper in his ear

Me:"what's the magic word?"

Quinton:"please...please put it your mouth baby"

I kiss his cheek seductively as I lick his side face ..he moans

I put Mr B back inside and zip hhis pants up also fixing his belt

I fake a giggle

Me:"just joking"

his eyes widen in shock as he looks at me in disbelief

Quinton:"no no no.....you can't be...no..."

Me:"I was just joking babe...I wasn't really going to do all that....while you driving...I would never risk our lives like that"

he chuckles in disbelief

Quinton:"are you fucken kidding me!?...Lisa! you Dont joke like that!"

I burst into laughter....I did say I was going to get him for what he did on the Jet

Me:"come on love...take a joke"

I smirk he squints his eyes as looks at me like I'm the most evil person on earth

Quinton:"that was a bad joke"

Me(laughing):"then why is it so funny!!...your face is sooooo red!!"

I can't stop laughing..he pulled over and We have reached our destination...Im still laughing at him..Mr B is still awake waiting for my mouth!! hahahaha!!

Quinton:"now how am I going to go in public like this?"

Me:"ayibo they won't mind...it's not like they've never seen an erect dick before"

Quinton:"fuck! you the most evil beautiful devil sexy Satan I've ever seen!"

I laugh as we make our way inside this beautiful big building...we are escorted to our table that has already been reserved for us...wow,I see he really went out of his way for me to be treated like a queen this honeymoon season..

we were about to reach the table but Quinton pulls my hands and leads me to God knows where

Me:"what the hell?"

Quinton:"toilet first"

Me:"I Dont need the toilet"

Quinton:"nothing will go through my mouth before I fuck you"

I burst into laughter

Me:"but that's for later when we go back to the house"

Quinton:"Dont worry...my batteries never run out"

we reach the men's toilet he locks and immediately pins me kissing me like his life together with Kyle's and mine depends on it...he pulls up my dress,oh fuck...I've already

had multiple orgasms just from the thought of him inside me

Me(breathlessly):"easy love bug"

he puts his tip on top of Miss M who's throbbing wet
Quinton:"never joke with Mr B like that again"
he says as he thrusts in
I let out a loud moan
Me:"It was funny though"
I laugh which turns into moans as he increases th he pace

the week's have gone by so fast and we've done so much...we went to visit the Aquaventure water park with a bunch of long and scary fun slides,...then we went to Aquarium with an under water zoo,where we saw all kinds of fish, it was so beautiful it was like we walking under water with the fish and sharks just wondering around us,the dancing water show is what took my breath away when we visited the Dubai fountain show and watch bed from Atop the Burg khalifa building one of the tallest buildings in the world so it's said....it's when jet water streams as high as 150 meters in the air,it becomes so colourful and different music plays as the water makes circular shape..it's hard to explain but it is a beautiful sight to behold..then we went deep sea diving at Dive Atlantis,where we got to actually swim with all kinds of sea creatures,was freaking scary but fun,then we went to ski Dubai snow park where we played in snow,I could go on and on but there's no corner of Dubai we didn't explore.....this has been the most fun I've ever experienced my whole life, not to even begin with the crazy wild sex with Quinton,it has been way too freaky...we really got to explore each other's sexual desires,I knew we love sex but I never knew we could be this sexually crazy when given the chance...damn,I'm wet just thinking about it.

I'm woken up by an urge to vomit,I get off the bed and run to the bathroom and vomit in the toilet,this has been happening before we got married but it stopped for a while since I took medicine,now this wired flue is back again

"you okay bub?"

Me:"I'm fine...I think I'm getting the flue,we've been playing on ice and going under water,the cold must've caught up with me"

Quinton:"how you feeling now?"

he helps me stand up

Me:"fine...just a minor headache,I'll be fine a few painkillers will do the trick..they in my purse"

Quinton:"on it"

he goes to my purse and bring them to me then helps me drink

Quinton:"how you feeling now?"

Me:"really dude? it hasn't even been ten seconds"

he laughs,I join in

Me:"so what are we doing for our last day in Dubai?"

I know hey...last day already!! then tomorrow it's back to SataFika

Quinton:"we going on a cruise"

I sit up on my knees on the bed

Me(excitedly):"A CRUISE!"

Quinton:"yep...on the Dubai Greek in a lavish boat"

Me:"aahh can't wait...let's get ready!"

Quinton:"whoaaa that's only for tonight...for now,we'll first feed Mr B and Miss M then our tummies...then we'll see what we do for the rest of the day maybe shopping....whatever"

he kisses me and we ontop of each other once more I can never get enough of this dickentainment!!!!

"uuhhh harder!!!"

"damn girl how hard do you want me to go?"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 4

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

💎LISA💎

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

Honeymoon finale💕

☆

☆

☆

The cruise was amazing...it was the most romantic,the City looked so beautiful at night,we were all lovey dovey taking pictures and videos...I can't even pin point which was my most favourite visit throughout our whole adventures in Dubai...what matters is that my husband and I had loads and loads of fun,we have got to know each other in a way more deeper emotional and spiritual level...he opened up to me about everything,even his deepest serects and I thought I knew everything,but this time he didn't leave out a single thing,I'm not happy about some of the things he told me about himself I know his father did a number on him but I'm hoping that one day he changes some of his ways,for the sake of our children in future,but I know he won't even let them peek into the dangerous world he grew up in.

Is it even possible for me to say I love him even more?

I'm feeling a bit blue now as we are on the Jet flying back home,I wish I could press the rewind button..but I also miss my little Prince Charming

"and what could possibly be making my Queen frown?? after I worked so hard to remove those wrinkles by taking her to luxurious spas"

there he goes again teasing me

Me:"stop trying to make yourself feel younger through me grandpa"

he looks at me shocked

Quinton:"wow...someone actually has a good come back..Dubai changes people neh?"

I laugh

Me:"mxm moron"

he gets on the bed and lies next to me,I snuggle on him immediately,I'm not feeling well at all

Quinton:"you still ill?"

Me:"yeah...I think it's something I ate,and the take off of the Jet just made me nauseous,my head is spinning"

Quinton:"I wonder what could be the problem,we didn't perhaps eat anything with cinnamon without knowing?"

I'm very much allergic to cinnamon but it does me bad

Me:"No...if we had something with cinnamon we'd be in some hospital in Dubai now" the last time I had cinnamon was when I was six years old..I became so sick,my whole body became swollen and red feeling all kinds of fever,couldn't breath properly,I spent a whole month in the hospital,mom and dad thought I was going to die...I told Quinton this story a long time when we were still friends...he knows cinnamon is my only allergy,well he's not allergic to anything so he says

Quinton:"I did a stupid thing and forgot to carry emergency treatment,damn...I should've went to the pharmacy yesterday since you were sick in the morning"

Me:"then I became fine...so it's fine that you forgot we didn't know I'd be feeling like this again today"

Quinton:"still...that was careless of me,now I can't give you anything to make you feel better"

Me:"just cuddle me,I'll be fine"

he cuddles me

Quinton:"we should go see a doctor"

Me:"it's just a flue love bug...nothing hectic"

Quinton:"you never know...I Dont want to find out when it's too late that you caught some foreign virus"

I giggle

Me:"you love exaggerating hun"

Quinton:"eyi I want you healthy even when we start having grey hairs...so we can live to celebrate our 60th anniversary"

I laugh

Me:"sixty!! haaa do you think we'll even remember our anniversary day at that age?"

Quinton:"that's what our children and great grand children will be there for"

Me:"in sixty years time I'll be seventy nine and you'll be eighty three....daammnmn you be old"

he laughs

Quinton:"girl you be old too"

Me:"oh my gosh...I cannot imagine the day Kyle brings the first girl home to introduce to

us"

Quinton:"ohh you better be ready bub,cause he'll be bringing them left right and centre"

Me:"them!?!...oh hell no...he won't be introducing me to different girls everytime he gets a new girlfriend....he will only introduce me to the girl he is willing to marry and when he's ready to settle down"

Quinton:"what if he keeps thinking it's the right girl but it doesn't work out for some reason then he brings the next girl and he's sure she's the one but then something happens and so on.."

Me:"God forbid...I'll know when he's met the one...then I'll tell him that she's the one I want to meet"

Quinton:"yeah..good thing you gifted"

Me:"thank God for that"

we laugh a bit then it goes silent for a short while

Quinton:"think about it though...it would be fun if he introduces us to his girlfriends through his teenage phase till the right girl...(he laughs)...imagine embarrassing him in front of his girlfriend throughout the whole dinner"

I burst into laughter

Me:"then we tell all his childhood funny stories"

we laugh even harder

Me:"you so evil"

Quinton:"yet you supporting me"

Me:"imagine if we could have a girl"

Quinton:"damn...she's not allowed to date,go out,have friends,we not even getting her a phone,not going to buy her bras she'll stick to sports bra till she's twenty five,her curfew is 15:00pm after school she comes right back home..she'll only break her virginity when she gets married and she'll only start dating at twenty six"

I can't help but crack up and laugh

Me(laughing):"you crazy!! she's not allowed a social life!! that's insane!!"

Quinton:"hey...that will be my first princess,I won't allow the world to play stupid mind games with her"

Me:"yuuuhh ha.ah you too extra....that's when they start becoming rebellious,if you too strict,that one moment she'll experience of freedom,she will get too excited and want to try many things that she's always been forbidden to do...and will end up doing everything wrong,life doesn't go well,she's scared to talk to her parents,scared to dissappoint daddy who expects only the best from her....and before you know it we only left with a suicide note"

silence

he sighs

Quinton:"damn you and your over thinking mind....fine, I won't be that strict"

I laugh cause of the scared reaction he made after I finished saying all that

Quinton:"but I want her to be able to talk to daddy about anything"

Me:"what about when it's time for...'THE TALK'? will you do that with her? "

he looks at me with his one brow up

Quinton:"that's your role....I'll handle that with Kyle and the rest of the boys we might have"

we laugh till we just silent with my head on his chest listening to his heart beating so

happily filled with satisfaction.
that's when the bitter reality hits me
You CANT have KIDS remember!?
the thought pierces through my heart
there we go again....I thought I could put this behind me...but now we married,we've had
our honeymoon...what comes next in our marriage is something I can never give
him..us..

Quinton:"hey...whatsup? you crying?"

I notice a tear escaped my eyes and fell on his shirtless bare chest
he helps me sit up and rest on the big pillow of the bed

Quinton(softly):"why you crying bub?...is it the headache? has it gotten worse?"

I shake my head

Quinton:"then what is it....please,Dont do that, you break my heart when you cry"

I wipe my tears and force a smile

Me:"argh...I'm just so happy,you know,about everything,how far we've come....it's
actually unbelievable that we so happy now"

he smiles

Quinton:"from now on...we will live happily ever after, I know that doesn't mean we won't
have more ups and downs and maybe more storms..but we married now,we have all
the blessings,we will be stronger in the next battle that comes our way"

Me:"we both know those are never easy,sometimes these battles blind us and it's as if
we dont even see the love anymore we just see the bad things that are going on and it
just becomes way too easy for us to give up on each other"

Quinton:"I know...but we have guidance now...your gift...Bella...and your father"

I sigh

Me:"you right,we'll make it through this marriage till death do us part"

Quinton:"I couldn't have said it any better"

he pulls me to him and I rest on his side chest while my hands draws over my name
tattooed on his skin

Quinton:"I love you"

Me:"I love you too"

Quinton:"and Dont you forget that"

Me:"I miss my little cuddle muffins"

Quinton:"yeah I miss that little fella too"

after hours we have finally landed and we just parked our scrappy golf in front of the
house...I try to open the door,it's a hustle

Quinton:"I'll open it from outside"

he gets out and goes around then opens it

Me:"damn I miss the Audi A5 from Dubai"

Quinton(laughing):"go get it"

I laugh,I took everything in that closset from the penthouse,those are all new designer
clothes,I'm not about to leave a single thing behide..I get some of the bags inside and I
leave the rest of the ten bags to Quinton and the guy who drove the van that was
following us with our luggage, while i rush inside for my baby,I missed him most

I drop the bags in the middle of nowhere as I call out for mom

Me(shouts):"Mah!!"

they not inside the house so I go towards the back sliding door

Me:"cuddle muffins!!"

I hear some giggles coming from outside,my heart skips for joy when I hear his cute tiny voice

I see them chilling by the grass,looks like they were having a picnic

I stand in a distance and watch them,Kyle looks my way and notices me...he

immediately claps his hands and screams with joy giggling

Me:"there's my cuddly coodle muffin muffins"

he giggles louder as he tries to get up from his rocking chair but he realises that he can't...he's only two months after all,he can't do zilch ...I get closer clapping my hands like him hes too excited he might burst

Mom:"wow..he really missed you"

I take him out of his misery and pick him up he shakes his legs in excitement,I hold his head he's throwing it too back and he's still too fragile

Me(baby talk):"mama missed you more bhabha...yes she did...yes yes she missed

you....ohhh my woodly doodly poodly cuddlesmy little Kylie...my kiki....(sings)....kiki

do you love me? are you riding say you never ever leave....from beside me cause I want yah and I need yah and I'm down for yah"

he giggling showing off his gums,this child loves laughing,he's a happy baby

I look at mom

Me:"oh...sorry..hey mumzo..didn't see you there"

she gasps i laugh

Me:"just kidding...damn I missed you mfaz"(woman)

I give her a warm hug

Mom:"I see Kyle has stolen my spotlight"

I laugh while Kyle makes farting sounds with his mouth spitting on my face

Me:"aahh seis man Kyle!"

he giggles..he's an idiot,like father like son

"wwwwhhhheres my favorite boy in the whole wild woooorrrrrllldd!!!"

he shouts with his deep voice i turn so he can see his dad

Quinton(shouting):"There he is!!! awuu awuu awuuuuuuuuuuuhh!!!"

Kyle and I are dead with laughter as he comes towards us howling like a wolf

he takes Kyle from me and lifts him high above his head with Kyle giggle and drooling on his dad's head

he brings him back down to hold him properly

Quinton:"do you have to ruin the fun with spit all the damn time child"

he just giggle then a hiccup stops him,he goes quiet with his eyes wide out...the hiccup comes again...he's now quiet and curious about the sound that's coming out his mouth

he always does that,it's so cute

Mom:"he loves listening to his hiccups this one"

Me:"he does...it's like he's wondering where's that weird sound is coming from"

Quinton:"gosh it's so cute being a baby...(baby tone)...specially being baby Kyle..kylie wylie..

he looks at mom

Quinton:"oh shuuu...mummm...heeyyy I missed you so much"

we laugh

Mom:"it's fine...Kyle has marked his territory..I'm completely forgotten"
they hug

Quinton:"how can I forget the Queen of all my queens"

Me:"is that so?"

Quinton:"I can explain bub"

Mom&I:"explain"

he chuckles nervously

He winks at me

Quinton:"I'll explain to you later on...*wink wink* ...huh...huh?"

we Burst into laughter

and he manages to make a run for it back to the house with Kyle

we laugh till they disappear

Mom:"whoah I feel sorry for you Lilly..you've now got two boys to babysit"

Me:"yoh tell me about it...once Kyle turns four I'm laying out ground rules..or else my house will turn into a human pigstyle zoo"

we laugh as we sit by the relaxing chairs

I sigh as I take off my shoes and put my legs up on the long chair and relax

Mom:"you look tired but you glowing at the same time"

Me(takes a deep breathe):"tired? (chuckles)...that's an understatement..try a word worse than exhausted"

I say with my eyes closed,I'm really tired my feet are killing me and so is my back

Mom:"so how was Dubai?"

I open my eyes and look at her

Me:"you knew about the surprises didn't you?"

she laughs

Me:"of cause you knew,he tells you everything"

Quinton has really been close with mom,they have this mother son bond that's unexplainable...I've never seen him like that even with his own mom...I just hope Q's mom is cool with it otherwise God knows what that woman might do this time

Mom:"he actually kinda asked for my help"

Me:"No way!"

I'm shocked so she's also behind all the romance that's been exploding back in Dubai

Mom:"well I came up with the Dubai place...he wanted to take you to Paris"

Me:"Paris!! wow....but ayi Dubai was a better choice"

Mom:"I know cause your father once took me there....but he had to pretend as if I was a client so that I can get in the plane they used for work deliveries..as you already know he was involved in shady businesses"

Me:"aaww that's so sweet...he went through all that,risking his job so he can take his wife on a romantic getaway"

she blushes

Mom:"he was the most romantic men I've ever been involved with..despite everything he knew how to treat a woman,we were madly in love....you and Quinton remind me alot of him and I"

this is the first time ever since dad passed away mom has been open to talk and reminisce about the good old times

Me:"he was a good husband as much as he was a good father....it's okay to reminisce

and miss him every now and then,you should get comfortable in talking about him cause you have to tell us your tales so we can tell your grandkids,so that they know what love should be like and what kind of sacrifices someone who loves you would make"

she wipes her tear and sighs

Mom:"are you okay though?"

Me:"yeah I'm fine"

Mom:"you look different somehow...I first thought I was imagining during the weeks before the wedding,then when you were in your wedding gown, my suspicions got clearer and now here you are...you glowing,lighter complexion,youreyes are greener than ever, you've gained weight"

I chuckle

Me:"well my husband did take really good care of me...in more ways than one.. (laughs)...kidding...but..yeah....and the food in Dubai,just couldn't get enough"

she smiles

Me:"what?...what's that look?"

Mom:"it's way more than that"

Me:"what do you mean?"

Mom:"I think there's a bun in the oven"

I'm lost

Me:"what do you mean?...which bun? what oven?"

she laughs

Mom:"you might be pregnant my angel"

the world stops spinning

Mom:"you should do a test to make sure...maybe Mr O'Brien scored jackpot"

her words hit deaf ears as everything comes crumbling down...I..it can't

be...impossible....this can't be happening...we finally happy...I'm not pregnant...you not pregnant Lisa, YOU ARE NOT PREGNANT

"hello...(snaps fingers)...Lisa!?"

I focus back on her

Mom:"have you felt any weird symptoms lately?"

.....

I'm woken up by an urge to vomit,I get off the bed and run to the bathroom and vomit in the toilet,this has been happening before we got married but it stopped for a while since I took medicine,now this wired flue is back again

"you okay bub?"

Me:"I'm fine...I think I'm getting the flue,we've been playing on ice and going under water,the cold must've caught up with me"

Quinton:"how you feeling now?"

he helps me stand up

Me:"fine...just a minor headache,I'll be fine a few painkillers will do the trick..they in my purse"

Quinton:"on it"

he goes to my purse and bring them to me then helps me drink

Quinton:"how you feeling now?"

Me:"really dude? it hasn't even been ten seconds"

.....

I look up at her in fear my hands are trembling

Me(whispers):".....oh no!"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 5

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

💎LISA💎

☆

☆

☆

☆

☆

Mom:"yintoni?"(what's up?)

Me:"I can't be pregnant mah"

I stand on my feet

Me:"I just can't"

I start pacing

Mom:"Lisa..I know I never had the "talk" with you...but,you a woman...and when you have sex without using any contraception..you will fall pregnant"

Me:"I know that...it's been a while since I went for the shot....shit..I can't be pregnant"

I haven't told mom about my womb problem

Mom:"Lisa...you married now,you bound to give your husband a big family"

Me:"you Dont understand"

Mom:"sit down will you...you making me dizzy"

I take a seat

Mom:"now...calm yourself down..and talk to me"

Me:"mah...I can't fall pregnant"

Mom:"why not?"

I sigh

Me:"I just can't"

Mom:"what....what do you mean? how come?"

my heart aches, I look up to prevent tears from falling

Me:"I dont know,I only found out last year..my womb is scarce"

it goes silent as shock has overtook her whole body...I'm shaking,I can't be pregnant,I won't make it through this

Me:"I can't be pregnant mama....it'll be too painful, I can't dissapoint Quinton like this.....he wants kids so bad.....please mom, I can't be pregnant....(bursts into tears)....I can't "

she comes sit next to me and embraces me

Mom:"why didn't you tell me?...how is this even possible?"

Me:"it's...it's because of rough sex"

Mom:"Mncedisi?"

I nod and bury my face on her chest as I let it all out

Mom(breaking voice):"oh my baby...everything will work out, this is God's plan"

we stay in that comforting position for a while, I lift my head up then wipe my tears while calming myself down

Me:"No...let's not get ahead of ourselves...I mean he did also say there's little chances of me getting pregnant, this might just be a false alarm and we looking too much into it"

Mom:"what if its not?"

Me:...

Me:"then it will be the worst thing that could happen to me"

Mom:"Angel....you know that God has chosen you with a great gift,anything is possible with God..doctors are not always right and you should know better than anyone that miracles do happen"

Me:"I know mom...but I can't afford to put Quinton and I through that path of high expectations hopes only for disappoinments"

Mom:"go to the doctor tomorrow and find out"

I nod

Me:"it's probably just a flue...it is winter after all"

Mom:"probably"

I sigh,at least that "probably" gave me a bit of hope that we are just putting much thought into nothing...Quinton does like to say I over think things....phew..I'm not pregnant,it's so obvious

.....

Me:"something wrong?"

Doc:"yes"

Me:"what is it?"

Doc:"you might not be able to have children at all in future"

My heart literally stops for a few seconds

Doc:"Miss Mthethwa ? Are you okay?"

I look up at him

Me:"at all?"

Doc:"there's a very low possibility.. 20% chance maybe,your womb is scarce " Me:"wha wha what?"

Doc:"it might be cause by something you've eaten or rough sex can also damage your cervix, and with a bruised or damaged cervix it'll be really hard to carry a child"

His words hit home, I know I was happy I'm not pregnant, that's because I'm still to young to have children... But that doesn't mean I don't ever want to have children of my own, why Lord? Me:"okay..."

I get up

Me:"thanks"

He looks at me with pity

Doc: "don't forget to come back tomorrow"

I nod and walk out towards Quinton

.....

yeah..doctor's words,it's impossible I fall pregnant, 20% chance can't be that strong...can it?

we go back inside the house...luckily mom offered to cook,I'm supper tired,all those activities we did are really getting to me now.

we all had supper in the lounge, my mood went up again,being around my family,just the four of us,it's just what I need,too bad mom has to leave tomorrow,she says she's left her house alone for too long now,people will start noticing and try funny things...you know the stories of Eastern Cape or any villages,if it's not crime,it's witchcraft.

After dinner and putting Kyle to sleep,everyone said their goodnights.

he walks in from the bathroom all wet only a short towel around his waist,I watch him as I'm on the bed,I put down the novel I'm reading and take off my glasses

I watch him wipe his sexy body,then he dips his finger on the lotion and starts rubbing his body,my pussy clenches,God really took his own sweet time creating this perfectly imperfect man...oh God..that tan butt,absolutelybeautiful,then his fine thighs..oh my his legs,they a bit hairy but not messy hairy,fine hairy,they form a bit of brackets..ohhh my white chocolate...what more can a girl ask for

"I could literally feel your eyes raping my naked vulnerable body"

his voice snaps my eyes off his sleeping machine gun (Mr B)

Me:"oh please..you wish i was starting at you...I was just thinking about the chapter I just read in my novel"

he chuckles

Quinton:"yeah right"

he gets his naked body inside the covers

Me:"aren't you going to put on something warm?"

unlike Dubai,we back to winter here in Joburg,in Dubai it was summer and hot as hell

Quinton:"why do I need clothes when I have a perfectly warm bed with an even warmer wife?"

my heart melts,what a charmer

Me:"you better put on some trunks boy cause Miss M is not coming out to play tonight"

he looks at me disappointed

Quinton:"but..."

Me:"but nothing,I'm tired,tell Mr B tomorrow and please do apologise for us"

Quinton:"he's asking for just one round..."

I shake my head

Quinton(desperately):"we'll even settle for a quickie"

I laugh shaking my head

I lift the cover and peek at Mr B

Me:"not tonight big man...sorry,but we'll make it up to you tomorrow"

Quinton holds him up and makes him talk like a puppet

Quinton:"you'll pay for this Mrs O'Brien...you and Miss M..you'll paaayyy"

the way he's wiggling his dick and his voice is hilarious...I can't stop laughing,my tummy is even painful from my laugh...it has even become silent with tears rolling down my face...I can't breath

Quinton(chuckles):"it's not funny"

Me(laughing while hitting his arm):"c..can't breathhhhhh"

finally! my breathe comes back and my voice is back

Me(laughing):"ouch...my tummy hurts....hahahaha...yuuuhh ha.ah Mr B is funny"

we both laugh as I try to catch my breathe and wipe my tears

Quinton:"you like talking dick?"

I shake my head

Me:"no...he's creepy!"

I rest my head on his shoulder as I chuckle now and then...as the image keeps replaying in my mind,This man will kill me with laughter I tell you,if not sex

Quinton:"so tell me...what making my usually energetic sex freak so tired tonight?"

I laugh

Me:"sex freak? look who's talking"

he laughs

Me:"I'm just tired...must be all the games we played,being on the road visiting every place,endless shopping and exploring everyday and the crazy love making night and day...I just need to relax"

he sighs

Quinton:"you right bub...I might not admit it cause you so damn irresistible but we do need to take it easy and relax"

Me:"thank you"

I get ontop of him and lie my bday against his

Me:"my whole back is aching,feels like it's on fire"

I whine as my head is rested on his chest

Quinton:"you want me to take care of that?"

Me:"please love bug"

he chuckles then starts rubbing and pressing my back touching me in all the right parts
"mmhmmm"

moans escape my mouth

Quinton:"damn bub...you so tense,too much tension on your back....get up"

I move from him,he gets off the bed then heads to the dressing table he puts on his briefs then comes back with the herbal rubbing stuff and celltone oil

Me(excitedly):"am I getting a proper massage?"

Quinton:"a full body massage bub,we getting rid of all that stress and tension tonight"

I half scream excitedly

Me:"ahhh you the best husband in the world!"

Quinton:"you better get naked fast before I change my mind woman"

he says in firm tone

Me:"Yohh....(mumbles)..spoke too soon"

he laughs as I do as I'm told throwing my night dress to the floor and I'm left fully naked..I lie on my tummy

Quinton:"fuck!....you so damn thick bub"

He says as I feel him pour oil on my back

Me:"are you saying I'm fat?"

Quinton:"no..but you getting thicker...I love it,I'll keep feeding you"

I laugh

Me:"oh hell no...then when I'm all fat you'll loose interest in me"

Quinton:"wow...I can't believe you think I'd loose interest in you cause of your body. you should know by now that what I feel for you is way deeper"

I hear the disappointment in his voice

Me:"I know love bug....I was just teasing"

he carries on massaging me all over from my shoulders to my back,butt,legs and feet...one would swear we having sex from the moans that I can't seem to control...he moves his hands up back to my butt they all slippery he keeps going between my butt cheeks and teasing my nunu,shit this is making me wet and ache for him
"on your back"

I turn and lie on my back he throws his legs over me and sits right on Miss

M...fuuucckk!!..he's testing me this man!

he pours the cold herbs stuff and the oil all over my breasts and tummy,his hands start doing magic spreading all over massaging my chest,shoulder boobs and tummy,he focuses alot on the boobs..(rolls eyes)...why am I not surprised, my eyes are closed enjoying every single touch every single shiver down my spine and every single drip of cream spilling out my nunu...I'm sure he can notice my erect boobs right now
"you still good bub?"

I nod

Me:"mhmm"

he moves down to my legs but he keeps ignoring to touch Miss M very time he comes up next to her

Me:"mmh Q...this is supposed to be full body....every single part of it"

he chuckles

Quinton:"was waiting for you to whine"

Me:"meany"

he finally give Miss M her undivided attention as he spreads my legs apart

Quinton:"fuck...you so wet....this is torchure"

he slips in his one finger I gasp for air to the pleasures of his finger,he keeps rubbing,vibrating and moving in and out...next thing I know I feel something cold that's his lips,he ticks his tounge in and starts moving it in different directions letting it explore all my virginal walls

"aahhhsshhh ohh love bug"

he licks the liquid I just released.

he comes up to my lips and kisses me,he pulls out

Quinton:"you feeling better now?"

I nod looking into his eyes

Me:"way better...thank you very much"

Quinton:"you welcome very much"

he gets back in the covers and we cuddle

Quinton:"I really do love your thick boody"

I laugh

Me:"I really do love your rough yet soft hands"

Quinton:"bub"

Me:"Q"

Quinton:"are you feeling too full?"

I giggle

Me:"you wanna feed me some more? you really want me fat neh?"

he chuckles

Quinton:"No..it's not that..it's just,when I was rubbing your tummy,I noticed something"

I adjust my head on his chest

Me:"what did you notice?"

Quinton:"your tummy feels hard,I thought its because you might be too full or something"

Me:"hard?...ayi I dont know,maybe I am..andaz"(Dont know)

Quinton:"and it felt firm...also your boobs they grew like they bit bigger now" my heart accelerates

Me:"ayi ke...now you just imagining things"

Quinton:"no I'm not...I know your body more than yourself and I definitely notice when there's changes going on...especially my babies"(the boobs)

Me:"oh okay body expert...maybe it has something to do with the weight I gained during this month,since you've been feeding me left right and centre"

he chuckles

Quinton:"yeah...you did eat like a pig"

I hit his shoulder

Me:"you'll sleep on the couch if you Dont watch your mouth"

Quinton:"yes ma'am"

we talk about random things till we fell asleep

wailing baby!!!!

I lift my head up and I hear Kyle crying from the baby monitor

Quinton gets up too he looks at me and notices I'm up then lays his head down

Me:"oh come on Q...please go check on him"

Quinton:"hayi bub...Q is sleeping"

Me:"please"

Quinton:"No..you go"

I throw my arms over him as I on switch on the lamp on his side

he covers his head with the blanket

Me:"Quinton...please go love"

I pull the covers away

Quinton:"Lisa...sizoxabana"(dont start with me)

Me:"let's play rock paper scissors?"

he gets up and we form fists

"rock paper scissors!"

I win

Quinton:"unfair...you know you always win that game"

he whines as he makes his way out

I laugh and go back inside the warm covers back to lalaland

I hear him getting in the cover....that was quick...I open my eyes and I'm met by a baby boy sucking his bottle next to me

I look at Quinton who's made himself comfortable in bed

Me:"and then?"

Quinton:"I'm not about to wake up and walk to his room every time he cries"

Me:"ayibo...what if we squash him to death?"

Quinton:"then one less problem"

I gasp

Me:"hayibo!!"

he chuckles

Quinton:"I'm kidding jeez...nawe you'll be careful and sleep like a girl tonight,keep to your side I'll keep to mine"

Me:"argh...I Dont have energy to argue with idiots"

he chuckles

Quinton:"love you too wifey"

I tuck Kyle in and take his bottle as he has already finished it and he's sleeping soundly,I look and Quinton and he has his back on us I kiss his shoulder,then I kiss Kyle's cheek multiple times before turning my back on him and doze off

I feel tiny hands slapping my face and scratching it painfully with his sharp nails...I groan and smack his hands softly...guess what? he giggles..damn this child knows how to make me weak,I sit up on my butt,I notice daddy is still asleep facing us,his mouth is a bit open and his eyes never fully shut

I have Kyle on my lap

Me:"you want daddy?"

he just looks at me

Me:"yes you do"

he makes baby sounds then an unpleasant smell hits me...I lift him up and smell his butt

Me:"uuhh...we had a little accident didn't we?"

he giggles touching my face everywhere

Me:"well...it's daddy's turn to take care of that"

I place him on Quinton's face..I'm holding in my laughter..I keep bouncing him on his neck gently

"mh mh..Liss...stop it"

he says in his sleepy tone with his eyes closed..I bring Kyle's butt closer to his nose

Quinton:"aahh hmmm what's that smell"

he says disgusted as he opens his eyes

to be met by Kyle's butt

Me:"diaper change time!!!"

he moves Kyle's butt away a bit and looks at me irritated

Quinton:"are you freaken kidding me?"

I shake my head

Me:"Nope...good morning daddy, baby wants you....mommy going to wash her face make breakfast and clean up"

I leave Kyle ontop of him,who immediately slaps his face while giggling

Quinton:"oh wow..you seriously going to beat me up right now?"

he holds his tiny hands

Quinton:"you need me boy...you better behave yourself"

I giggle leaving them arguing,I put on my gown and head out...I find mom already up making porridge....oh she's a life saver

Me:"if it isn't the best mommy in the world"

I hug her from behind

Mom:"you a wife now...lilona xhesha lokuvuka eli?"(is this the right time to wake up) gosh it's still seven o'clock this is way early

Me:"I'll go wash my face"

I dismiss myself before the long "you're wife now" lecture

I just finished freshening up after we had porridge..I left mom and Quinton in the lounge then went to put Kyle back to sleep,he wakes up early then sleeps after he's been cleaned, changed and fed.

I feel his arms snake around me from behind,I bend over the sink and spit out water as I'm brushing my teeth. I smirk as I feel his hard crotch.

Quinton:"good morning sweery"

Me:"good morning sweetrut"

he lays his head on my shoulder breathing and nibbling against my neck,sending all kinds of shivers down my....everywhere

he whispers in my ear

Quinton:"why you so evil mammie?"

damn his voice,it still has that effect on me giving me butterflies

Me(old english accent):"whatsoever did I do phaphar"

he laughs as he buries his face in my neck

Quinton:"you placed baby shit diaper on my face while i was asleep"

I laugh and put my toothbrush away and turn to face him then wrap my arms around his waist just like his are around mine

Me:"I did of no such"

Quinton:"of such you did"

I giggle

Me:"and of what proof do you behold"

Quinton:"Kyle as a witness"

Me:"he should be the culprit since he's the baby and the only one who wears diapers"

Quinton:"he's the victim as much as I am for he was controlled by his mother to sit on my handsome face"

Me:"this must be a false theory for your face is nowhere close to being handsome"

he gasps

Quinton:"and now it's insults...that's it...you going to get it now young lady"

he picks me up like a bag of potatoes

and throws me on the bed,I quickly get on my knees and try crawling away but he pulls my legs and I fall on my tummy

Quinton:"not so fast granny"

he flips me over roughly and gets on top of me and locks my hands over my head he brings his face closer,my breathe hitches as he moves his waist in circular motion causing his dick to move all up on Miss M

Me:"mmh...about that quickie?"

Quinton:"you want a quickie?"

he whispers against my lips still moving and pressing his hard against me,my pussy is

throbbing with ache

I nod...I've never wanted something so bad in my life

Quinton:"I can't hear you"

Me(breathlessly):"yes..."

Quinton(smirks):"mmmh...how bad do you want it?"

I look at his stupid grin...ohhh I see what he's doing here,pay back!! Gosh! did he have to remember

Me:"I want it really really bad"

he lifts himself up a bit takes out Mr B and places him on my pussy ontop of the panty...he presses his tip and rubs against my entrance

Quinton:"what's the magic word?"

Me:"please please please...pretty please with cherries and berries on top....pleeaaasee!!"

he laughs breathlessly

he moves off from me and puts Mr B back in his shorts

he chuckles

Quinton:"just joking"

Me:"No..no baby I'm sorry please Dont repeat my bad jokes please"

Quinton:"I wasn't really going to do all that...while you so tired...I want you to relax, get all the rest you need"

he gets off the bed leaving me longing and every part of me aching in need

Me:"oh heelll No...you get back here!"

I jump off the bed and climb on his back

Me:"stop right there...."

Quinton:"Eyi crazy woman...leave me alone!"

he shakes me off him...I block his way closing and locking the door then throw the keys away,but somewhere in the room

Quinton:"Lisa...open this door"

Me:"there's only one way this door can open"

Quinton:"open the door Lisa"

Me:"No..."

I push him towards the bed

Quinton:"whooaa what are you doing?"

I push him hard and he falls on the bed

I get ontop of him

Me:"I'm having what's mine"

he bits his bottom lip

Quinton:"but I thought you were tired"

Me:"well the massage healed everything....now I want you to make me loose my senses Mr O'Brien, sir"

Quinton:"since you asked so nicely"

he flips me over and makes me feel as I requested and more

he piggy rides me as we head to the kitchen

smells like mom has made breakfast

Mom:"aninanhloni nindishiya apha ndodwa to go have sex"(you have no shame leaving

me alone down here to go have sex)
we look at each other but hold in the laughter
Me:"whaaat nooo....it's not even like that,we were just...well Quinton was....
Mom:"save it...anyway your food is in the microwave...but please take me to the rank
first I need to get going"
Me:"already?"
Mom:"it's a long way home...and besides,y'all need your space...you are newly weds
and are obsessed with each other"
Quinton:"let me go get dressed,I'll take you"
Mom:"thank you son"
he runs upstairs leaving me with mom in the kitchen
Mom:"here....I got you this...try it and tell me what it says over the phone"
she hands me a box...
Me:"A preg.....(whispers)...pregnancy test?"
Mom:"yes...just try it...I'm not saying you pregnant but you have to be sure"
"Ready we can go"
I quickly walk towards the draw in the kitchen and hide it where the spoons stay then
turn to face them
Me:"okay mah...we'll keep in touch"
we hug
He comes towards me
Quinton:"I might be back a bit late,will pass by Aidan's place"
I nod
Me:"okay..but not too late"
Quinton:"dont worry I'll be here before you even start cooking dinner"
Me:"you better"
he captures my lips with his we stay like that without moving them...I pull out
Me:"go so you can come back already"
he laughs and pecks my lips again
Quinton:"love you"
he says walking out...I go close the door behind them,I lean against it and let out a
sigh...I tilt my head looking at the draw,I walk up to it open it and take out the box
Me:"let's see what you have for me"
I run upstairs to Kyle's room...he's still asleep..I close and go to our room I lock myself in
the bathroom and follow the instructions

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 6



👑QUINTON👑



☆
☆
☆

After dropping off mah I first past the liquor for a few hot drinks...I want to pass by Aidan's new crib,just to check it out and chill,also need to check a few things on how business was holding up while I've been gone....I notice a car parked at the side of road with the bonnet open,it's one of those vintage very old BMWs I park behind it to see if the owner of it might need help ..I get out

Me:"hello?"

A lady comes around towards me,she's very young,should she be driving?

Her:"hey"

Me:"do you need help?"

Her:"yes please...my car was making funny sounds then jammed"

I get closer to her bonnet

Me:"oh...I see...let me check it for you"

I checked the water it was fine so I checked her oil..indeed she's out of oil

Me:"looks like you ran out of oil..."

she looks at me defeated

Her:"this can't be happening"

Me:"I always have a bottle of oil in my car..I could help you out"

Her:"thanks...but I dont have any money on me"

I smile at her innocence

Me:"dont worry about it..I got you"

I walk up to my car and get the oil

I get to her car and pour some oil

I close the cap of the oil then close her bonnet...I check her tires and there's a punched tire

Me:"ohh..your tire is no good,do you have a spare?"

Her:"No....shit!.. uhmm I'll just take a hike"

Me:"what about your car? you'll just leave it here?"

Her:"yeah....it doesn't matter"

I raise my brow...child! I just filled up oil in that tank

Me:"I have a spare I could put it in for you"

she shakes her head

Her:"No sir that's okay you've already done...."

Me:"I'll take that as a yes"

I grab my spare,I take off my shirt I dont want to get it dirty,good thing I have a vest underneath so I'm not shirtless

Me:"all done"

she just stares at me...she's holding my shirt

Me:"I'll have that now,thanks"

her eyes trail my body...I have no doubt she just undressed me,her eyes stop and she's staring at my pants...I look at my pant,yep she's looking at my dick print...damn some girls are thirsty

I clear my throat she looks back up at me

Her:"umm I..I'm sorry ..."

Me:"I said..my shirt please"

Her:"oh ...yeah....sure"

she gives me and I dress up

Me:"okay cool...hope you travel safely for the rest of your ride"

I turn and walk

"what do you want?"

I was about to get in my car,I let go of the handle and look at her

Me:"excuse me?"

Her:"No one does anything nice for free nowadays....so..what do you want?"

Me:"nothing"

she chuckles

Her:"impossible....you a man,you just helped out a woman a total stranger....for nothing?"

Me:"look lady...I saw someone in need of help,I had the ability to help out of my own goodwill..without expecting anything in return...so if you feel I want something...please keep it"

Her:"wow..well okay then...thank you"

Me:"you welcome"

I get in my car drive off...I should stop helping people,nowadays when you help someone you a weirdo or you need something in return,that shit is messed up.

I miss my wife already,I should just cancel Aidan...but then again that wouldn't be right. I

get to his crib and open the gate,it's not a fancy house so the gate is not electrical

I knock at the door,for a while no one opens,I knock once more

"coming"

Thats Aidan,what's taking him so long?

"hang on a sec!.....will be there just now!"

ohh he must have a girl over,he's probably trying to hide her or take her out at the back

"sup bro!"

he opens with a wide nervous smile

"sup..."

I push him out of the way cause he's stuck in front of me

Aidan:"I thought we only hanging later on...you early"

Me:"yeah well I'll have to be home early...hope you dont mind....I mean you could use the company right?"

he scratches his head

Aidan:"yeah sure....it gets lonely in here"

yeah right...he can't even stand still

Me:"mmh...so where you hiding her?"

he looks around acting confused

Aidan:"what...who you talking about....I dont know what you on about"

Me:"first of all...you rumbling...second...she forgot her bra and shorts ontop of the sofa..."

I move them and throw them on the floor since they right where I'm sitting

Me:"thirdly I know she's still in here cause this place smells of sex and your glass coffee table proves that it was steamy in here"

Aidan:"shit"

Me:"yeah...so whoever and wherever you are come out!! i dont bite"

I laugh

Aidan:"dude...I Dont think I'm ready for you to meet this one"

Me:"oh so this is serious?"

Aidan:"not really.....kind of....but naahh...you know"

I laugh

Me:"yeah....I know...and you thought I was weird when I didn't want y'all to meet Lisa...but really its cool man,I won't tell a soul..and I won't bring it up all the time....so us let the poor girl breath and walk out properly or she can hang with us...but I'm sure she's struggling to breath behind that curtain....which is a terrible hiding spot cause I saw he immediately before I even saw her clothes"

I laugh even louder gosh this is hilarious

Aidan:"wow man...couldn't you atleast pretend you didn't notice anything then ask for the bathroom so she can leave in peace?"

I can't stop laughing...my lil bro is stupid,shit!

Me:"it's okay young lady...you can walk out,I won't kill you or ask any questions or even say a word to you"

Aidan:"you promise?"

I breath

Me:"I promise"

Aidan:"I'm serious man...no freaking out dont say a thing....even when she's gone" yoh..she must be very ugly or maybe some physco

Me:"dude...chill..I promise"

Aidan:"okay...you can come out"

the curtains move and she steps out

my mouth hangs open...I can't believe my eyes

Me:"Yonela?"

Aidan:"dude....you promised"

Me:"oh snap...sorry"

I zip my mouth

Yonela:"uhm..Quinton....it's not what it looks like"

I just nod..since i can't say anything

Yonela:"this was just a spur of the moment"

I nod unsurely....I dont get why she feels the need to explain to me....I really dont care...like really really dont care about who she fucks and why..just like I dont care who

Aidan fucks and for what fucks reason

I look at Aidan

Aidan:"Nella you Dont have to explain...."

Yonela:"I just dont want people thinking we dating or something"

Aidan's facial expression changes...I see that statement kinda disappointed him but

Yonela is totally blind of that..kinda like how I felt every time Lisa reminded me we just "friends"

Aidan:"dont worry...I'll make sure it never looks that way cause that's how it will always be anyway"

Yonela:"Great....okay then...bye boys"

she winks at Aidan,and makes her way out she is already dressed

She comes back

Yonela:"this stays between the three of us neh?"

I nod

Yonela:"not even Lisa Quinton"

I nod

she blows a kiss and heads out

we both sighs heavily as soon as she's gone

he comes sit next to me

I want to talk about it so bad...but I'm not about to break a promise

we sit in awkward silence for a while

Aidan:"spit it out"

I didn't waste time

Me:"Yonela? really dude"

he looks at me

Aidan:"what's wrong with that?"

Me:"well....nothing....I'm just shocked that's all"

Aidan:"yeah well it is that"

Me:"so what's up?"

Aidan:"we just be playing that's all"

Me:"playing?...mmh okay"

Aidan:"it's nothing big or different some sort"

Me:"so she's just like your other bitches?"

Aidan:"yeah"

Me:"you have no feelings for her?"

He chuckles

Aidan:"you know I dont have feelings"

Me:"you know someone can change that...I mean you know I never had feelings for any thing"

Aidan:"I mean...I understand your situation...Lisa is a babe dawg she's a beauty..I mean if I met her first I'd probably be the married one right now....she's just so sexy..uhh and that assss.....

I hit the back of his head

Me:"watch it...that's my wife and I will kill you...blood or not"

Aidan(laughs):"I'm just kidding man"

Me:"yeah well your jokes will land you up six foot under"

Aidan:"but she is h....

I twist his arm

Aidan(groaning):"I'm just kidding man chill....I'm sorry"

I let him go

Me:"next time I'll dislocate it"

he laughs

Aidan:"yeah man...I dont think I'll find the Lisa for me...good pure hearted girls like that are hard to find...you really are lucky man"

Me:"I know"

Aidan:"her beauty on the outside is just a bonus cause her inner beauty is so visible....man,you should hold on to that,do anything to not mess this up dude...cause there's not many fish in the sea as they say...

wena

wena

girls out here are hungry man...money and power is all they out for...hey! it's become even worse,woman are becoming the heartbreakers now,no one believes in love anymore....it'sjust a bunch of sad broken girls out there man...and I'm cool being just Aidan,I Dont need no bitch beside me..as you saw...they just come to play then go back home,no time for small talks and cuddles..that shit is outdated"

Me:"wow...that's sad man...I can't believe I was once like this,dude...dont go looking for love man cause you won't find it,you'll just end up trying so hard trying so hard to love someone not knowing that its not even the right person you should be loving...just let it find you man,you just carry on going with the flow..."

Aidan:"how does it feel?"

Me:"what?"

Aidan:"falling in love"

I chuckle...can I even explain this in a way that won't be confusing?

Me:"to be honest...for me...it was scary"

his eyes widen

Aidan:"wait...we gonna need a drink for this one"

he takes the beers I came with, he opens the bottle up for us using his teeth then hands me one then sits

we take sips

Aidan:"scary you say?"

Me:"yeah....I knew I liked Lisa from the very first time I met her..at that time I dont know how I was really feeling for her...but I just felt like I need to help this girl,after helping her,the way she was so happy...her smile and how adorable her face is when she's happy and all jiggly made me want to keep helping her and just do anything for her to keep doing that cute criss she does with her nose when she smiles...what scared me was the fact that I couldn't go a day or even a minute where she never crosses my mind,the way I knew and noticed every little detail about her,the way I started getting concerned about how she feels....damn that was the most confusing part....I used to go out and hook up with hoes from clubs,you know how the game goes,I was a player and I never gave two fucks about how anyone feels about that lifestyle..until Lisa started dating after towards the end of the year of the first year we knew each other,it was first sbu,she introduced me to him and I hated him from get go,for what reason? at that time I wouldn't have told you...then I just wanted to warn him not to break her heart and for some reason I ended up beating the life out of him,almost killed him and he never looked the direction of Lisa again,I was happy about that but when I saw how Lisa felt like it's her fault that he just ignored her like that and how heartbroken she was made me feel guilty...then there was thato...argh I felt the same hatred times ten for him,but he messed things up himself..."

Aidan looks at me with his eye brow up

Me:"okay....I might've asked one of the chicks I knew to hook up with him while Lisa was back home for holidays and I made sure she's there the day Lisa gets back....I know,I was becoming a jerk cause at that time I knew I didn't want any kind of romance with this Lisa,she's too innocent and not the type I fuck with....at least that's what I thought..then I started distancing myself with hoes...next thing I know..all i want to do every weekend is sit in and watch movies with her or just do anything she wanted to do...I couldn't say no to anything she asks for...I couldn't stay mad at her for even five

minutes...I could talk to her the whole day I never ran out of things to say up until today....that's when I realised I might like this girl a bit too much...

Aidan:"a bit?"

Me:"shut up..then came the whole pretending favour she asked from me.....man,the way I took advantage of the whole thing...kissing the lips I always imagine in my head how soft they are..I just took the whole pretending thing as an experiment for myself on how I'd treat her if she was my girl...not knowing I'd loose myself and all control and fall deeply in love with her...to my surprise even though I knew nothing about love but at that time I knew almost immediately that...this shit is love no matter what...this is love...fuck that's when the whole thing became real,got tired of being scared of these feelings cause being scared was only

hurting me...so I had to put my hardcore tough Mr "no love in me" act and take the risk of fully exploring these feelings,it's like they totally took over whatever badboy I thought I was and made me this emotional person who shed tears when she sheds tears..fuck man she made me a cry baby...I dont even want to begin explaining the things that go on inside me when I make love to her...if you think a pussy is same as any other pussy...man,wait until you fuck the girl you love...it's magical..way way different..

Aidan:"damn..."

Me:"so dude...falling in love is something you can't control, but it's up to you to take the risk and give love a chance.....I took a big risk loving Lisa,since I knew the problems ahead of us,she was not in a good space,everything was blur and confusing...but I was willing to fight for her until we are alright"

Aidan:"man....love is just too much hard work"

Me:"not even...bruh when you in love...all the hard work just becomes easy....it's like..stupid example...engineering,you know that shit is a lot of hard work with all the maths equations and physics and shit...but if you love it and understand it..you find it easy and everything just flows...same goes for love"

he sighs as he gulps down his third bottle

Aidan:"so when these feelings start...does it involve the person making your heart feel like it's beating really fast yet slow at the same time"

Quinton:"fuck...that's exactly how it feels...wait....have you felt that?"

He looks away

Me:"shit...Yonela makes you feel that way?"

Aidan:"dont tell a soul"

Me:"the actual fuck man....shit..you for real?"

Aidan:"yeah...but I dont think she feels the same, she's made it clear that its strictly no strings attached and so did I"

Me:"man...you'll have to tell her how you really feel before things get really complicated that y'all end up not being able to be together no matter how y'all both want to be together"

he laughs

Aidan:"you sound like a fucken love guru"

I laugh

Me:"blame Lisa and Kyle"

Aidan:"I dont think I want to take the risk... I'm cool man soon these feelings will disappear"

Me(chuckles):"as long as you still fucking her....forget"
we remain silent sipping on beers
Aidan:"okay...enough with the love talk...let's watch the game"
he puts soccer
Me:"is Clyde not joining us?"
Aidan:"nah..he's sorting out business in Australia"
Me:"what's it about?"
Aidan:"diamonds and drugs"
Me:"import?"
Aidan:"yeap..."
Me:"why I didn't know about this?"
Aidan:"didn't wanna stress you on your honeymoon"
Me:"bulshit..."
we carry on chilling till it was time for me to go
Me:"shit...it's late"
Aidan:"it's only nine thirty"
Me:"the fuck!!...that's way past supper...shit...might sleep on the couch tonight"
he laughs
Aidan:"you better pick up some flowers out there...I have a few sunflowers in my yard"
Me:"fuck you"
I get up and head out

I get home around 22:30 and the lights are off
I lock the door and head upstairs..I slowly open the bedroom door and sneak into the bed,I might be a bit tipsy
I peak over her to see her face..she's cuddling Kyle who is also fast asleep in between her arms...I undress and get in the covers
"good to have you back husband"
shit..she's awake
Me:"oh hey bub...sorry for waking you up"
she sits up and puts Kyle between us
Lisa:"is this the time you promised to be back?"
Me:"No...the game took longer than I expected,and I might've bought a bit too much to drink"
Lisa:"you drunk?"
I smile at her
Me(singing):"drunk in loove"
she chuckles shaking her head
Lisa:"what am I to do with you?"
Me:"love me?"
Lisa:"tried that...but you still an idiot"
I laugh
Me:"guess you stuck with this idiot"
I jump over Kyle and go ontop of her
Me:"let me kiss"
she pouts her lips I peck then suck her bottom lip,we end up making out...I sneak my

hand to my baby girl and she's wet she moans and pulls out

Lisa:"there's something I need to tell you"

Me:"okay...but after this"

I kiss her neck as I massage her boobs

she moans and pushes me

Lisa:"it can't wait"

fuck why is MrB so weak he's already hard as rock....I flip her so that she's ontop of me

Me:"okay fine...what is bothering you my love"

she sighs the criss in between her brows make me worried,it can't be good news

Me:"what's wrong?"

she looks into my eyes...she's nervous I can feel it

Lisa:"I..I..

I rub her arms

Me:"calm down....just tell me what's wrong"

Lisa:"I'm pregnant"

silence

Me:"you....you pregnant?"

she nods.. I look at her for the longest time

Me:"you sure?"

Lisa:"yes"

a smile creeps in my face,something unexplainable is going on with my feelings right now,I can't even begin to explain how happy or whatever this feeling I'm feeling I am

Me:"bub....you mean,we going to have a baby?"

she looks down and nods

I lift her face and give her a heartfelt kiss

I love this woman I really do

I pull out

Me:"baby....we going to have a baby...fuck! I'm over the moon doing the moonwalk right now"

she laughs silently and smiles at me...she's looking at me with pity even though she's tryna hide it,I feel like there's more she wants to tell me but she's resisting

Me:"so what's the matter?"

she shakes her head

Me:"you know you can't lie to me right?"

Lisa:"it's nothing...I'm just overwhelmed"

Me:"of cause you are...we having our first very own child"

she sighs a laugh

Lisa:"yeah"

Me:"so how far along are you"

she looks surprised by my question

Lisa:"uhm isn't it obvious...it's it's just four weeks...that's the only time we started having sex"

she looks at me carefully

Me:"Lisa....what's wrong...what aren't you telling me"

Lisa:"nothing..."

Me:"something is wrong....bub,we need to be open with each other...we've already been

through so much to keep things that will hurt us in the end"
tears escape her eyes unexpectedly she quickly wipes them...I pull her closer to my chest

Me:"talk to me bub"

Lisa:"I'm fine Quinton..."

Me:"who you fooling...Lisakhanya you better start talking woman"

it gets irritating when she does this

she shakes her head

I move her away from me...I take Kyle and go put him in his cot then get back and lock our door

I sit next to her

Me:"talk to me?...is the baby not mine?"

she looks at me shocked filled with a bit of fear I think trying to comprehend

Me:"I'm kidding..jeez...but seriously,what's wrong?"

Lisa:"Quinton...I'm fi.....

Me(agitated):"dont fucken lie to me dammit.....(calmly)...gosh..Lisa...I dont want you bottling your feelings anymore,that's why I married you for us to share our problems"
she sighs

Lisa:"I'm scared Quinton"

we look into each other's eyes

Me:"what are you scared of?"

Lisa:"I can't carry this baby....it won't make it"

I move closer to her

Lisa:"you know I can't carry full term...we just waiting for a dying baby"

I embrace her

she breaks down

Lisa:"what are we going to do?"

I dont know bub....for the first time I feel so useless

Me:"we'll go through it together"

damn...I've been so caught up in our love bubble ..I totally forgot about her disability to have children

Lisa:"we will never make it through this one.. ..ever"

I hold her even tighter as I feel my heart is being stabbed by a thousand daggers
when will this ever end....I just want us to be happy...obviously that's just too much to ask

Me:"we'll be okay bub...you'll see we'll survive"

here i am trying to convince her yet I'm not even convinced

I have to be strong,for the both of us...I can't breakdown,I have to be a man...a husband and a father...even though I'm hurting but as always...I'm not aloud to express my pain...I have to be the strong one

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 7

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

His eyes are swollen,he looks sad and uneasy even though he's sleeping, I can see the hurt,no matter how hard he tries to hide it,I sense his heart

He must have cried while I was sleeping because while I was breaking down he just held me and told me everything was going to be ok over and over again...why do bad things follow me wherever I go, despite everything we've been through and everything this man has put me through,I still chose happiness,and the happiness I knew was spending the rest of my life with him, he's my happiness,but I'm just the one who carries bad luck to always ruin a good thing going. When the test results came back I couldn't believe my eyes,my first dissapointment was finding out I'm pregnant, immediately I had a vision of me losing this baby,but what scared me even more was how far along am I, it's quite impossible that this could be Quinton's child,I'm two months and two weeks pregnant,which means I got pregnant a week before Quinton and I got back together, I was still with Troy,there was one night during April where we got very drunk,I woke up in his bed naked the next day,shit! I didn't even bother to check if we used protection since I stopped taking the shot,on No, I'm with child for Troy.

I don't know how am I going to break the news to him,No! This will just break us beyond repair, I should just keep it to myself,no one can ever know about this,No one!..

I can't loose Quinton,not when we've come this far,this is one I'm taking to the grave...I hate to have to start our marriage on secrets and lies, but I'd be damned if I allow anything to come between us again.

"I know I'm adorable,but girl, you just being rude"

He slowly opens his eyes

Me:"I can't help it, you so ugly when asleep"

He raises his brows before he chuckles

Quinton:"I guess my ugliness charms you"

Me:"it does babe,Umbi in a charming way"

Quinton:"love you too my ugly duckling"

I laugh

Me:"mxm, at least the ugly duckling once changed into a beautiful swan"

Quinton:"can't wait for the day you transform...what's taking you so long anyway? It's been years since you've been stuck in the ugly duckling form"

I gasp and hit his chest

Me:"guess I haven't met the right prince charming for my transformation to take place"

Quinton:"is that so?"

Me:"mhm"
Quinton:"take that back Lisa"
I shake my head
He gets up and sits up I do the same
Quinton:"you better take it back if you know what's good for you"
Me:"the good truth hurts love bug...but hey..it is what it is...
His hands are running all over my body tickling my bones
I'm letting out voluntery screams and laughs.
Me(laughing):"stop....stop it Q I won't do it again stop stop stop please my tummy is sore!"
Quinton:"take it back"
Me(laughing):"ok ok take it back I take it back I take it back stop!"
He stops
Me:"now you take back calling me ugly duckling"
He laughs
Quinton:"don't talk talk to me talk to your prince charming"
Me:"Quinton... I won't tickle you I'll give you a purple eye of you don't take that back"
He shivers sarcastically
Quinton:"uuhhh I'm so scared"
I get on top of him and start biting him all over his face and body,in a ticklish way though
He's laughing like a five year old girl
Quinton:"ok ok I take it back ok stop stop stop Lisa Lisa stop I take it back ok ok there there you have it I took it back Stop biting me woman!"
Im biting his tummy he can't stop laughing..I stop when I see that his laugh has become silent and only tears are coming out
Me:"that'll teach you not to mess with me"
Quinton (laughing):"yes ma'am!"
He says quickly running to the bathroom leaving me in stitches
"Baby come join me!!"
I don't waste no more time,I strip naked and head to the tub, we put alot of foam for lots of bubbles as usual
Quinton:"why did you put this strawberry one... I wanted the apple one"
Me:"strawberries are nicer"
Quinton:"they girly"
Me:"well I'm a girl"
Quinton:"but I'm not"
Me(smirks):"are you sure about that"
Quinton:"want me to show you my cane to prove it?"
Me:"don't mind if you do"
He gets on his knees and shows Mr B
Quinton:"now since you a say I'm a girl let's see your dick? Since girls now have dicks"
I get up and place my hand on miss M then point my finger up pretending to have a dick,he's in stitches
Me:"there's my little buddy"
Quinton:"bub...it's getting wierd... please stop"
I burst into laughter and sit down,we bath each other while making a mess all over the floor...it's all his fault he keeps splashing me with water...after we cleaned the bathroom up we got dressed

Me:"so where you taking me?"

We now on the road driving

Quinton:"Sun city"

Me:"yeyi!! We've only went there once"

Quinton:"and that's not good, places like that should be our usually hanging out spots"

Me:"why do you have to be so sweet"

Quinton:"one of us has to be the sweet one"

Me:"are you saying I'm bitter"

Quinton:"don't be putting words in my mouth"

Me:"that's what you meant"

Quinton:"bub...what I meant was I'm the sweet one but you are delicious mouthwatering one"

I can't help but blush at his stupid cocky words

Me:"don't be cocky with me"

He smirks as he takes my hand and kisses it

Quinton:"today we will have as much fun as we can,since you almost opening school in two days time"

Me:"Argh you have to remind me"

Quinton:"you almost done though babe just one more year and a few months"

Me:"still fills like a life time"

He chuckles we get to Sun city and just run all over the place playing on every ride there ever was,this all just reminded me of back when we were still friends but only this time we even happier cause we can kiss and hold each other rather than imagining it

Quinton:"and now for the ride we've been waiting for...."

Me:"I present to you...."

Q& I:"THE ROLLER COASTER!!"

We laugh and head to the roller coaster we get in our seats

Quinton has always been afraid of this ride when we first came here we didn't go in it but in Dubai I made him go in it since he did say we are not leaving Dubai with our fears.

I hold his hand

Me:"are you ready"

He looks at me

Quinton:"I'm ready...but can I have my bravery kiss?"

I lean towards his face and we share a kiss

I pull out as I hear the machines start

Quinton:"let's do this!"

Me(shouts):"Yeah!"

The ride starts off slowly then increases as it goes down, everyone is screaming at the top of their lungs, I look at Quinton and he's got his hands up enjoying the ride he's not afraid, he's enjoying the ride,he looks so happy and freehe looks my way and catches me staring he mouths "I love you"

Me(shouting):"I LOVE YOU MORE!!"

He looks at me confused

Quinton (shouting):"I SAID ELEPHANT SHOE"

I laugh and shake my head he likes doing that trick on me ever since I've done it to him, when you mouth elephant shoe, to the other person it will look like you saying I love you

The ride stops and we get out

Quinton:"I'm glad I conquered that fear babe"

Me:"you see...I told you it will be worth it"

Quinton:"I'm glad I conquered my fears with you by my side"

Me:"same goes for me... I love you"

I give him a long peck

Quinton:" elephant shoe too"

I laugh

Me:"stupidiot"

We drive to... I don't know we just driving

Me:"where we going now?"

Quinton:"when last have we been to the club babe"

Me:"yoh it's been ages"

Quinton:"we still young, we should go places like this once or twice in a while"

Me:"but we have Kyle"

Quinton:"and where is he now?"

Me:"home"

Quinton:"with?"

Me:"Candra"

Quinton:"exactly so what's stopping us now?"

Me:"nothing"

Quinton:"you see...babies are not the end of your youth,or life,we can still have fun even if we have ten kids"

Me:"nankoke nokugeza kwakhe(there goes his craziness)"

He laughs

Quinton:"you just wait and see, ten kids will be convinced by this mammie"

He rubs my tummy,my heart clenches painfully

Quinton:"bub,this baby will make it,I can feel it....and it'll be a boy"

A smile creeps in my face

Me:"boy?... you so sure"

Quinton:"I was serious about that soccer team"

Me:"so no girls allowed in your team?"

Quinton:"eish....they are, but they can come at least after the first five boys then comes the five girls"

Me:"so they must be younger?"

Quinton:"yeah so that the boys will protect my little princesses"

I blush as I imagine our home full of children laughing and crying making a mess all over the place

Me:"ten kids huh?"

He nods proudly

Quinton:"oh yeeaaaah"

We reach the club, we dance and have the time of our livea, of cause I don't drink now...bummer

Quinton is drinking and he's getting drunk

We now chilling in the VIP booth

Me:"that's your last glass babe.... you drunk enough now"

He laughs

Quinton:"I'm not drunk"

His eyes are small, he's drunk,we should leave cause I know he misbehaves when he gets

drunk in public places,he talks too much and he's naughty he would insist we make love right on this couch in front of everyone,lol,crazy I know,that's why we should leave while it's still early

Me:"let's go now love bug"

Quinton:"okay,let's just dance one last time"

Me:"yoh I'm tired...my feet are killing me....you go"

Quinton:"you sure?"

Me:"yeah...just behave yourself"

He kisses me burying my mouth inside his.. he kisses weirdly when he's drunk,but I like it.

He leaves me and goes not so far from where I'm sitting and starts dancing, mmmh my baby can dance y'all,and they playing these R&B jams...he's dancing so smoothly and sexily,kinda turning me on he keeps looking my way as he's dancing for me

I can't stop blushing an and biting my lips,gosh I swear this man gets sexier everyday!

My smile disappears as a young girl starts shaking her ass all up at him...he notices her then stops dancing, she tries seducing him with dance moves but he just walks away and comes back to me, the smile comes back again,I won't say I'm not surprised,this is a whole different drunk Quinton... turning off a girl like that,a girl with a pussy? Thank you Lord for blessing me with this matured man

I hug him as soon as he takes a seat about to open his mouth and probably tell me what happened

Me:"love bug"

Quinton:"can you believe that bitch?"

Me:"I saw...she just ruined my show"

Quinton:"now we can go home bub, I've had enough"

Me:"let's go love"

We get up and walk

I drive us back home, Quinton has been singing the whole way and asking me very dumb questions

We get home and it's now 23:30pm

We check up on Kyle and candra they are fast asleep in the guest room,we kiss him goodnight, Quinton wanted to wake him up but I stopped him, he says he misses him, like hell...he won't be able to put him back to sleep when he's all done playing and missing him and I'll be the one who gets the hard work ...never!

We head to bed with him sulking

After freshening up we get inside the covers and cuddle ...

Quinton:"Liss"

Me:"Q"

Quinton:"we really having a baby?"

Me:...

Quinton:"our own first born"

Me:...

Quinton:"I'm supper excited, we've always talked about this,now it's finally happening....just because I'm happy we having our very own child doesn't mean I'll love Kyle any less, I'm just excited about your pregnancy... I promise I'll make it the best first pregnancy you've ever had"

Me:"you mean I've never had"

Quinton (chuckles):"never thought I'd ever be excited about making babies but..."

Me:"here you are, asking for a soccer team"

He pulls me closer to him my one leg gets between his as our bodies join leaving no space for

even an ant to pass

Quinton:"can't help it... I love making love to you so much"

I laugh, he's hard already, I want him just as bad though, his eyes are hardly open,he also smokes weed, so he's high and drunk but the alcohol is overpowered by weed in his case, he only smokes weed when he drinks and gets drunk otherwise he's more of a cigarette guy

Quinton:"Lisa

Me: Quinton"

Quinton:"Liss"

Me:"Q"

Quinton:"bub"

Me:"love bug"

We laugh a little

Quinton:"Why is it that when you're driving and looking for an address, you turn down the volume on the radio?"

There goes the stupid questions again...oh God,this will be a long night

Me:"I don't know,to give you concentration maybe?"

Quinton:"mmmh"

Quinton:"babe..mawubhoshha..... Why do they call it taking a dump? Shouldn't it be leaving a dump?"

I burst into laughter

Me:"you have a point there"

Quinton:"Why can't women put on mascara with their mouth closed?"

I think about it and laugh as it's quite true

Me:"I don't know Quinton"

Quinton:"Why is it that people say they "slept like a baby" when babies wake up like every two hours?"

Me:"good question"

We laugh as we both think about Kyle who always wakes us up in the middle of the night

Quinton :If the president were gay, would his husband be the first man?"

I'm in stitches

Me:"ayi sleep now love"

Quinton:"okay last question"

Me:"then we sleep"

Quinton:"yeah.."

Me:"okay"

Quinton:" Why does your gynecologist leave the room when you undress?"

Me:"go asked them"

Quinton:"like seriously they still going to see your pussy so why are they giving you privacy to undress?"

Me (laughing):"you crazy babe...weed does you bad"

Quinton:"gynecologists are the crazy ones here"

He says getting on top of me

Me:"you said we'll sleep after that question"

Quinton:"I need permission to shag my wife now?"

My pussy reacts totally going against my sleepy mind

Me:"No baby"

He devours my lips

Quinton:"I'm gonna sex you till you can't feel your legs"

He says sliding my panty down,my punani clenches throbbing wet for him

My breathing has changed and his kisses down my neck are causing heavy shivers down my spine

He places Mr B on top of Miss M without thrusting in he pressed his whole body against mine and starts sliding up and down, holding me tightly, I hug his body tightly too, it's like our bodies are one, I literally feel my blood moving through every part of my body

Me(desperately):"put it in love bug"

He adjusts himself then slowly thrusts inside me

"Mmmmhh"

We moan at the same time

I'm woken up by my phone ringing loudly

Quinton:"yoh....make it stop please"

He goes under the pillows,untangles his legs from mine and turns his back on me

I search for my phone with my hands while my eyes are closed, I find it on the table,I answer and put it on my ear then keep my eyes closed as I wait for the person to speak

"Hello?"

Me:"mmh"

It's Troy

"Lisa? Are you still asleep?"

Me:"mhm"

"Well I hope you make it in time cause you starting work at nine o'clock sharp,you have to be there"

Me:"what!?"

I sit up quickly

"Yep...you have half an hour to get ready,don't be late"

Me:"No no no ,please make it ten please"

Me:"hello?...hello?...damn!"

I totally forgot about the part time job Troy offered me...well I didn't forget about it but I forgot it started today...Shit!

I quickly take a quick shower and get ready, Quinton wakes up while I'm getting dressed

Quinton:"where you off to?"

Me:"work!"

He looks at me confused with his pouted mouth and sleepy face

Me:"the part time at Troy's firm.. remember I told you?"

Quinton:"it starts now?"

Me:"yeap... totally forgot.."

I grab the car keys

Me:"I have to run...bye"

I get by the door then turn back I give my husband a slow passionate kiss,no matter how late I can be I can't leave without giving him his kiss,and it's never quick

Me:"love you"

Quinton:"love you too"

We stare into each other's eyes as if I got all the time in the world I admire his eyes as always, I wipe lipstick off his lips

Me:"gotta run...bye"

I run out

"You taking the car!!?"

I ignore him

I drive like a maniac to the city, I park in front of this huge glass tall building, my car is the only odd one out as other men and women are coming out of fancy black cars...damn, feels like I'm in a movie, I lock the car and head inside, looks like my outfit is also very odd, I'm wearing jeans and a red shirt and running takkies, my hair is in a messy ponytail...shit I look like a hobo compared to all these ladies staring at me, the ride on the lift is the worst, I didn't even put perfume, there's this one woman who is dressed very smart, she's carrying her briefcase, well everyone in this lift has one and they all in black suits, so you can imagine how off I am here...this specific woman catches my eye, she looks so classy looking straight forward standing straight up as if she never bends...her long black elegant coat covering her outfit and black pencil heels, with long straight hair tied in a neat ponytail but it looks like it's too tight, damn...I'm so small right now, these are all people of class, the lift opens and they all walk out except this woman and I, Troy asked me to get off at floor eight and this was floor five, the lift closes and it takes its time getting to each floor

Me:"hi"

I greet her, since it's only the two of us I feel like it's a good thing to do

She looks at me as I'm right beside her, she looks at me head to toe then looks back at the lift door in front of her

Ouch

Me:"oukee doukee"

"Are you the new cleaner for floor eight?"

I look at her and she's not even looking at me

Me:"Uhm...no... I don't think so"

She ignored me once again as if she didn't even hear me... yoohh

The lift opens she walks out first, wow her walk is so confident, she walks like a boss.. I get out and look around people are looking at me with pity like what the hell? I spot the reception and walk towards it I see that classy woman taking something from the receptionist then walks away, I get there

Me:"hi"

She's busy on her computer, I raise my voice a bit

Me:"hey"

She looks up at me irritated

Her:"my garbage is still empty, thanks...but I could use a cup of coffee"

Heee ayibo do I really look like a maid or something?

Me:"I'm not a helper"

She ignores me...what's up with these people ignoring me anyway

Me:"hello?"

She carries on looking at her papers and tapping her keyboard

Her:"look young lady we've already given out scholarships...try again next year"

Oh wow, so people just guess who you are here?

Me:"I'm actually here for Mr Mullur....he hired me, I'm supposed to meet him in his office? If you could please kindly show me the way I'd appreciate it"

She looks up at me

Her:"you are Miss Mthethwa?"

Me:"that would Mrs O'Brien now"

Her eyes widen

Her:"O'Brien...you the young lady who has recently joined the family.....I mean...Uhm..(clears her throat)...let me show you to his office" she goes around and comes towards me then leads the way,she leaves me by the glass door incrypted Mr Mullur, everything here is glass

Her:"I'll leave you to it"

She head back to her fancy desk..I first watch him,he's too occupied in his papers to notice me I clear my throat as I stand infront of his table he looks up at me

Me:"morning"

He looks at me up and down slowly with a little smirk on his face as if he wants to laugh

Troy:"and then?"

He says pointing at my outfit

Me:I know...let's just get this day started so it can end already"

He chuckles

Troy:"take a seat"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 8

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-
-

Troy shows me around the whole building,which took us almost the whole day introducing me to my colleagues.. I know right, I have colleagues now,I've always dreamed of this day, although I've always imagined all this in America, God decided on bring my American dream to me.

Well after the whole induction phase and placement I was sent home, I didn't do much of work,thank Goodness now I have time to go do a bit of shopping. I need to get something that scream uhmm what can I say? "I'M NOT A GENEDER" yeah that's about it,I mean come on, people have been asking me for coffee instead of greeting me...like what the actual F!

Forgive me Lord for the language but those people are about to drive me nuts. Can't wait to get home where I can wear plastic and no one will be judging me...who am I kidding,if I'd wear plastic Quinton would make me a laughing stock,that guy never gets tired of making fun of me..but I like it,I love it when he's being childish,but I also love love it when he's all manly and

throwing commands.

I also miss my chittery Kylie,now that's one person who wouldn't mind what I'm dressed like... I just hope he doesn't pick up he's daddy's tendencies as he grows,yoh then I'd have idiots times two...damn .

I pull up in the drive way.

I notice my baby standing against the door frame waiting for me.

I get off the car and rush to him,he rushes towards me too, we end up running towards each other he picks me up and spins me around as soon as I reach him, he throws me up a bit like a little baby I scream cause I thought he was going to drop me, he puts me down after one hella seductive kiss and sighs heavily

Quinton:"damn you getting heavier by the minute"

I gasp

Me:"oh wow...is that you calling me fat?"

He raises his hands on surrender and walks away

Me:"Quinton!! Boy!! You better get here and explain yourself"

He laughs as he gets inside the house

I follow him inside

Me:"I can't believe you! You just said I'm fat"

I find him on the couch watching my wife and kids,we love that show,it's one of our favourite

Quinton:"don't be putting words in my mouth now"

Me:"you said I'm heavy...that means heavyweight...which means fat"

Quinton:"you see now that's your fault for learning meanings of every word in the vocabulary"

I feel tears prickle

Me:"you just called me fat and you not even apologetic about it,now you criticising my knowledge.... you know how it felt all day at work being judged by people who don't even know me, already making out in their minds who I am then I come home to be called fat by my own husband"

Tears finally break loose... I don't know why I'm being all emotional about this now,I was totally cool at work I didn't even mind them..now I'm being a baby cause Quinton called me fat ?

Quinton:"no..no.. baby ... you not really crying.....are you?"

I sit next to him

Me:"no.. something got in my eye"

He sighs relived

Quinton:"phew, I thought..."

I give him a dead glare

Quinton:"oh shit, you were being sarcastic"

He moves closer to me and his manly strong shoulders touch me,my pussy clenches,great now I'm feeling horny?

Quinton:"bub.. I'm sorry,I didn't mean to say you fat... you not fat at all...but babe, you know that there's a little human growing in you, you will have to get a bit bigger...okay maybe alot bigger,cause my baby needs as much room as he can get, so bub, you can't avoid gaining weight...but my love,just know that you are beautiful, your beauty won't go anywhere"

I look up at him and smile

Me:"really?"

Quinton:"psshh giirrl"

I giggle

Quinton:"whoever those people think they are for judging you,don't mind them, cause as you

always tell me,those who are quick to judge others will be the first to be judged by the Lord"
I can't believe he listens when I preach about God

Quinton:"yes,I listen"

Will he ever stop reading my mind,like seriously

Quinton:"I won't stop"

Me:"stop it"

Quinton:"you feeling better now"

No

Me:"yes"

Quinton:"good...now I was in the middle of a show here...if you don't mind"

He throws his feet on the coffee table and sits back totally dismissing me

Just like that!

I look at him in disbelief

He throws his eyes back at me

Quinton:"anything else?"

Yes, I need your arms around me caressing my needing body

Me:"you've become so good with sweet words you now just use them to dismiss me"

He laughs

Quinton:"but bub...come on, it's my wife and kids...look now I missed what stupid thing junior said"

I burst into laughter..

Me:"babe..what if Kyle turns out like junior?"

We crack up and laugh

Quinton:"oh hell no..I ain't having non of that stupidity in my house"

Me(laughing):"that boy is dumb!"

Quinton:"and he can play dumb..like you'd swear that he really doesn't know shit with his straight face he keeps"

We laugh so hard we even high five

Me(laughing):"I can't deal"

Quinton:"but I'd be a dad like Michel don't you think?"

Me:"No babe,you'd be worse than him! You too mean"

Quinton:"good...oh boi am I going to have fun creating punishments for those little rascals"

Me:"see what I mean"

I laugh pointing at him

Me:"mxm ayi! Where's my prince anyway, I miss him"

I get up

Quinton:"and just like that I'm dismissed?"

Me (winks):"dose of your own medicine"

Quinton:"mxxxm hamba"

I laugh and leave him there as I go upstairs to my nooch mooch's room

Don't ask me what is that,when you a mother you will understand that these nicknames just pop up out of nowhere

I get there in his room and he's awake just starring up at his toys hanging above his head

I look over him in his cot

Baby talk mode now anabled!

Me:"there's my little cuddle muffins..there you are looking all cutie patootie boo boo bear.."

I pick him up

Me:"yes you are... you my boo boo bear..my doodle poodle cuddly muffins..yes you are, yes you are nana"

He's giggling non stop

Me:"who's mommy's favorite boy in the whole wild world!?"

"I am!"

I turn to be met by a jealous Quinton

Me:"no I was actually going to say Kyle"

He wraps his arms around me from behind

Quinton:"but I'm your first favourite right"

Me:"yeeeeeah....that changed,the moment I laid my eyes on cuddle muffins"

He gasps

Quinton:"oh wow.. I thought I came to get me some loving, obviously I'm not needed here"

He leaves with his head bowed down

I look at Kyle and he looks at me too

Me:"we made dada sad?"

Kyle:"aahh brrrb bgbhffdgdmamadhbs"

Me:"yeah you right he'll get over it's

I gasp

Me:"oh no Kyle,how can you even say that...we should go give him some love too"

Kyle:"hsdgd hhhfb vsvnbhbbhrrb"

Me:"No Kyle.. you need to share some love with daddy...come we going to him now"

Kyle:"gugyfygkfhshdadadada"

Me:"yes... I love both of y'all, you and dada"

This child I swear his first words will be daddy, there's alot of dada in his baby language

Believe it or not I understand Kyle...lol atleast that's what I think

Me:"and besides I need him to take me shopping....so let's go apologise and give him love so he can take mommy shopping right?"

Kyle:"udsjsgfsjfg du jsikshs hgidyagsk"

Me:"that's more like it...uuhhh Kyle you so sly, now that I've mentioned shopping you wanna share love with daddy"

I laugh at him when he giggles,I swear we understand each other, I mean come on he laughs at the humour..

We head downstairs and he is watching TV

We stand infront of him with me carrying Kyle of cause

Quinton:"leave me alone"

Me:"we love you daddy"

Quinton:"mxm,I'm trying to watch TV"

Me:"first forgive us"

Quinton:"No... y'all broke my heart...I'll go find another family"

Kyle giggles I look at him and hold in my laughter

Me(whispers):"not the time Kyle..be nice"

I go sit on his lap then place Kyle on mine

Me:"love bug.... I'm sorry, I didn't mean what I said....you my first favourite and when I laid my eyes on cuddle muffins,he became my second first favourite"

Quinton:"second first favourite?"

Me:"just go with it"

He chuckles

Me:"we love you babe, please don't look for another family....we need you, without you we nothing...we just LK...that doesn't sound right"

I place Kyle's face against mine then I make a baby face

He grins

Quinton:"now how do I stay mad at that?"

He pulls us closer,he pecks Kyle's lips,then gives me another one of those lustful kisses,I pull out when I hear Kyle giggle,like what the hell,this child is naughty

Quinton:"I hope you taking notes boy"

Me:"for who?for why? Ayibo"

He laughs at me

Me:"sooooo....love bug?"

Quinton:"oh boi..."

Me:"ayibo what?"

Quinton:"that so was too long for my liking"

I laugh

Me:"I need to go do a bit of shopping"

Quinton:"okay...so where do I fit in?"

Me:"please come with me"

Quinton:"No"

Me:"mxm..yeka I'll go myself"

Quinton:"cool...just leave my car keys,I'll need the car"

Me"fine!... I don't need you anyway"

I should get off him but I can't bring myself to

Me:"just give me your black card and I'll go"

He laughs

Quinton:"you ask for me, I say no,you ask for my car, I say no,now you want my card...kahle kahle what do you want love"

Me:"what happened to what's mine is yours, and you should treat your wife like an egg and in marriage nothing will be me me me or mine mine, there's two of us now... everything is us us and ours..... you forgot the pastor's words in counseling already?"

Quinton:"yoh... emotional blackmail at its best..... let's go get some of that shopping done shall we"

I laugh out loud

Me:"Yaaas!!"

Kyle also giggles while biting on my shirt,great Imma have to change because its full of his drool and white milk vomit

We all go freshen up and change into fresh clothes

In no time we already at the mall shopping around I'm dragging them in and out almost every shop with Quinton pushing Kyle's pram, there's mostly boutiques here very very expensive ones and I've only bought one dress and pants and already I've spent more than a thousand....

Me:"my love...maybe we should go look somewhere cheaper,this place will leave us homeless"

Quinton:"are you kidding me....do you know how excited I am that you finally using the money I work hard for to spoil you,but you never use it cause you keep preaching about saving blah blah blah like some old woman...bub please sweery feel free...don't even look at the price tags,if you like it it's yours"

Me:"oh wow...all this time I think you actually like the fact that I don't go blowing your money off kanti you actually want me to do the opposite?"

Quinton:"I'm glad we finally on the same page...look babe I'm very glad about the fact that you don't love me for the money and all the flashy things I can provide... I know and recognize that,but baby, spoiling my lover once or twice or even thrice a while wouldn't hurt"

Me:"if that's how you feel then fine...let's spend this moola baby"

Quinton:"that's what I'm talking about"

Me:"gold digging mode anabled!! Let's leave this man bankrupt!"

Quinton:"whoa wait who said anything about.....

I run off before he finishes

Quinton:"Hey!! Don't you go too wild now!! Don't leave me bankrupt woman!!"

He shouts as I make my way in a boutique that sells designer business clothes for woman, wow, it's like walking into a dream...if I'm going into places like this now....what the hell am I going to be wearing when I'm making my own money and successful? I'll probably have my own personal designer..lol.. I can just imagine, but naahh I ain't like that if I like something from Mr price, who the hell going to stop me from buying it?

Just cause I can afford doesn't mean I can't or am not allowed to buy cheap things, being rich is not about buying expensive things only it's about being able to buy whatever the hell you like and not worry about the price cause you can afford it either way...like just cause I'm wearing Adidas doesn't mean I can't afford vasace or Gucci I just happened to like Adidas.. you feel me? "There she is"

I look at them coming my way,they finally caught up, I'm like everywhere

Quinton (breathing heavily):"don't.... don't... leave....me... bankrupt please"

He says trying to catch his breath

I burst into laughter

Me:"really dude?...I won't do that"

He sighs Kyle is laughing looks like he was enjoying the fast ride

Quinton:"oh thank Goodness"

Me:"I'll leave you in Dept and homeless"

He looks at me shocked

Me:"don't look at me like that.....you made me turn on the gold digging hoe in me....so babe... meet, Miss Prada Diva"

I stretch out my hand for a handshake

He looks at me on disbelief

"Mwahahahaha"

I do an evil laugh and giggle as I walk away from them and carry on with my shopping

I just love making him sweat,wait until he makes love with Miss Prada Diva tonight, I'll make sure he never forgets her.....mwahahahaha

HAPPILY EVER AFTER??

S2

Insert 9

-
-
-
-
-

💎 LISA 💎

-
-
-
-

We get home and I'm exhausted, who knew shop till you drop was actually a true saying... immediately after putting Kyle to bed who fell asleep on the ride back home, I throw myself on the bed, I'm too tired for anything, Quinton throws himself right next to me.

Me: "damn I'm tired"

Quinton: "yoh bub... Miss Prada Diva is too much, ayi... I couldn't keep up"

I laugh as I lazily take off my clothes while lying down

Me: "and I have work tomorrow then school the next day...(groans).. aarrgh can't a girl get a break"

Quinton: "you gonna have to let Troy know you pregnant so you don't get yourself in trouble"

My heart skips a beat in fear

Me (sighs): "you right I'll tell him"

Quinton: "yeah, he should be aware so that he doesn't overwork you"

I crawl up to get inside the covers he spansks my ass my pussy reacts... okay that was weak of me, like really, why am I so horny? The little things he does turn me on... like in the car he said, can't wait till we get home, my mind just created so many pictures and it turned me on ... am I going crazy?

He tucks himself in next to me we face each other and just stare at each other without saying anything

Quinton (whispers): "you beautiful"

My pussy clenches

Quinton (whispering): "I love you bub"

I just smile

Quinton (whispering): "you look wierd now"

Me (whispers): " how?"

Quinton: "you look like you sleepy"

Me: "I want you"

He frowns a bit

Me: "I need you Q"

He smirks

Quinton: "oh?"

Me: "touch me"

He caresses my body

Me: "so tell me love"

He pulls me closer

Quinton: "yeah?"

Me: "do you want to fuck your Lisa tonight or be fucked by Miss Prada Diva"

His eyes widen then makes a thinking face

Quinton:"let's see what the Diva has in store for me"

I smirks as I get on top of him

Gold digger enabled once again

Me:"get ready to be fucked like never before!"

Quinton:"uuhhh okay!"

I make love to his lips first while grinding on his already hard dick I leave his succulent lips and bury my face in his neck leaving hickeys as I move down his chest my hand reaches for Mr B.. I massage him as I go back up to his lips

Quinton:"baby..let's get started already"

I laugh a bit

Me:"desperate much"

I touch his balls

Quinton (breathless):"very much"

I go down on him and pull off his briefs and Big man springs up, my heart skips a beat with joy as I hold him in my hands I lick my dry lips, I lick his tip ,ohh Gosh it's so good, I lick it all over while rubbing it up and down, I finally put it in my mouth then slowly slide it down my throat,his groans are the ones motivating me to take him deeper,but he's too big I've never mastered taking him all in...but maybe the Diva can.. I push him further,I keep gagging but I'm almost there

"Fuck!! Baby!!...aahh shit!"

I did it!! I gag choking so I pull out and his soaking wet with my saliva and his cum.. I didn't even feel him cum in my mouth,I rub his wet dick and suck on his soft balls,they feel nice in my mouth... I move up and go sit on his face and let him feast on me, I loose my mind as his tongue is just working my clit making my every body part shiver in excitement even my insides

"Oohh mmmm..that's it, right there baaaby!"

I climax in his mouth,he licks me

Quinton:"mmmmh"

I go sit on Mr B and Miss M welcomes him home , I ride his like my life depends on it.

I don't know how many positions I've fucked him with,but my whole body is wet, I think I might've over fucked him he's moaning and groaning and cursing like crazy,if we had guests they'd hear us all the way from downstairs, luckily we don't. I'm now facing his legs with my back turned on him he keeps spanking my ass as I drive him up and down,he sits up while he's still inside me,I lay my back on him, he kisses my neck while massaging my boobs, I've now decreased my pace on his dick as we enjoy the chemistry going on with our bodies touching like this...his warm breath fans my ear as he bites my earlobe seductively

Quinton (whispers):"your pussy is intoxicating"

It clenches tightly around his dick after those words

He whispers "fuuuck"

I go on my knees

"Fuck me daddy!"

He does as I command.

We fuck the whole night,I don't know how many orgasms we have each other but it was multiple.

Quinton has always been the more dominant one when we have crazy sex but tonight I don't know what the hell got into me... I made him scream my name louder than ever before,his groans over powered my moans for the first time.

There's always something new when we fuck and booi do I love it!!

I'm woken up by a wet tingling sensation in my pussy, which gets me excited immediately, I hold on tightly on the bed sheets not knowing what to do with my legs

"Uuhhh yes daddy"

His tongue makes it way in, my body tenses as my tummy is sucked in and my back arches, the juices finally release as my body relaxes enjoying my morning climax.

He comes up to me while on top and makes me taste myself on his lips as he gives me a lustful kiss

He pulls out and rests his forehead on mine and stares deep in my eyes

Quinton (whispers):"You don't even mean to torment me, do you?"

I giggle

Me:"I'm not done with you"

I flip us over and I'm ontop I move my head towards his he's ready to kiss me when I just slide him in without warning

"Shhhit!" He groans

I ride him till I can't even feel my own legs.

We moan out loud as we climax at the same time

Quinton (shouts):"Damn you Miss Prada!!!"

I collapse ontop of him then roll to sleep next to him

Me:"so did you enjoy the Diva?"

He looks at me with his brows raised

Quinton:"are you kidding me! She's one hella sex freak that woman...baby... I literally can't feel my legs,and my dick hurts so much cause it's been hard all night even now it still hasn't slept..I feel like my veins will explode"

I laugh as I remove the sheet to look Mr B and he's hard as rock pointed South I can see the veins

Me:"damn babe..it's painful?"

Quinton:"yeah ...it is"

Me:"let your Lisa make it better"

Quinton:"if you talking about sucking me..bub, you'll only make it worse"

I laugh as I get up I stand then quickly sit down on the bed

Quinton:"what's wrong?"

I try standing again but I just sit back down

Quinton:"are you okay?"

Me:"I can't feel my legs"

He laughs at me

Quinton:"hahaaa and my Lilly is back...enjoy your freaky Prada Diva's doings"

Me:"not funny Quinton... I have to get ready for work..now how will I do that if I can't feel my legs"

Quinton:"since I love you so damn much,I'll help you with that"

He gets up and comes around to my side,he picks me up and we head to the bathroom he places me on the closed toilet seat as he runs water on the tub for me,it's funny watching him cause of his dick, it's so straight up

Quinton:"it's not funny bub..your diva is evil... pure evil I tell you"

Me(laughing):"yet you didn't want her to stop"

He smirks

Quinton:"couldn't help it..the things she made me feel were unexplainable"

Me:"mmh is it"

I bite lip

Quinton:"I don't think I'll ever forget last night babe"

Me:"that was the plan"

He looks at me with a stupid grin

Quinton:"you sly woman"

He picks me up and places me in the tub

Quinton:"get washing"

I frown

Me:"aren't you going to join me?"

Quinton:"naahh we'll end up doing things that'll make you late again... you don't want to be known for late coming on your first and second day"

Me:"aaww.. I can't feel my hands"

I smirk as he gives me the 'really now' look

Quinton:"It's actually unfair, how fucking sexy you are"

I blush

He comes back to me and baths me

Me:"please wash and do my hair"

Believe it or not but Quinton can do a girl's hair like no body's business, but that's one of the secrets he doesn't want me to tell anyone, so shhhh... I only found out during our honeymoon when he was playing with my hair and ended up plaiting it so well and neatly... for a gangster he has some pretty cute talents

Quinton:"ahh I knew I shouldn't have let you know about that"

Me:"pleeaaase I wanna look good today... just any simple nice hairstyle, please baby"

Quinton:"fine...but this is the last time, ever"

Me:"thanks hubby"

I giggle as he continues bathing me tickling me here and there, he wipes me and wraps me with a towel then carries me like a little baby and places me on the bed, he lotions me too then dresses me in my panty and bra, he irons my clothes while I do a bit of make-up on my face, just some bit of powder, eyeliner and mascara and maroon lipstick he does my hair perfectly in a cute neat up straight bun with a bit of hair loose on the sides and he brushes my baby hair to sleep then moisturised it so that it stays down, he comes back with my clothes and helps me put it on, he zips it up at the back slowly careful not to pinch me as it's hugging every part of me and it shows just a bit of chest, shoulders and a lil cleavage, it's knee length and it's black, he helps me wear my naked heels, they black and medium long, he helps me stand as he finishes putting them on, he looks at me up and down on admiration then stops as he reaches my eyes

Quinton:"you look sexy"

I smile

Quinton:"a bit too sexy...take this off you going back with jeans again"

I laugh

Me:"haaa! Never!...you crazy"

He chuckles

Quinton:"but really bub... you look like a million dollar, you'll be turning heads this time... you look like you the owner of that building"

Me:"is it too much?"

He shakes his head

Quinton:"it's simple just too elegant and professional....and did I mention sexy? But in a

mannered way"

I haven't even seen myself in the mirror yet I feel like he's already been the perfect most honest mirror I need

Me:"thanks love bug,let me see"

I go stand in front of the mirror and I see everything he said...is that me!?

Me:"oh wow... I can't believe that's me"

Quinton:"just one thing missing"

He goes to the dressing table fiddles and comes back while I'm starring at myself

I feel something cold on my neck and notice him putting a beautiful diamond necklace around my neck... I gasp

Me:"wow... it's beautiful"

It has green little diamonds around it

Me:"are those...?"

Quinton:"yeah,those are your diamonds,now you can carry them wherever you go in style"

Me:"can I take them out of the chain?"

Quinton:"yeah..then put them back on the necklace"

Me:"Quinton... baby,that's so creative... I love it"

I turn to hug him he holds tight

Quinton:"and I love you"

Me:"love you more"

We share a passionate kiss, I pull out and wipe the lipstick off his mouth but not all of it he'll handle that himself

Me:"thanks for waking me up early"

Quinton:"I was also hungry so..yeah we both benefit"

We laugh I look down at his D looks like it's finally slept

Quinton:"trust me it's still hard just a bit better"

I laugh

Me:"let me go before you make me late"

He puts on his track pants and walks me to the car carrying my handbag

Quinton:"this thing if having one car...what am I to use when I need to go somewhere"

Me:"you'll call an Uber"

Quinton:"mxm.. whatever"

Me:"kiss my baby for me"

Quinton:"how?"

Me:"like this"

I peck him all over his face then his lips last

I get in the car, take five minutes starting up, I hoot as I drove out and off to work I go.

This time I park across the building car doesn't fit in with the cars that park right on front of the building.

I get off and cross the road,I hear a few whistles from guys, mmh okay that boosted my confidence a bit,I hold my head up and walk up straight with more confidence as I walk in the building,and looks like hubby was right,I'm definitely turning heads...I feel like screaming

"WHO'S THE GENEDER NOW BITCHES!!"

Lol, I laugh at my thoughts as I enter the lift,and guess who I bump into once again,the boss lady herself,yeap it turns out she's managing partner and her name is Emily Carter, I guess she's always looking this fly

"Morning"

I look at her, she's not looking at me just straight
So I look back straight too
"I hate greeting twice"
I look at her she glanced at me
Me: "oh you talking to me?"
Her: "I don't have to be if you don't want me to"
Me: "good morning to you too, how are you?"
Her: "fine"
And just like that our conversation has ended...damn
The lifts stops and the first batch of people walk out and just like yesterday only her and I are heading to the eighth floor
Her: "so you the new paralegal"
She finally says
Me: "yeah"
Her: "you the last minute hired girl...I wonder why Mullur was so eager hiring you when you just a student..."
Me: "well.. I guess he saw potential"
Her: "oh please...are you sleeping with him?"
My mouth hangs, I did not expect that
The lift opens saving me from that awkward moment, I get off before her this time and head straight to Troy's office
I get in quickly then close my eyes and breath
I open them and he's starring at me
Me: "morning!"
I walk closer to his desk
Me: "how are you this morning boss"
He shakes his head a bit as if he's bringing himself back to his senses
Troy: "wow.. you.. you look..."
Me: "not like a helper?"
We laugh
Troy: "I'm good thanks and yourself?"
Me: "I'm good too"
Troy: "it's good you early, there's alot of paperwork I need to be done, but you should be finished by midday...then there's a case I'll be presenting later on..you coming to court with me"
My heart jumps for joy, already I'll be experiencing some court action
Troy: "don't show all your teeth just yet missy, here!"
He pushes a box full of papers towards me
Troy: "get this work done...put it on computer like how I showed you yesterday then email the important things to me, I'll tell you what they are once you done"
Me: "yes sir"
Troy: "let's get working"
Yep, this is not the friendly Troy we know from outside work, this is a more serious and professional Troy that you don't wish to mess with when it comes to work, he looks back at his laptop I take the box and walk out
I like my office it's very posh for a paralegal
After a lot of work done
I go make myself a cup of coffee and help myself with some biscuits, I stand against the counter

as I take sips of my coffee and my mind drifts to last night's event, my pussy throbs as I'm missing my husband already, I look at the time and it's twelve already midday, I should finish up, probably Troy already sent me the stuff he needs

"I could use a cup"

I startle and turn to be met by Mullur

Me:"hectic day?"

Troy:"yeah... already have two meetings with clients after court"

Me:"yohh... you right you could use a cup or two"

He chuckles

Maybe I should tell him now?

No...

Me:"Uhm Troy... I mean Mr Mullur"

He chuckles

Troy:"yes..Mrs O'Brien"

I chuckle

Me:"Uhm there's something important I need to tell you"

He looks at me

Troy:"work related?"

Me:"yes and no...kind of..well it's personal but it will effect my work"

He frowns

Me:"don't worry it's nothing bad like a criminal record or drugs or anything of that sort"

Troy(sighs):"oh.. I was getting worried"

We laugh

Me:"oh come on"

Troy:"you never know"

He gives me a mischievous look,we laugh again

He continues making his coffee

I must say,he looks good in a suit

He finishes

Troy:"I've already sent you an email of the important stuff"

I nod

He walks out with his cup but stops by the door

Troy:"by the way.. you look so damn beautiful today"

He winks and walks away leaving me dumbfounded

Me:"thanks..... I guess"

I say to myself then make my way out,I bump into the receptionist as soon as I'm by the door

She looks at me like I just gave her a fright

Her:"Hi!"

She says in a high pitch voice

Me(awkwardly):"heeeey"

I walk away,I look back behind me and she looks away and makes her way inside the kitchen, that was weird

The day continues to be very busy

I actually enjoyed watching Troy in action at court, he won the case like a boss,I had a very inspiring day,this job inspires me to do very well with my studies cause they only hire A students nothing below and they strict with who they hire...

Its now half past six, and I'm done with my days work, I pass Troy's office before going home.. I

knock and make my way in,he stops whatever he was doing and gives me his full attention as he sits back

Me:"I'm all done"

Troy:"that's good... Lisa... you were of great help today at court"

Me(excitedly):"really!"

Troy:...

Me(coughs):"I mean....(calmly).. really?"

He chuckles

Troy:"yeah...keep up the good work"

Me:"thanks.. I will"

We sit in silence for a while

Troy:"there's something important you needed to tell me?"

My heart skips

Me:"oh yeah...uhmm I don't know how to put this"

Troy:"just put it as it is"

Silence

Me(sighs):"I'm pregnant"

His eyes widened,the fact that this is his baby made my knees weak at his facial expression

.

.

to be continued...

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 10

•

•

•

•

•

💎LISA💎

•

•

•

•

•

Troy:"congratulations,Mr O'Brien scored so soon"

He laughs I fake one too

Me:"yeeah...."

Troy:"so how far along are you.....wait,let me guess... four...five weeks?"

I chuckle

Me:"yeah..... about that..."

Tears prickle my eyes my heart becomes heavy on me

Troy:"heey... you okay?"

I play with my fingers a few drops of tears fall on my hands

Troy:"Lisa.. what's the matter?"

I look up at him and he's full of concern

Troy:"wait"

He gets up and I hear the door close,he presses a button and blind shutters fall down from out of nowhere on the glass wall making it impossible for someone passing by his office to see us inside...he comes back to his seat opposite me

Troy:"that should give us enough privacy..... now please tell me...why are you ruining your beautiful make up?"

I can't help but break down,this is harder to keep to myself than I thought

He gets up and moves his chair around and places it next to me,he takes my hands

Troy:"I can't help you if you don't tell me what's wrong...talk to me"

I look up at him

Me:"I'm not four or five weeks"

Troy:"oh?... so you crying cause I guessed wrong?"

Me:"I'm two months and two weeks pregnant"

Troy:"oh wow, congratulations,I'm happy for y'all"

I shake my head he doesn't get it

Me:"calculate Troy..."

He looks me in the eyes

Me:"we in the first week of July now... meaning..."

Troy:"you got pregnant during the second to last week of April"

Me:"and that was...during the week we were going to go for the function"

Troy:"you mean before you got back with Quinton?"

I nod

He looks at me astonished

Troy (whispers):"shit!"

Me:"I know,I'm so stupid... I mean how can I let that happen"

Troy:...

Me:"I think it was during that night we got very drunk and woke up the next day in your bed, I don't think we used protection..the day before the function"

Troy:"wait wait... remember the next day you got back together with Quinton"

He smiles

Troy:"I'm sure y'all had some make up sex....this could be his baby"

I shake my head no

Me:"Kyle was still one day old.... I told him we should wait for a bit until after the ceremony that needed to be done at home was over,then we can have sex,but then during the ceremony we were ordered not to have sex until we married,so we only started having sex in the beginning of June which was four weeks ago.....so if I were pregnant with Quinton's baby... I'm supposed to be four weeks"

Silence

He just looks at me blankly,tears are running down my face starring at him just waiting for him to say something

Me:"please..say something,what are you thinking?"

Troy:"does your husband know about this"

I shake my head no

He burries his face in his hands he looks back up at me is disbelief

He sighs and gets up then walks towards the wide window behind his desk looking out at the city with his hands in his pockets, you can cut the stress in this room with a knife.

I guess that's how he digests news like this,he's been standing there for almost half an hour and I've been sitting on this chair thinking if did I make the right decision telling him,what if he'll just cause problems and make things more complicated between my relationship with my husband and our relationship at work,I should've kept it to myself,he's definitely going to trip.

"This is a mess,you know"

He finally speaks

He turns around and stands right on the same spot

Troy:"this will break your marriage"

Me:"and it only just started....why am I so cursed"

Troy:"so...what do you want us to do?"

I look at him and he's looking right through my eyes

Me:...

I shrug my shoulders

Troy:"we could keep it a secret....but that baby will eventually be birthed,the DNA can sell us out without even having to do tests...and besides secrets always have a way of coming out"

Me:"are you willing to keep a secret like this?"

Troy:"I'm a lawyer Lisa... keeping secrets is not that hard of a job for me...but even in Law, there's a judgement day,where secrets come out"

Me:"this will break him Troy... it'll break not only his heart,but his spirit too"

Troy:"I know... I can already feel his pain and yours,this will definitely not be easy for y'all"

Me:...

Troy:..

Me:"what about you? How do you feel?"

He sighs and shrugs his shoulders

He comes towards his chair which is next to me and sits on it

Troy:"I don't know how to feel Lisa...cause, I don't know what this means...and I don't know where I stand... I don't know how to feel"

Me:"we can't tell Quinton Troy"

Troy:"that's a bad idea Lisa"

Me:"I can't loose him"

Troy:"but Lisa this happened while y'all were broken up...he knew you were fucking right?"

Me:...

Troy:"don't you think he'll understand? It's not like you cheated on him"

Me:"you don't know Q like I do...for this... he'll kill you,me and himself"

Troy:"he loves you...he won't do that,stop overthinking things"

Me:"can't help it.... I don't wanna be the one to break his heart Troy"

Troy:"Lisa...as someone who's been in love and married...I'd advise you to tell Quinton the truth now before it comes out from somewhere else.....now you see that...that will really break his heart, you don't want to break the trust in your marriage, you now committed to this person for life, no matter how bad the situation is... you should be the one he trusts you'll always be honest, if he needs to talk to someone you should be the first person that comes to mind,when

he needs someone he knows will be honest with him no matter what he should think about you.....if you start your marriage on secrets... you'll be breaking that special possession you hold before its even began..."

His words hit home,the sincerity in his voice and eyes shows that he knows what he's talking about....

Me:"you must've truly loved her, unconditionally"

Troy:"that's why I went down on one knee and begged her to be my family"

He smiles a bit,a smile creeps on my face

Troy:"that's was just my advice..... but the best advice I give to people is to not take people's advice but you should make your own decisions,it's your life and even though I do give out advice I'm giving you something to think about before making your own decision.... but whatever decision you make Lisa.."

He holds my hands

Troy:"I'm hundred percent behind you,this is our mess after all, you didn't get that baby in you by yourself"

Me:"Troy"

Troy:...

Me:"you a good man with a kind heart"

He smiles

Me:"you deserve to be happy again,start over,I'm sure you'll find love again"

Troy:"naahh I'm good Lisa"

Me:"you will find that woman... I know it"

He looks at me for a while

Troy:"nahh... I'm doing well,God took the only woman I was capable to love.... there's nothing left for me out there"

Me:...

He gets up and goes back to the window

Troy:"and besides...all the good woman are taken"

I walk up to him and stand next to him as we look down at the busy city

It looks beautiful from up here

Me:"look... so many people down there... I'm sure not all good woman are taken"

He chuckles

Troy:"but you are"

I feel his eyes on me..my heart skips at the words he just burted out

I look at him,he has a faint smile on him

Me:"Troy...."

Troy:"you remind me so much of her"

Me:"I do?"

Troy:"yeah.... your beauty,inside and out, your funny childish sense of humor, your ambition, the innocence in your eyes....the fact that I opened up to you about myself"

He moves closer to me he brushes my cheek all the way down to my neck with the back of his hand

Troy:"and your soft skin"

He moves his hand away from me quickly

Troy:"I'm good with love..my firm is my lover now"

Me:"you'll find love...just you wait"

Troy:"so...what are you doing to do?"

I sigh,my heart sinks

Me:"I don't know Troy....things are going so well between us... our love is growing everyday,he's so excited about this pregnancy.....

Troy(interrupting):"he knows you pregnant?"

Me:"yes... and he's so excited that we having our own child"

Troy:"oh no...don't tell me you already lied about the term"

I nod

Me:"I did"

Troy:"no no no... you've already ruined everything, even if you do tell the truth,the fact that you first lied"

Me:"and that's why he can never know"

Troy:"is that your decision?"

Me:"my mind is made up Troy... this is our happiness,I won't let a stupid mistake one drunk night ruin it....this baby already won't make.....

I stop talking as I realize what I was about to say

Me:"this baby will ruin everything if he knows the truth"

Troy:"okay... I get you"

Me:"you do?"

Troy:"yes...but I just need you to make me understand one thing"

I look at him and nod

Troy:"since this is my baby too... what am I to do during all these lies of yours and secret"

Me:....

Troy:"do I just sit back and act like you not carrying my baby and just pretend as if I'm not about to be a father...do I just ignore all this and continue livingy life? Just make me understand this, what do I do?"

I'm speechless

I don't know what to say

My phone rings, we both look at my purse on his table,I walk towards it dig for my phone, find it and answer

"Bub"

Me:"love bug"

"It's getting late, you still working?"

Me:"I'll be on my way just now love"

"Well hurry up, Kyle doesn't want to shut up...he wants me to hold him all the time,and when he sleeps I put him down he just wakes up and cries"

I laugh.

Me:"did you change his nappy"

"Yeah I did that and gave him his bottle and food,but still"

Me:"what is he wearing?"

"His vest suit and his jersey full body suit"

Me:"take the jersey off,he's feeling hot"

"But babe it's winter and it's cold"

Me:"take it off. ..you'll thank me later"

"Okay I'll do that....now get your sexy ass home already!"

He hangs up

I giggle then look back at Troy

Me:"I need to get going,my family needs me"

He smiles

Troy:"you have a great family Lisa..... I hope you keep it that way...cause it'd be sad for you to loose them while they still alive..... I'm very sure it will be more painful than loosing them because of death"

I swallow the lump

Me:"we'll continue this conversation some other time... right now,my husband needs me"

I take my purse and walk towards the door, I stop and turn to look at him

Me:"this stays between us"

Troy:"of cause"

Me:"goodnight"

Troy:"goodnight"

I walk out I notice most people have gone home.

....

I park the car and make my way in welcomed by a loud tiny cry,that's Kyle giving daddy a hard time, I stand by the door and just watch them,they on the lounge, he's rocking him in his chair trying to calm Kyle down be Kyle is not having it he cries even louder

"Come on Kyle... would you shut up for once please!"

He cries even louder

"Okay ok....jeez,I'll pick you up"

He takes him and carries him,he stops crying

"Wow...dude, you need to stop this... I can't always be carrying you...this is all your momma's fault for getting you used to being carried...I'll just spank the habbit out of you boy...like this"

He spanks his bums a bit,Kyle giggles

"What am I to do with you"

He laughs,while Kyle giggles,my heart melts

Me:"mommy's home!!"

He turns and gets up quickly

Quinton:"oh thank Goodness finally you back"

He kisses me for a short while and we group hug since he's carrying Kyle,we break it after a while

Me:"damn I missed y'all"

I make my way to the kitchen

Quinton:"missed you would be an understatement"

I smile

Me:"I bought take aways, I can't cook now it's late"

Quinton:"I'll dish up.... you can just..."

He gives me Kyle

Quinton:"take care of that and I'll do this"

Wow,he just wants to dump Kyle on me

Me:"has he been that bad?"

He looks at me with one brow up giving me that "giirrl" look

Quinton:"you don't know the half of it"

I look at Kyle

Me:"have you been giving daddy hard time?"

Kyle:"agfgdjdjgdbjjngsgyqtjtnvhsbf"

Me:"I knew he was lying...that's so unlike you.... you an angel... mommy's angel"

Quinton:"angel my ass...put him down and see your little innocent angel"

I laugh and go put him in his rocking chair,he remains quiet

Quinton:"whooooaaa... witchcraft! How did you do that?!"

I burst into laughter

Me:"what do you mean? My baby is an angel.."

Quinton:"but when I put him down he cried like a maniac"

Me:"are you sure you haven't been pinching my baby, that's why he's been crying?"

Quinton:"noo....isile lengane yakho yaz (this baby of yours is naughty)"

I go to him to the kitchen

Me:"you the naughty one here..... please pull down my zip"

Quinton:"you just going to take his side just like that"

He pulls down the zip of my dress carefully

Me:"he's story just makes more sense"

Quinton:"he can't even talk"

Me:"I speak baby language"

Quinton:"y'all just evil"

I laugh at him

I take Kyle and head with him upstairs as I need to go change, I put him on the bed and put pillows beside him so he doesn't roll off I change then go wash my face in the bathroom, I get back and Kyle is just lying there giggling and playing with himself...this child though,why didn't he want daddy to put him down...

After I lotion my face I go take him

Me:"you so sleek Kyle... you want to get daddy into trouble with me for making you cry?"

Kyle:"hsgfdhfdkdkgfdk gvhfjhhlk bbbrrrrraagshfgd"

Me:"I love you more"

I kiss him all over his palmy face then we head downstairs and find the food ready, Quinton is already eating

Me:"you couldn't even wait for me"

Quinton:"sorry..am very hungry"

Me:"when last you ate?"

I ask as I put Kyle down and take my food then sit next to him on the couch

Quinton:"around twelve or one in the afternoon"

Me:"ayibo..why didn't you have another late lunch?"

He shrugs

Quinton:"lazy"

I chuckle shaking my head

Me:"please don't do that... you should eat atleast four times a day with snack inbetween"

Quinton:"by snack....(smirks)... meaning...."

He gives me a mischievous look

Me:"meaning fruits, chips or biscuits"

He frowns

Quinton:"mxm kanti"

I laugh

Me:"and you say my Kyle is the naughty one"

He chuckles...

We finish up eating and washed dishes together, by the time we finished cleaning the kitchen Kyle was fast asleep so he went to put him to bed...then came back down and we watched some TV... I lie beside to him on the couch as we were concentrated on the TV

.....

Q's mom:"please don't kill me...I'm sorry!!! Please!! Forgive me!!"

Me:"you killed my baby!! I'll never forgive you!!"

Q's mom:"PLEAEEASE!!!! DON'T!! "

Me:"its a little too late"

Bhaa

Gun shot goes off

Me:"Nooo! What have I done!!"

What have I done!!

.....

"What...what have I done...."

I feel someone shaking me

"Bub"

"I didn't mean to... I'm sorry"

"Bub wake up"

I open my eyes to be met by his grey eyes

Quinton:"you dreaming...let's go to bed"

I look around we still on the couch

Quinton:"you need water?"

I shake my head

Me:"No.. I'm fine"

I swear I wasn't in deep sleep,that was no dream....that was a vision

Quinton:"hello?"

He waves his hand on my face I look up at him

Quinton:"I'll just carry you"

He picks me up bridal style then we walk around making me turn off the lights then we head upstairs,he puts me on the bed

Me:"I'm so tired babe"

Quinton:"I noticed...get some rest,you have school tomorrow"

I groan

Me:"I need a foot rub... please"

He huffs

Quinton:"fiinnne"

Me:"thank you"

Quinton:"yeah whatever"

He rubs my feet as requested

Quinton:"bub"

Me:"love bug"

Quinton:"what were you dreaming about?"

He looks at me carefully

Me:"I don't remember...I'll tell you tomorrow maybe I'll remember"

He nods

Me:"why you ask?"

Quinton:"your eyes were a bit open and glowing green"

My heart skips..so it really was a vision

I shrug my shoulders

Me:" maybe I should have a look the diamonds tomorrow,I think they wanna show me

something"

Quinton:"yeah you should"

*Silence"

Quinton:"I was thinking bub"

My eyes were already closing as I'm dozing off,he's lying behind me as I have my back on him and he's playing with my hair and scratching my scalp softly,that's how he always makes me sleep or sometimes play with my boobs or scratch my back

Me:"mhmm"

Quinton:"we should go to the doctor tomorrow"

My eyes open wide

Me:"why?"

Quinton:"I mean, you did a home pregnancy test right?"

Me:"yeah"

Quinton:"I want you to go do a proper rest from the doctor...so that we even get advice on how you should treat yourself during this pregnancy,and see if they can't help with... you know... your condition, maybe there's a way around it where the baby can survive... you know that kinda stuff"

Me:"mmmh...yeah... I feel you"

Quinton:"yeah.... I need this baby to make it"

Me:....

Quinton:"I love you... goodnight"

He kisses the back of my neck then switches off the lamp and cuddles me to sleep

"You have to tell him the truth"

I startle and open my eyes, that was a rather too deep voice

"Beloved"

It's a deep yet gentle voice.. I think I'm loosing my mind...

Me(whispering):"hello!?"

Silence

I wait for a while... nothing, I take a deep breath then go back to sleep

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 11

•

•

•

•

•

💎LISA💎

•

•

•

•

•

"Wake up.. Lisa"

I feel wetness on my lips, I open my eyes and Quinton is sucking my lips

Quinton (whispers):"wake up"

He wispers against my lips

Me: "morning"

Quinton:"time for school"

Me:"yohh Q.. I need a break, it's still the first day anyway, nothing much will be done"

Quinton:"I was hoping you'd say that"

He puts his leg between mine as he moves even closer .

Me(smirks):"you were weren't you"

Quinton:"I'm hungry"

Me:"let me go make breakfast"

Quinton:"my breakfast is already here"

He moves his waist against me,my pussy is already fully drenched

Me:"mhmm"

Quinton:"I need your naked body more than I need oxygen right now"

My pussy vibrates as I feel butterflies in my tummy

He slips down my panty

Quinton:"open them legs and let me eat"

I do as demanded, he gets on top ofe and pleasures me with not one not two but three orgasms,he came twice though

He collapses on me still buried deep in side of me

He wispers in my ear

Quinton:"Imma cum in you now"

Me:"cum baby"

He releases I feel its warmth around my pelvic area

Just when I think he'll pull out he starts all over again moving in and out

"Aahhhh yeah...fuck me!" I scream filled with joy in my heart his touch sending electric waves throughout my body

We now taking a bath just relaxing as I'm lying on my back against him and his against the tub,he's playing with my boobs

Quinton:"I can't even hold you without getting hard"

I giggle

Me:"so I've noticed"

He's hard against my waist as we speak

Quinton:"Your body should be studied for the impact it has on the opposite sex"

I'm flushed,I'm sure my face is red as hell from blushing.. I don't even wanna get to how my nunu is reacting right now

I turn over and sit on his lap with my legs on either side of his

Me:"your dick drives me insane"

Quinton:"With every twirl of your hair and every giggle, I get a little stiffer"

Me:"Eye contact with you always feels like foreplay"

Quinton:" I want to kiss every single inch of your body, explore every nook and cranny, penetrate every crevice"

I'm not sure if those are the bubbles or what but something exciting just happened to my pussy

Me:"When you touch me,even just graze my skin,I get a tingling sensation down there"

Quinton:"Do you realize how beautiful you are when you orgasm?"

Me:" Your unclothed body is my happy place"

Quinton:"You are undeniably the sexiest woman I've ever met"

I kiss his lips,my body needs him,just when things are getting heated Kyle decides to cry

Quinton:"he has to move out now.. I'm serious"

I laugh

Me:"ayibo he's only two months"

Quinton:"and two weeks...he's old enough"

Me:"you crazy,let me go get him so he can join us"

Quinton:"intruder"

I laugh as I get out and run to his room naked wetting the floor, I get him and we walk back to our room,I undress him, luckily he didn't poop just alot of pee. We go to the tub and join daddy. I run more hot water to make the water warmer I make him sit on my lap since the water is too high for him to sit on his own

Kyle:"hffggfjsgh (giggles)...brrbrbrbrrrr"

Quinton looks at him irritated

Quinton:"you not even cute right now,just ruined a moment"

Me:"you have to get used to him babe...he's a momma's boy"

Quinton:"doesn't mean he should ruin perfect ...hard moments"

I laugh

Me:"love bug...we will have kids now... you should learn to share me"

Kyle:"yaaahhhh dadadaadaaa"

He's hitting the water making it splash us

Quinton:"you see....that's it...he's gonna get it now"

He slashes him with water more like sprinkles him a little bit Kyle giggles and scream as he hits the water harder,I help him to splash daddy

Quinton:"ohh so I'm the bad guy Chun Li"

I burst into laughter

We continue playing with Quinton and Kyle hating and loving on each other,gosh I just love love these two souls,I'm so blessed.

Kyle farts in the water and I knew that's our que to get out and dress up before he poops in the water.

We now chilling in the back yard just relaxing, Kyle is lying on the ground on his play mat with his toys which are rubber since he puts them in his mouth, I always make sure they soaked in water

Quinton:"I've made the appointment we'll get going at twelve our appointment starts at one"

Ohh yeah..the doctor... and my mood just got dumpend

Me:"oh... okay"

Quinton:"can't wait to see that little foetus inside your tummy"

He chuckles

My eyes become painful so does my throat

Quinton:"bub.... you okay?"

Me:"yeah....why?"

Quinton:"you look like you going to faint...your face just went from white to red....are you nervous?"

Me:"yeah,very very nervous"

Quinton:"come here"

We chilling in those long beach chairs

I get off my chair and go sit on his lap facing him with legs on either side

Quinton:"we've come a long way... horrible things have tried and some succeeded to come between us...but we also had no faith and we gave up easily.... we've learnt from that now,and here we are married,so whatever happens whether this baby makes it or not,that won't change the love I have for you... I won't ever let anything come between us again... I promise"

Me:"no matter how bad it is?"

Quinton:"no matter how bad,I can't afford to loose you ever again,unless God decides otherwise"

I lie my whole body on him and listen to his heartbeat he holds me tight kissing my head multiple times I close my eyes and I listen to the love he has for me,it's so loud , I feel very connected to this man's soul, I love him to death, I think I'm obsessed....the way I love him,made it very easy for me to love Kyle, I love him as my own,I'd die for him as much as I'd die for Quinton

Tears leave my eyes

Me(whispers):"I love you"

Quinton (whispers):"I love you too much"

I lift my head and look right at his lips

He kisses me

Quinton:"let me go run a few business errands in my office real quick"

Me:"okay...I'm sleepy,Kyle and I will take a nap in the meantime"

Quinton:"I'll wake yall up when it's time to go"

Me:"okay"

We kiss once more then I get off him and his hard dick, I smirk shaking my head

Quinton:"you know your effect"

I chuckle and take my baby, Quinton heads to his office room and we go upstairs...we get into bed I cuddle Kyle..he's just blabbering a whole lot of things making me fall asleep

My phone rings I look at Kyle and he's already fast asleep, I check the id and it's Troy flashes on my screen,it's a video call

I don't bother to fix myself I just answer

Me:"Troy"

"Aren't you supposed to be at school?"

Me:"yohh I'm so tired,I haven't got time to rest since before the wedding I was busy with planning and all that then the honeymoon we were exploring didn't get much rest, then work.... ayi I'm taking a break,one day won't hurt.."

Troy:"yeah you take that break, you gonna need the energy.. after school you'll have to come to work sometimes if I need you and every weekends... except when you writing exams"

Me:"adulting is harder than I thought"

He laughs

Troy:"you'll get used to it"

Me:"yeah"

Silence

Troy:"I couldn't sleep last night"

Me:"me too"

Troy:"I have a bad feeling about this"

Me:"what?"

Troy:"keeping it a secret"

Me:"maybe I should just tell him"

Troy:"you need to"

Me:"this means I have to be willing to loose everything....he says he won't give up on me anymore,but the more I think about telling him the more I feel like he'll forget all those words"

Troy:"tell him Lisa...the man has killed and got blood in his hands for you... just tell him, he'll be disappointed yes, he'll be hurt yes,but he won't stop loving you,he won't leave you"

I sigh

Me:"let me get back at you"

Troy:"think about it"

He hangs up

I call Bella... I need her advice,it's been a while since we've talked,I last saw her at my wedding

She picks for

"Am I dreaming?"

I chuckle

Me:"no it's really me calling....sorry I haven't been making your hotline bling"she laughs,I just love this woman's laugh damn

"It's cool...I've been missing you"

Me:"then why you never call me?"

"You just got married... I know y'all needed the space,and I'm sure you haven't been hanging out with your friends much cause all y'all do is hang out together and make lots of love"

Me:"are you peeping on my life with your powers?"

She laughs

"No... I'm married too remember,I know how it goes"

I laugh

Me:"ohh yeah...say hi to Lloyd for me"

"Will do... how's honeymoon season treating you?"

I sigh

Me:"you don't know the half of it"

"I don't like that tone...I've heard it alot in the past when things weren't going well for y'all... don't tell me problems have already started so soon"

Me:"I told you before,I'm cursed"

"And I've told you before, you not"

Me:".. whatever you say"

"Talk to me"

Me:"I'm pregnant"

"Congratulations....but wait..why is that a sad tone?"

Me:"I'm two months and two weeks"

Silence

Me:"yeap... that's the mess"

"He doesn't know does he"

I shake my head

"You gonna have to tell him while it's still early"

Me:"I've already told him I'm four weeks,he's so happy.... he'll be broken"

"You already lied...no Lisa you don't ever do that in marriage...you not going to take this lie any further, you need to tell him the truth before he hears it from someone else"

Me(breaking voice):"I'm scared Bella"

"Everything will be fine...just tell him"

Me:"I don't wanna loose him again"

"You won't, didn't you feel the presence of God on your wedding day...it was so strong"

I thought I was imagining things

Me:"if I loose him this time... I don't think I'll be able to continue leaving cause he'll leave with a big part of my heart"

"Don't you think he feels the same? I'm sure he's just as scared to loose you as you are, y'all figure it out"

Me:"there's so much fear in me"

"Fear comes from the devil....a child of God shouldn't fear anything....go and pray this instance... you hear me"

Me:"yeah"

"Go pray...Let God fight your battles this time...stop underestimating his power Lisa... I'm married but you've never heard me tell you Lloyd and I are going through some stuff,cause I get down on my knees and that's how I fight for my marriage.. you think everything is always perfect between us? No..but the hardships never last, even when things go so south and he makes me question why did he marry me...but as soon as I get down and talk to the man who loves me first, I find comfort and peace then everything falls into place"

Me:"wow..."

"Pray baby girl... don't make Quinton or anyone else be the first lover in your heart"

Me:"wh... what.. but I love him"

"I know that..but Lisa,he's a jealous God....it should be God first, you, then Quinton"

Me:...

"Put God first....yes you love Quinton but Lisa he's not God... without God there wouldn't be Quinton and there wouldn't be you.....put God first and he'll show you miracles"

Me:"I hear you"

"I need you to believe"

I sigh

"We'll talk soon.... Pray"

She hangs up

I've really been ignoring God,I'm such a bad person, when everything is going good I become distant and I only call on him when things are bad...for someone who loves me so much,I sure am breaking his heart,I'm sure he feels used.

Well that ends now

I get up and take sleeping Kyle to his room and place him in his bed

I go back to our room I lock the door,I go on my knees

Me:"dear heavenly father....as I'm on my knees, before I start asking things from you, I want to first take time to appreciate you and let you know that I am aware of your presence, I want to thank you for all the blessings that you've blessed me with including the people who care and love me dearly, thank you for the opportunities and doors of success that you've opened for me, thank you for making my dreams come true,for taking my family out of poverty even though it happened when it was just mom and I left, thank you for Bella's guidance, thank you for being by my side throughout everything that I've been through, even though I didn't recognize at that time,even though I doubted you at that time but you never gave up on me, you really are the only man who loves me more than anyone could ever love me, even more than Quinton could ever love me, for you gave up your one and only son for me, thank you for the blessings and miracles even the ones I'm not aware of... father I ask for your forgiveness for I was given this opportunity to ask for forgiveness and through the blood of Jesus Christ I shall be forgiven, I ask

for your guidance father, I ask for you to please help me through this obstacle that I'm facing, I ask that you take away the fear in me Lord and help me face the truth... I put you first in my soul, heart, mind and life no man shall ever come before you, I give you authority over my life!!...take over Lord God, take your place! You own the throne of my heart... I surrender all to you Lord!"

I'm now pacing up and down the room as I feel the presence of God so strongly everywhere
Me (shouting): "in the name of Jesus!! I surrender in the name of Jesus!! Satan you not welcome!! You not welcome in my family! Stay in your lane! God has taken over now! He's the man of this home!! And in case you haven't noticed, he has long won the battle!! Get out of my house in the name of Jesus!! In the name of Jesus!! In the name of Jesus...."

I kept shouting the name of Jesus till for the first time in my life I was praying in tongues and somehow I understood what I was saying, my eyes are closed shut when I notice a man in a white long silk coat he had his back on me

I was about to say something but he disappeared

I open my eyes and my heart felt lighter I felt like a big load has been lifted off my shoulders

I open the door and go downstairs

I head to his office

I knock

"Come in"

I get in and he's buried in paper work

Me: "still busy"

He sighs

Quinton: "turns out I actually had a lot to do"

He looks at the time

Quinton: "shit...we will be late...we have to get going"

Me: "what about Kyle"

Quinton: "we'll pass mom's house"

Me: "okay"

We get ready and drive off, we drop Kyle off at his mother's place then head to the clinic

Quinton: "are you okay?"

I look at him

Me: "yeah I'm fine"

Quinton: "you've been awfully quiet"

Me: "just got a lot on my mind"

Quinton: "penny for thoughts or should I say rands?"

He chuckles

We get to the hospital now is my last chance to tell him the truth or he'll hear it from the doctor

He attempts to get out the car I hold his hand

Me: "wait"

He lets go of the handle and looks at me

Quinton: "bub?"

Me: "there's something I need to tell you"

He turns his body to face me and looks at me attentively

Quinton: "can't it wait?"

Me: "No...it can't"

Quinton: "talk to me then"

I sigh, tears threaten

Me:"I lied to you"

He frowns

Quinton:"continue"

He's voice has changed from concern to curious...he looks so scary now.

Me:"I lied... I lied about.. about... I..."

I'm stuttering

Quinton:"you not pregnant?...talk Lisa"

There's the angry Quinton slowly coming out... Dear God,please help me.

I close my eyes and sigh

Me:"I'm not four weeks pregnant"

He looks at me confused

Quinton:"what do you mean?"

Me:"I'm two months and two weeks pregnant"

He stays confused for a while with a little frown on his forehead

His eyes widen after a while

Quinton:"wait...but that's impossible,we never.... that was the week we got back together....we never had..(He pauses).....(whispers)..fuck"

Me:"Quinton....(whispers)...please baby...calm down"

He turns and stares blankly in front

Me:"I can explain....we were drunk"

He looks at me with his sparkling blue eyes as they have glasses of tears

Quinton (whispers):"how could you be so careless?"

He's not angry...he looks disappointed and heartbroken

Me(whispers in a breaking voice):"I'm sorry"

That's all I manage to say

He looks back in front

He opens the door and attempts to get out I hold his hand

Me:"where you going?"

Quinton:"as far away from you as possible"

Me:"please....love bug..."

Quinton (shouts):"DON'T!!....(calmly)...call me that"

He looks at me disgusted

He gets out and walks away, I watch him as he disappears with the road

Have I lost him? I can't

I close my eyes

Me:"please save my marriage father... bring him back to me....(breaking tone)...in Jesus name.... Amen"

I go over to the wheel and drive back home but first pick up Kyle then we head home

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 12

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

It's been hours and Quinton is still not home, Kyle has long went to sleep, I don't know how many calls and messages I've left him only to find out he left his phone in his office... I'm worried...where could he be at this time? It's half past one in the morning I try Aidan again

He picks up after a long while

(Sleepy tone):"hello?"

Me:"hey is Quinton at your place?"

"No....why would he?"

Me:"he's been gone since the afternoon,he's still not back"

"That's so unlike him...well more like the old him but not like the married him.... you know what I mean"

Me:"yeah...okay I'll call Clyde maybe he's with him"

Aidan:"Clyde is not back from Australia yet"

Me:"oh... maybe he's by his mother's place or with Candra....I'll try Brandon"

"Whoa! What happened,why did he just take off without letting you know?"

Me:"just had a misunderstanding...let me try others"

"Oh... he's phone off?"

Me:"he forgot it here"

"Shit... look I'm sure he's fine,this is Quinton we talking about,he's probably gone to get some air and think about your little misunderstanding"

Me:"yeah....maybe"

"If it makes you feel any better I'll also try track him down as soon as morning starts"

Me:"yeah,sure... thanks kid"

"Told you to stop calling me that"

I laugh a bit

Me:"night"

I hang up

I call his sister she tells me he's not there, I call Brandon,he also hasn't seen him...I try Lloyd Bella's husband, they've been close lately but nothing.

I sit down on the floor rag in the lounge defeated

I go on my knees and pray

Me:"Lord God, wherever he is,I pray that you shield him with the holy burning fire that

will protect him from the demons and evil that might want to make him think of causing any harm to himself or his loved ones or any harm that may come his way.... father I pray that he finds it in his heart to forgive me and we can move on from this, Kyle needs him,his family,his friends.... I need him.... the Bible says we should speak in faith and have faith in God no matter how impossible it may seem..so I declare,unity in my family, I declare forgiveness and understanding, I declare unconditional love, I declare happiness and laughter...no more sorrow, wherever my husband is oh Lord, lead him back home father, lead him back to me in the name of Jesus.... you are the most high God,there was no one before you and they'll be no one after you, you are alpha and Omega,you the only creator of all things beautiful, everything that has been touched by you turns to Gold, you are not a God created by human hands, you are not a God in need of anything we can give....You are our provider and protector and you meet all our needs, nothing surpasses you Lord, I surrender my marriage to you Lord I believe everything will work out, help me to be patient father.....as I wait for my husband to come back home and we work things out, in the loving name of Jesus Christ I pray....Amen"

I get up and head upstairs to bed, I get in the covers,I worry until I fall asleep

Five days later

I'm woken up by Kyle the next morning, I have only two classes today,I'm thinking of skipping since today I'll have to interview a nanny for Kyle, I can't keep going to drop him off at his granny's house...and I keep having this unsettling vision about Quinton's mom, I don't trust her with my baby although it's clearly evident that she's madly in love with Kyle .. I need to pray more about this, I refuse to have blood in my hands because of her, could it be that she still hates me that she's only tolerating me for her son's sake? Or she's pretending me for her evil ways? Well whatever she's planning it's not gonna work.

I get up and check the time it's eight o'clock...I'll only be going to work at three since that was the time my classes are supposed to finish. The interviews start at twelve,I need the best.

I sit up and look at his side of the bed,my heart shatters, it's been now five days and he still hasn't come back. I don't know where he is or how he's doing, Aidan as no luck tracking him, but I know Aidan is lying he's just covering up for his bro, so today I'm also meeting up with a PI to spy for me, I need to atleast know where he is and what is he doing,is he planning on coming back home or does he want nothing to do with me? I get up and freshen up,after a long warm shower I lotion and put on Quinton's briefs and my sweatpants, I wear his favourite gym tank top which reveals the side of my boobs and alot of chest, I tie my hair in a neat ponytail.

I put my pushes ten head to Kyle's room,he's still asleep,he's been waking up in the early hours of the morning and crying non stop ever since Quinton has been gone,he's becoming restless and he's not that happy baby that giggles alot he just cries non stop but I do manage to make him laugh and happy,it's just I haven't been able to play with him...my mind is always distant, I guess he can feel that my heart is not here at all...and it school and work this side just stressing me and I'm getting sick and tired of Quinton's childish behaviour...we married now,we should solve our problems together and not just

run away and disappear without informing anyone....he has a baby that he fought custody for,he's a goddamn father,he can't be pulling stunts like this....

I kiss his soft cheek and pull his tiny blanky up, I head downstairs to the lounge I clean up the house then chill on the couch and watch TV, I'm just always tired nowadays,my feet are always painful and so is my back,the morning sicknesses are back again...if this how pregnancy feels at just two months I'm afraid of the months to come

A call comes through my phone

I pick it up

"Umuntu akasenamntwana nhlobo nah?(does this mean I no longer have a child at all?)"

Me:"Mom... how's it holding up?"

I haven't told mom about the pregnancy ever since she gave me the pregnancy test

"I'm good...just missing you"

Me:"you always missing me.....girl,you need a man"

We laugh

"No way! I'm too old for that"

Me:"old? Since when is thirty nine old?.. come on"

"Anyway....you never got back at me about the test results?"

I sigh

Me:"I'm pregnant"

"Ayibo!! Undifihlela indaba ezingaka!(you hiding such big news!) Ngoba kutheni kanti? (why?)"

Me:"mah...alot has happened.. actually is happening"

"You don't talk to me anymore"

Me:"I'm embarrassing mah... you know the last thing I've ever wanted to do was disappoint you"

"What happened baby... I'm your mom, you bound to make mistakes,but it's never my place to judge you,I'll just give you the best advice I can and comfort"

Me:"I'm not pregnant for Quinton....but for Troy"

"What?? Yohh Lisa... you cheated on Quinton? When?"

Me:"No... I didn't cheat mah.. I'm two months and now three weeks pregnant,that was before we got back together,I was involved with another man"

"Yhhoo ..and who is this Troy,where is he from?"

Me:"Troy Mullur I met him around the neighborhood I stayed in"

She remains quiet

"How did Quinton take the news?"

Me:"he's been missing for five days now...so not very well"

"Five days pho...ayi..andsazi ke (I don't know)"

Me:"at first I thought he needed air to cool down then he'll come back and talk about it...now...he just disappeared and doesn't want to be found...this is too much for me mom.. I need him"

"Hang in there my baby... he'll come around,I'm sure wherever he is he's thinking about how to solve this mess"

Me:"what if he wants a divorce?"

"That's absurd...that man can't live without you... trust me he'll come around... your father used to do worse when he got mad but he always came back... he'll come back

and you will work this out"

Me:"you right..."

"I have to go... call me when you need to talk"

Me:"I will"

"I love you"

Me:"love you too"

I hang up then decide to call Troy

But he doesn't pick up...he's probably busy,it can get very busy in that office of his.

I've been praying for my husband to come back to me,and patience is the word that was given to me..that's all he said, patience.

I notice a light coming from my chest...it's a green glow,it's the diamonds,I take out the neckless and hold it in my hands,I take them out of the neckless and places them on the coffee table

Me:"talk to me my babies....what are you trying to tell me?"

They rise a bit off the table,this still scared the ish out of me but I have to get used to them

Me:"reveal everything my precious....how can I heal myself, I need this baby to make it, at least save my baby if not my marriage"

The start spinning really fast, I move back to the couch

Then a bright glow explodes from the middle of their circle, I get closer as I sense the glow coming out my eyes straight towards the glow of the diamonds,the lights clash, I hear doors banging and the whole house has become dark..my heartbeat accelerates

"Remove fear"

A soft voice echoes

I take a deep breathe and calm myself down and look straight at the diamonds

I get lost deep within the light and I'm in a house,it's a small flat with lots of things lying around everywhere, I'm in what looks like the lounge, I just stand in this one place,I hear sobs coming towards the lounge and a young girl makes her way to the couch crying

A man who looks old enough to be her dad comes out from the passage she came from fixing his belt

Him:"your pussy is becoming dry by the day.... I hope that's not how you treat our clients!"

She shakes her head

Him:"Speak up when I'm fucking talking to you!!"

Her:"No daddy! That's not how I treat them"

Him:"so you only treat me like that?"

Her:"No daddy! I'm sorry"

Him:"Sorry?...I'll make you sorry"

He charges towards her in full anger and strangles her neck

Me:"STOP!! YOU HURTING HER!!"

they can't seem to hear me

He was about to throw a punch at her face but I quickly hold it before it reaches her face

He looks at his hand in fear....he let's go of the girl

Him:"how the fuck did you do that!?"

She shrugs her shoulders

He tries to punch her again I hold his hand then push him and he falls on the floor,he's now on total shock

Him:"mthakathi.....phuma lakwam!!(you witch...get out my house)"

Her:"I didn't do anything dad.. please believe me... please I'm sorry"

Him(growls):"OUT!!"

She runs out the door crying

I need to find her and help her

The scene changes

There's a family gathering at Q's mom's place

We all sitting around the dinner table

Quinton:"there something we need to tell y'all"

Everyone has his attention

Quinton:"Lisa is pregnancy"

They all gasp and pass congratulations

I can't believe my eyes when I look behind Q's mom... I see a man in a black long robe his face is covered with a hood so I can't see him properly,what's disturbing is that noone in the room seems to notice him,he's holding Quinton's mom's shoulders

Quinton:"I'm not done....the baby is not mine...."

Everyone is in shock, the man behind Q's mom holds her shoulders tighter, suddenly her face went from surprised to angry, he wispers in her ear she's now full of hatred, I see her heart is on fire and her eyes have turned red bit noone seems to notice...

Quinton was about to continue saying something when she just stood up and left the dark man followed her..

The scene changes

I'm in what looks like an office a very beautiful one looks like it's one of those study rooms in a home,but I'm not familiar with this place

I'm occupied in a lot of work there's papers all over the desk,I'm concentrated on the laptop in front of me and my phone is ringing like crazy

I finally pick it up

Me:"O'Brien speaking how may I help you?"

.....

Me:"Yes you speaking to her"

....

Me:"I do run my own firm, you heard correctly"

....

Me:"partnership?"

...

Me:"nah I'm good thanks"

....

The person talks for a while,I stopped pressing my keyboard and sat back,I was now listening attentively

Me:"sounds interesting..why don't we set up a meeting"

"Mom... Kyle is...."

I raise my finger for her to keep quiet

Me:"I'll see you then"

I hang up and get back to typing

The beautiful girl who looks twelve or something comes in and sits on the chair opposite mine

Her:"Mom"

Mom? That's my daughter? Could it be the one I'm carrying she does look a bit too white

Me:"Yes?"

I'm more focused on my work

Her:"Kyle doesn't want to take me out like he promised"

Me:"and where do I fit in?"

She folds her arms with attitude

Her:"I want to go out"

Me:"we have a big yard and a huge door,just open it go past it and you'll be out"

Her:"aarrghh I hate you!! Why do you always take Kyle's side!!"

I haven't looked at her since she got in

Me:"I don't take any sides unless I'm paid to baby"

That would be my job

Her:"I wanna go live with daddy!!"

Who's her daddy... please ask her who's her daddy

Me:"Ha! Quinton will never stay with a spoilt brat like you"

Her:"no wonder he left you, you so cruel, you killed my grandmother,why did you fight dad in court for me? Cause you don't even love me"

I look up at her

I thought I was going to see hurt in my eyes or something but it's like what she just said didn't even touch me

Me:"you want your daddy so bad...pack your bags and go...go and never come back"

She breaks down and runs out

I carry on with my work

I can't believe what I just saw...is that me? Will I grow to be so bitter?

So I will kill Q's mom,then Quinton and I divorce leaving me with the children?

I'll just be a workaholic bitter woman

There's no happily ever after???

I close my eyes and open them again

The diamonds fall on the floor and there's light in the house again

I sit back on the couch

Me:"No way!! I refuse for that to be my future...NO WAY!!"

I get up and start praying

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 13

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

After a long heartfelt prayer I sigh and sit on the couch.

The house telephone goes off

I'm about to go answer when Kyle cry's his lungs out from upstairs... I contemplate whether to go upstairs first or answer the phone

"Triiii trriiii....nweeehh nweeehh!! Triiii!"

My baby comes first so I run upstairs I take him but he continues crying non stop,I try shushing him as I rush downstairs to get the phone, I get to the kitchen and answer it

Me:"hello"

Kyle is still crying

"Hey mam there's a Miss Nxumalo is here says she has an interview?"

Me:"let her in"

I hang up and go back upstairs to change Kyle's messy diaper..

Me:"whhuuu...damn child hm hm!"

He giggles as I wipe his butt with wet wipes and put a new nappy, the door bell goes off just in time

We head downstairs

I open

Me:'Miss Nxumalo, please come in"

She smiles and makes her way in, she's not neat at all,she's dressed carelessly and doesn't look professional,I know this is just a nanny job but at least try to impress, this just shows she's not desperate and I love my child clean,if she can't even keep herself clean...ayi

I lead her to Quinton's study, I sit opposite her on Quinton's chair with Kyle on his rocking chair a bit far from the table

Me:"Miss Nxumalo... you came early than expected,I didn't even prepare my questionnaire, but I'll just ask what I need to know"

She nods

Me:"okay...so tell me about yourself, anything from your name to where you from"

Her:"ok.. I'm Gladys Nxumalo originally from Pretoria,that'swhere I grew up and... I didn't finish school, I ended in standard five cause of financial situation at home,when I reached sixteen I came to Joburg in hopes of finding work"

Me:oh..and do you have any experiences in taking care of a few months old baby?"

She shakes her head no

Her:"I've never, but I've been a maid.. I can cook and clean"

Me:"mmh,well I'm desperate for a nanny and I will need someone I can trust my baby

will be in good hands"

Her:"oh..No I have no experience with such small babies"

Me:"mmh,ayi mah,Enkosi for coming but I'm looking for a nanny not a maid"

Her:"ohh okay...but you can hire me for something else, I can do your garden,you have beautiful flowers outside"

Me:"eish...we already have a mower mah and my husband likes doing his yard most the time.. I'm sorry mah maybe next time... you can leave your number,I'll call you when something comes up"

She smiles and I give her a pen and my diary to write her number

Her:"thank you so much"

She leaves... I look at Kyle

Me:"this is gonna be a long day babe"

Kyle:"bbrrrrbbrrrrrr"

Me:"I know..it sucks like bbrrrrbbrrrrrr"

I laugh he giggles

More women come and I'm having no luck in getting the perfect one that I can trust for my baby with

I bang my head on the desk, I feel tears threaten... I shouldn't be doing this alone, I got married just last month,my husband should be beside me as we look for someone we both can trust...

....

Quinton:"I want to spend the rest of my life with you....I vow to love and care for you as we both shall live,I take you with all your faults and strengths,as I offer myself to you,with all my faults and strengths...I vow to help you when you need help and turn to you when I need help. I vow to choose you,over and over in good times and bad,in sickness and in health"

...

Quinton:"And with this ring,I take you,to be my lawfully wedded wife,my constant friend,my partner in crime and my love,from this day forward..till death do us part"

What happened to that,this is not death, you still alive, you vowed you'd be by my side till death do us part not mistakes,not disappointments,not anger..death! There's a difference !

My heart is beyond broken

I really don't want to start hating someone I love do much

He's the last person who should be judging me, he should be here!

The telephone rings, I pick my head up from the desk and answer

"A Mrs Mohale is here for interview"

I groan

Me:"let her in"

This is the last person for today

Kyle decides to throw his dummy away I notice his face changing

Me:"oh no...no no no you not going to cry now"

He makes a sad face and starts making irritated sounds

Me:"baby please..one last person then I'm all yours"

He bursts into a loud cry

I feel tears threaten,I'm sooo tired I feel like killing myself,my whole body aches my head is on fire...I can't take this anymore.... having to take care of a baby while you carrying a baby while you schooling and working at the same time and on top of that having marriage problems,my husband is nowhere to be found...is this normal for a nineteen year old?

I get up and pick him up,the door bell rings I go open while trying to shush Kyle by shaking him

Me:"Mrs Mohale... good afternoon"

Her:"Afternoon mam"

I move for her to come in then close the door behind her

She's an elderly decent looking woman,I like her already,she's dressed appropriately and looks like she's in her mid or late fifties

We head to the study

Me:"shh shhh it's okay baby... please stop crying...shhh for mommy please cuddles"

He doesn't stop he's cries are piercing through my heart,I feel like breaking down

Me:"uhmm...I'm sorry about this,he's not usually like this...I hope it doesn't scare you away"

Kyle is crying so loud as I'd someone is pinching him nonstop

Her:"No..its fine,will he be okay?"

Me:"I don't know he's been like this ever since....(pauses)...he's been like this for days now"

She stands up

Her:"let me see"

I look at her as she stretches her hands towards my baby

Her:"I won't hurt him.... I promise"

I reluctantly give her the wailing baby

She takes him and feels him all over,she feels her tummy.... I hope she's not rubbing some voodoo on my baby please God

Her:"when last has he eaten?"

I think about it

Oh shit!

Me:"oh No...I haven't fed him yet, I told myself I would do it after the first interview it must've slipped my mind... Ohhhh God!"

Her:"that's okay he's just hungry, please hurry him something I'll try to keep him calm"

I run out the office to the kitchen

Alot is running through my mind,like what kind of a sick mother am I and I just left a stranger with my baby in Quinton's office filled with a lot of our important stuff, I run back to the office,with his favourite dish strawberry flavoured cerilec

To my surprise Kyle has stopped crying he just has a straight face as she is drawing her finger up and down his foot

Me:"how did you do that?"

Her:"my baby Noluthando used to love it when I do this,it kept her distracted for a while"

Me:"oh...wow"

Her:"can I?... please"

I give her his bowl and she feeds him,he starts talking gabirish again looks as his heart open up

Her:"aren't you a handsome little fella..."

Kyle:"hjpgdfhgdbj fiiffkahfadhaaa!"

Her:"yes you are..and I bet you'll be bringing a makoti for mommy in no time"

Kyle giggles playing with her face

He loves her, I smile...she understands baby language too,I'm beyond impressed

After a while she puts him down and he's back to playing with his dummy

She sits opposite me

Me:"thank you so much...my baby would've died of starvation and I wouldn't have known"

Her:"oh sure you not that bad... you just had a long stressful day"

Me:"but it's now almost three and he hasn't eaten all day...(breaking voice)... I'm a bad mother"

Tears finally leave my eyes,she comes around and embraces me in a hug,I break down

Her:"you can talk to me"

She brings her chair next to me

I look at her for a while.

Her:"you can trust me"

I really do trust her

I pour out my heart to her,she also tells me about her daughter who's story is similar to mine and how she has dealt with it, it makes me feel better to know I'm not the only one who's life has been unfair

I also got to know alot about her and she's a good parent, her children were all troublesomes who all turned out to be quite successful now they just living an average life

Me:"why look for a job, can't your children provide for you now?"

Her:"I put my children to school and gave them everything they needed not because I wanted them to owe me anything but because I wanted them to go out to the world and live their best lives how they wanted...I did my part as a parent,it's up to them whether they take my words of wisdom and discipline that I layed out as a parent or choose a different path....so now they working,yes they do send me money now and then,they don't have to,they have their own families to take care of,I don't want to become their responsibility while I can still hustle for myself"

I look at her and smile

Me:"you a good woman Mrs Mohale.... wait..where is your husband?"

Her:"I don't know"

I look at her confuse

Her:"he used to work in the mines,when we had our last born in 1992..he left for work and never came back home"

I gasp

Me:"that's odd"

She nods

Me:"I'm so sorry Mrs Mohale"

Her:"it's fine,we all learn and grow from our struggles and heartbreaks"

Me:"yyeaa..."

I check the time and its quarter past four

Me:"Shit!! I'm late for work!"

Her:"yhuu... you go get ready and Goto work I'll look after Kyle"

Me:"oh no..it's fine I will drop him off his granny's, you only start tomorrow and I don't wanna inconvenience you"

Her:"rubbish... would you go already... we'll be just fine"

She takes sleeping Kyle I lock the office and head upstairs to change into work clothes I run out the house start the car and drive off

I get to work,get in the lift and up to eight floor I go... I get there and literally run to Troy's office when the receptionist stops me before I get there..her name is Kayla

Her:"Mr Mullur said I should tell you, your work has already been emailed to you so you can just get on with it"

Me:"oh..okay..let me just go see him"

I try to go but she blocks my way I move the other side she blocks me

Me:"what's your problem?"

Her:"he doesn't want to see you"

Me:"well I need to see him"

Her:"don't make me call security please"

I look at her and I'm breathing heavily

I click my tongue and head to my office, I get on with the work that was emailed to me, I send him an email

"Can I come to your office?"

He responds

"What do you need?"

I email back

"Talk"

"I'm busy...tied up, some other time"

"Okay"

I get on with my work, I wonder why is he being like this,why doesn't he want to see me? I just want to tell him what's been going on,he's part of this mess too..since after the day Quinton left he's been distant I haven't seen him face to face,he's always in court and today he's in his office he's "busy"

Nx! I'm slowly starting to hate men, like they all come as if they care then they hurt you the most..or is it just me? I'm the problem here?

I'm tired of crying, I'm done wasting my tears for anyone again..no more crying, I'll just keep my cries to myself now....this is too much, Ive just built walls around my heart...it's about time,I'm tired of people toying with it, no more using the heart now..from now on I'm using my mind..hoq many times does one have to break and fall to be happy again? Maybe I should go to America and start a new life there as a totally different person,changey name and everything...nah I'm not like Quinton,a coward,I'm not about to run away... you have God Lisa remember? He got this, just sit back and relax,watch everything fall apart then watch God put it back together again.

I finish up the days work and it's late

It's now half past eight, I email the court preparation to Troy for the trial tomorrow

I make my way out and to the lift, looks everyone has gone home.. I wonder who locks up here? Oh yeah there are security guards for that

The lift is about to close when I quickly stop the door with my foot,our eyes lock,he looks away...he has an eye patch on his eye and a bruised lip and nose,I get inside the lift

closes, I'm looking at him and I'm so concerned

Me:"Troy... what's happened?"

He looks at me

Damn it's bad but he still looks handsome... I mean good he looks good

Troy:"your husband"

I gasp

Me:"what? When?"

Troy:"on the day he left you"

Me:"oh no...."

Troy:"he came by my place and beat the hell out of me, I understand that he is hurting but I also fought back otherwise he would've beat me to death"

I put my hand on my mouth I'm in disbelief

Me:"I'm so sorry Troy"

Troy:"it's cool... I probably would've reacted the same"

Me:"don't try justify him...what he did to you,he had no right doing it.. that's not a way to handle this....he should grow up,he's childish behaviour is a real turn off"

Troy:"I've never seen a man that hurt... he's really hurting Lisa..he said all he wants is to live happily and have a big family with you"

Me:"until he learns that we won't always be happy,as happy as we can make each other but this is life there's always something that's going to burst our bubble,we just have to fight the enemy together not against each other"

The lift opens

Troy:"you guys need to work things out... I don't have to be part of this baby's life if it needs be for y'all to be happy"

My walls crack a bit at his words

Me:"Troy... you will be part of your child's life and I'm not going to argue with you about that..finish and klaar...that husband of mine needs to be a man and man up... Nx!

Goodnight"

I walk away and go straight to my car and head home

....

I get home welcomed by a mouthwatering smell of a nice home cooked meal

I head straight to the kitchen and look at the pots...it's a beef stew and pap

Me:"ohh this looks delicious"

I go to the lounge and find them sleeping on the couch,I take Kyle from her grip she wakes up

Her:"oh you back"

Me:"yes .sorry to keep you waiting for so long"

Her:"it's fine"

Me:"it's late...I'll show you to your room"

I lead her to the spare room which is here downstairs,the one we used to use while Quinton was on the wheelchair

Me:"this will be your room...I'll need you to be a stay in... unless I'm not working then you can go home when I come back from my classes"

Her:"okay..no problem"

I hug her

Me:"you a life saver and thanks for the food"

Her:"you welcome"

Me:"goodnight"

Her:"goodnight Nana"

I see alot of my grandmother in her

I go put Kyle to bed I go freshen up in my room and get into more comfortable clothes which would be my PJs

I head downstairs to dish for myself

I chill in the lounge and catch up on the sophies I missed while I eat..I'm watching the big bang

"You sitting on my spot"

That was definitely not Sheldon,I turn and he's standing by the door

I get up and turn to look at him,he's wearing clean fresh clothes,so he had shelter wherever he was... I feel lots of anger building up in me

Quinton:"hey there"

I told my arms and just look at him,does he know how worried I've been?? And all he can say is hey there?

He comes closer to the lounge he stands opposite me with the couch between us

Quinton:"I want us to fix things"

I just look at him for a while.. I want to shout at him,throw a tantrum,but that's not what the man on the thrown is telling me..."hug him and say thank you"... I go around the couch towards him, I stand right infront of him

Quinton:"sorry for disap...."

I attack him with a hug

Me:"thank you"

He holds me even tighter

Me:"thank you for coming back to me..to your family..thank you for giving us a chance..thank you for loving me so much...thank you Quinton Ambrose O'Brien"

This is not what I had planned to say when he got back I wanted to give him a peace of my mind not this

Quinton:"I love you Lisakhanya Ambrose O'Brien....that's all I live for...I live for loving you"

We stay like that for a long time

Quinton:"I did make a promise after all...my acts of anger might've been a lil over board or too muchbut bub.. there's absolutely nothing for me out there, I can't even look at another woman and feel the way you make me feel"

Me:"I missed you so much"

I touch his face

He touches mine too

Quinton:"I missed you more"

He moves his head closer and we share a kiss filled with lots of emotions

We lead each other to the couch without breaking the kiss, I lay him on his back while I get on top,gosh how I've missed him, I feel complete again,the walls I built seem to be getting weak...our tongues and swirling around each other,I'm grinding on him like crazy and I'm dripping wet he's squeezing my butt and holding my waist against him as if he doesn't even want an inch of space between us so I help him and press myself harder on him,we moan at the same time,his hand is inside my panty holding my butt cheek,he

slides it down inbetween my butt cheeks till he was rubbing my throbbing nani
"Mmmh"

I pull out

Me:"we need to talk"

His eyes are small,he can't even keep them open

Quinton:"we'll talk babe....but right now...we need to do this"

He pulls my lips with his and we get lost in our own world..next thing clothes are flying off and we make love on the floor rag,he's on top and has his forehead rested on mine,we looking into each other's eyes as he thrusts me slowly in and out

Quinton (whispers):"I love you"

With that said he releases making my body shake ,I follow

He pulls out and lies next to me on the floor, I wrap myself around him and lay my head on his chest

Me:"I love you more"

There's silence as we both try to digest the amazing orgasm we just had

Quinton:"I was at Brandon's place"

Me:"but..."

Quinton:"I told him to not tell you,also Aidan knew"

Me:"ohh so I'm the only one who was left to worry like a fool"

Quinton:"bub..calm down,I'm explaining"

I sigh and lay my head back on his chest as I listen

Quinton:"after what you told me.. I won't lie, I was beyond hurt, I was disappointed in you... I know I've made the same mistake but I didn't expect such carelessness from you...the worst part is you weren't honest with me from get go, you made me to believe that you carrying our baby, you made me excited about the DNA,that there'll be a human who's a spitting image of you and I in one... you... you lied to me, even after we promised each other no more secrets,you went ahead and kept it.... I was angry I won't lie,I was disgusted....

I shift uncomfortably

Quinton:"but throughout how I felt, something kept reminding me of how much I love you, something kept telling me that you need me and I should come back to you, I tried avoiding it cause my pride wouldn't let me to forgive you that easily.... I couldn't stop thinking about you then I started having flashbacks of everything we've been through of where we came from of how it all started that's when I knew,I'm slowly killing the both of us by being away.... I don't know what got into me,it's like some powerful source was forcing me to come back, something within me told me you are slowly losing it and you need me or if I don't come back today....life will never be the same again. I don't know if it was my conscious talking to me or what....but baby, I forgive you,I understand that we were not together at that time and you made a mistake... I just can't let a mistake destroy everything we've worked so hard on building"

Me:"I really am sorry...for all the lies,I should've learnt from our past that keeping secrets is no good whether it's to protect someone or not...and worse I started off our marriage in a bad way... I really am sorry love bug"

Quinton:"it's all in the past now....now we have to find a way forward"

Me:"yeah"

Quinton:"we'll have to tell our families"

My heart skips in fear as I know exactly how that's going to turn out

Me:"mmh"

He lifts my chin up to look at him

Quinton:"what's the matter?"

I look at him in fear of losing him why does the world want to separate us?

Me:"the diamonds showed me something scary earlier today"

He shifts I move from his chest and we face each other

Quinton;"what did they show you?"

Me:"well at first I saw a young girl who looks very young,she's being abused by her father sexually and physically so now he has Chasen her out.... I feel like I have to go find her and help her"

Quinton:"mmh.. this girl..how does she look?"

Me:"she's dark in complexion and skinny,not too short but not tall either,looks sixteen or seventeen"

Quinton:"does she have an afro or long hair?"

Me:"Afro"

He thinks to himself

Me:"someone in mind?"

Quinton:"there's this girl I helped with her car it broke down so I fixed it,it was a really old car and she looked very young to be driving.....then I met her again during these days while I was with Brandon at strip club,she's a hoe"

Me:"yeah her father said something about her treating clients well after he pleased himself with her"

Quinton:"yoh,so we have to help her?"

Me:"yeah,why else would she be shown to me?"

Quinton:"was that the future or something that happened to her?"

Me:"it's something that will still happen"

He sighs

Me:"wait.... you saw her at a strip club?"

He clears his throat

Me:"so you were going strip clubs pleasuring yourself while I was out here worried sick?"

Quinton:"I didn't fuck...we just went for some drinks and we looked and touched..but I promise I didn't fuck"

Me:"and that's supposed to make me feel better how?"

Quinton:"can we not fight about this....what else did you see?"

I close my eyes and sigh

Me:"then I saw us in a family gathering you told your whole family that I'm pregnant and it's not yours everyone was shocked... your mother's heart was on fire and a dark demon was behind her, looks like it's always been there,it held her tighter and that's when I saw hatred in her then she walked out before you could finish whatever you were about to say"

He looks at me astonished

Me:"Quinton... I'm not trying to make your mom a bad person or something I'm just telling you what I saw"

Quinton:"do you think that's the demon that will make her kill your baby and you kill

her?"

I've explained the part where I kill his mom to him because she killed my baby,when it was still a dream,so he's aware of it

Me:"I think so.. I think that's the demon that has been making her act the way she's been acting in the past"

Quinton:"damn...do you think it's this baby she will kill or Kyle?"

I shrug my shoulders

Quinton:"what else did you see?"

Me:"the last vision was the scariest...it looked like it was years later and I was busy in my study very occupied in my work,turns out I'll be running my own firm... I saw a young teenage girl coming in my office she was calling me mom,so I guess it's my daughter....she's a spoilt brat and I was not entertaining her so she wanted to move out and go stay with you...shs told me no wonder you divorced me I'm cruel and I killed her grandmother"

He sits up, I sit up too he's looking at me terrified

Quinton:"what does that mean?"

Me:"I think after I kill your mom... you will divorce me, leaving me to raise the kids by myself,I'll become this bitter workaholic woman that my kids will hate"

Quinton:"that's it? That's the future?"

I nod

Quinton:"something is off about this future....these diamonds are lying to you... I'd never divorce you,ever"

Me:"even if I kill your mother?"

He keeps quiet

Me:"thought so"

Quinton:"there has to be something we can do to stop this?"

Me:"I don't know Q"

He pulls me to sit on him

As he has his back against the couch

Quinton:"we can't let all these things happen bub....we need to stick with each other no matter what"

Me:"I don't think it's up to us"

We hug and just hold each other tight

Quinton:"they'd have to kill me to separate me from you"

Me:"Quinton...if you still run away from your problems...and go beating up people... I really don't see us surviving this bumpy journey"

Quinton:"I'll learn to handle our problems differently... please,ask the diamonds to change the future please"

Me:"I don't know if I can"

Quinton:"talk to Bella..just do anything,we can't not raise our kids together...we can't stop loving each other"

Me:"I'll talk to Bella...but baby we also have to talk to God"

Quinton:"whatever it takes to save our marriage"

We stay in that position for a long while with our hearts beating against each other through our chests

He picks me up as he stands and we head upstairs to the bedroom,he throws me gently

on the bed and gets on top of me..we make sweet loving the whole night

"Daughter"

I get up I find myself in this peaceful beautiful park

"Daughter"

The clouds move closer to the ground they open shaped like a big door and through them comes a bright light blinding my eyes so I cover them

Me:"dad?"

"I am Jehovah, your holy father"

I cannot believe my ears

There's a man shadow standing at the far end without the mist of the clouds

Me:"G God?"

"My child... your heart is broken,your spirit is shattered... you are giving up"

Me:"I've been fighting for so long but nothing good ever lasts in my life"

"That's the problem... you have been fighting..don't you know the war is yours but the battle is mine"

Me:"I know that now...and I have been praying and surrendering to you "

"And I have heard your cries... everything will be okay"

Me:"how? The diamonds has showed the future"

"The diamonds shows you the future the devil has in store for you... you need to fully trust and believe in me"

Me:"I fully trust and believe in you..and I want you to take over"

"I am the Almighty God, live in my presence and be devout,I will establish my covenant between me and you and I will multiply you greatly"

Me:"Genesis 17 verse 1 and 2"

"But the doctor....

"Believe"

Me:"I believe"

"You will only bare children from your husband and noone else"

Me:"But I'm pregnant for another man...will I loose this baby?"

"You will suffer no more pain... you will only bare children for your husband and noone else!"

With that said he disappears

"Listen to the little voice in your pure heart and you can change your future"

I open my eyes to be met by Quinton's mesmerizing eyes, he smiles at me

Quinton:"that peace and glow on your face while you were asleep....I hope you were dreaming about me"

I chuckle

He gets up..

Quinton:" I was about to go downstairs to make breakfast when I saw a woman cleaning so I quickly ran back here... what the hell is she doing here?"

I laugh at his terrified face

Me:"that's Kyle's new nanny..she's a good woman,I trust her"

I sighs on relief

Quinton:"man..she scared the shit out of me,I'm thinking how the fuck did she get in

cause I sure as hell didn't open for anyone"
Me:"she slept over,she was in the guest room"
Quinton:"ohh okay.... you did good getting a nanny,we can't keep dropping him off his granny's house...and she's the last person I trust after what you told me"
Me:"we can change the future babe"
He raises his brows
Quinton:"serious?"
Me:"yes,it's been confirmed"
Quinton:"what do we do?"
Me:"we just sit back relax and let God handle it"
Quinton (laughs):"I love the amount of faith you have in your God....but bub,this is serious"
I look at him shocked, he still doesn't really believe..."thatneeds to change"
Me:"I'm serious Q...we have to let him fight our battles,we can't face the devil on our own"
He chuckles shaking his head
Quinton:"I'll go check on my baby...you join us for breakfast,then we could talk about a serious way to get through this"
He gets off the bed then throw my phone next to me
Quinton:"call Bella...she always has the answers"
He kisses my lips then walks out leaving me shattered
Looks like he will make this harder than I thought...how do I get him to believe?

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 14

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

After freshening up and getting ready for class I head downstairs to find Kyle chilling by

himself on the floor,we should really start putting baby proof things around this house this child is starting to move around too much. I get to the kitchen to find Mrs Mohale leaning against the kitchen counter waiting for the water in the kettle

Me(wide smile):"morning mah"

Her:"good morning madam"

I laugh

Me:"oh.. please you making me sound like some old woman... please Lisa will do"

Her:"okay then... Lisa, how are you this morning?"

Me:"I'm awesome... you?"

Her:"mmh... you do look much better than yesterday...no offence"

I laugh a lil

Me:"I feel much better...my husband came back home"

Her:"I noticed.... I also heard"

She shys away and pour the boiling water in a cup

Me:"you heard us talking?"

Her:"and that too"

Ohh darn it! I block my face in embarrassment

Me:"oh my gosh.. I'm so sorry about that"

She giggles

Her:"it's okay.. you were not too loud"

Me:"yohh I'm so embarrassed mah...mmmh"

Her:"I'm glad it happened... look now you glowing and I can finally see your true happy smile... instead of yesterday's tears"

I blush

Me:"yeah...he does have that effect on me... where is he anyway...(laughs)...he was so terrified when he was about to come downstairs and saw a stranger he doesn't know cleaning he's house"

She laughs

Her:"he came down whistling,he saw me then ran back up the stairs"

We crack up even more

"Care to share the joke?"

He snakes his arms around me from behind

Me:"nothing....no joke here"

Her:"can I count you for a cup of tea or coffee?"

Quinton:"nah I'm good thanks"

I move his hands from me, he goes towards the fridge

Me:"I would love me some apple duncked in chocolate syrup... mmmh"

They look at me weirdly

Me:"what...it's one hella mean combo y'all should try it"

I take an apple and start cutting it ten take some syrup and cover the apples up

Quinton:"where did the apples go?"

Mah laughs

Me:"they right here"

I take a piece and put it in my mouth and it tastes like glory

Me:"mmmmh....love bug you have to try it"

Quinton:"this water will be just fine thanks"

He looks at my bowl disgusted as he drinks his water

Me:"Mah..come on.. you'll love it"

Mah:"no thanks,tea will be good"

Me:"mxm... y'all don't know heaven"

Quinton:"that's not good for your health... keep eating like that..girl heaven is going to know you"

Me:"haters be hating"

I finish my snack up,they wall out the kitchen leaving me there

I dish up breakfast for myself and go seat by the lounge with everyone else

Mah:"Lisa..can I go home today, I need changing clothes"

Me:"yes,I'm not working today so after all my classes I'll come straight home and I'll take you home"

Quinton:"or Kyle and I can take her home early since today we having a father son day out....mah here won't be needed much"

Me:"oh.. that's even better.... wait... y'all having a father son day without me?"

Quinton:"yeah...last time I checked you were a mother?"

Me:"mxm...it's fine, y'all go without me,ndzonibamba"

Mah:"let the boys have fun hawu"

Quinton:"yah..tell her mah..it's daddy's time now,we have to have the father son talk now"

I look at him with my brows up

Me:"the talk? Quinton..do you know how old this baby is?"

Quinton:"you have to start them at an early age"

We burst into laughter

Me:"wow.. I give up with you..let me get going before I hear anymore madness"

I get up

Quinton:"I'll take you to school...we gonna need the car"

Me:"okay,go get dressed then"

Quinton:"I'm dressed"

He's wearing his pj pants and a vest

Me:"you not going with me looking like that"

Quinton:"haa bub... I'm not even going to get out the car"

Me:"the passenger door remember...you'll have to open from outside"

He huffs

Quinton:"they'll understand it's still early in the morning"

I give him the look

Quinton:"I'll be right back"

He runs upstairs

Mah(laughing):"is your husband always like that?"

Me:"almost all the time"

Mah:"I've never seen so much love in a man's eyes.... I can even feel the love you have for each other"

I just smile

Mah:"you are blessed"

Me:"thank mah"

Mah:"you can call me Vic"

Her full name is Victoria

Me:"I like mah better"

Mah:"suit yourself then"

Me(shouts):" I hope you not taking a bubble bath up there!!!"

"I'll be down in a sec!! Have you seen my gym tank top!!"

Shit,it's dirty I was wearing it yesterday

Me:"NO!! Just wear something else...hurry up Q I'll be late!!"

"I can't find my favourite briefs!!"

Eish kinda wore those too..hey can't blame me for missing him

Me:"Quinton you have a bunch of clothes..just get dressed and let's get going already!!"

"Argh Fine!"

I go kiss my sleeping baby and give her to Vic so she can go put him to bed

Quinton:"let's go"

He comes down wearing shorts and a black plain shirt and his Adidas pushes

We head out to the car,and head to school

Quinton:"ayibo babe... you sure you haven't seen my top and undies?"

Me:"they in the laundry okay"

Quinton:"what are they doing in the laundry cause last time I checked they were clean"

Me:"I kinda wore them yesterday"

He turns his head slowly looking at me squinting his eyes

Quinton:"ohh so we share clothes now?"

Me:"what's yours is mine hubby"

Quinton:"ohh okay... I get it now"

I look at him he has a silly smirk on his face looking at the road

Me:"I wonder what you thinking of,you little devil you"

Quinton:"nothing.... nothing at all"

He does an evil laugh

I burst into laughter

Me:"oh no..I'm so scared"

Quinton:"but seriously... you shouldn't be"

I stick my tongue out at him and turn up the volume of the radio... I know this song..so

I'll sing along to it

Me(singing):"what if I couldn't speak

Quinton:"what if I couldn't eat"

Surprisingly he knows it too

Me:"what if I couldn't move"

Him& I:"would you still love me?"

Me:"what if my body ached"

Quinton:"and I always made you late"

Me:"what if I couldn't wait"

Him&I:"would you still love me?"

Me:"would you love me when it's hard"

Quinton:"and our lives falling apart"

Me:"if the things that we once knew are Loong gone"

Quinton:"if our blue skies turn to grey"

Me:"and my memory fades away"

Me:"would you still love me?"
Quinton:"would you still love me?"
Me:"what if I'm complicated"
Quinton:"always leaving you frustrated"
Me:"nothing ever went quite right"
Us:"would you still love me?"
Me:"wish I can let you know what the future holds...it's a promise I can't make"
Quinton:"through the good and bad, happy and sad..love's a risk that we must take"
Me:"would you love me when it's hard"
Quinton:"and our lives falling apart"
Me:"if the things that we once knew are long gone"
Quinton:"if our blue skies turn to grey"
Me:"and my memory fades away"
Us:"would you still love me?"
Quinton:"would love me when it's hard"
Me:"and our lives falling apart"
Quinton:"if the things that we once knew are loong goone..."
Me:"if our blue skies turn to grey..."
Quinton:"and my memory fades away.."
Us:"would you still love me....Ohhh would you still love me.."
Me:"if I could speak again I'd ask you to remember when we first met and fell in love..."
Quinton:"we were so young and dumb but our love was so strong..."
Me:"memories of those late nights our feuleess fights..."
Quinton&I:"if I could speak again I'd ask you to remember when..we first met and fell in love...we were so you and dumb but our love was so strong"
Me:"memories of those late nights and our feuleess fights.."
Quinton:"would you love me when it's hard..."
Me:"and our lives falling apart.."
Quinton:"if the things that we once knew were long gone..."
Me:"if our blue skies turn to grey..."
Quinton:"and my memory fades away.."
Us:"would you still love me?"
Me:"Would you still love mee?"
Quinton:"would you still love me?"
We look at each other
Us:"would you still loooove meeeee?"
I wipe my tears...this song really touched me...it made me think of the things that we've been through,the things we going through and the things we still going to go through
He takes my hand
Quinton:"I'll always love you bub"
Me:"no matter what?"
Quinton:"till death do us part"
Me:"I'll always love you too"
Quinton:"we meeting Bella today right?"
Me:"yes..that's if she's free...she has a one year old daughter and a husband remember"

Quinton:"yeah...but we need her to tell us how to change what you saw"

Me:"so it's just me that you don't believe?"

The car comes to halt he gets off and comes around to open for me

Quinton:"enjoy the rest of your day.. I love you"

I smile

Quinton:"kiss me"

I get closer to him he wraps his arms around me and we share a kiss, I hear girls making nasty comments

"Bafuna ukbukwa manje laba?"(they trying to show off)

"Abafanelani nje"(they don't even look good together)

Quinton:"tsek sfebe....wena ufanelana nabani unje?"(fuck off bitch...and who do you look good with looking like that?)

They keep quiet and pick up the pace

Me:"you shouldn't mind them love bug"

Quinton:"brainless cocksucking hoes"

He's really mad

Me:"calm down babe...they always like that,they find anything to make some else feel small"

He looks at me with his one brow raised

Quinton:"they always say nasty things to you"

Yes..but I won't tell him that ... I always get nasty stares from young girls when I'm with him even at the mall but I ignore,girls did used to throw themselves at him after all,

Me:"No...but they just like attention"

Quinton:"if any of them bitches trouble you.... you tell me okay?"

I nod

Quinton:"cause if I find out on my own all hell will break loose for them and you too"

My eyes widen

Me:"you gonna hit me?"

He chuckles

Quinton:"I'd never lay my hands on you in that way....I'll let Mr B do the hitting"

I blush

Me:"mxm...let me get to class,it's gonna be one long ass day... I'm tired already"

Quinton:"call me when you done"

Me:"okay"

We hug, I peck his lips and off I go.

The day goes by slower than I thought

We now waiting for our last class which is a tutorial

Me:"guys I'm so exhausted, when is this day ending vele?"

Thelma:"tell me about it..I miss my man"

Me:"ncwaaoo things between you and Tsepo are going great I see"

Thelma:"yeah...he's been good to me"

Me:"that's good girl...you two make a cute couple..hope to see shine on that finger soon"

She laughs

Thelma:"Tsepo... going on one knee? Hahahaa...is it even possible"

I laugh

Me:"he'd surprise you kanti"

I look at yonela who's busy smiling at her phone, everyday she's been like this since we got back to school

Me:"I'm starting to get very curious about that smile"

Thelma:"me too hey"

She can't even hear us

Me:"SNAKE!!!"

They both startle and run off

"Where!!? Where!?"

I burst into laughter

They come back when they noticed me laughing my ass out

Yonela:"don't play like that Lisa"

Me:"at least I finally got your attention"

Thelma:"well you gonna get my punch across your evil face"

She's still holding her chest trying to calm herself down

I snatch yonela's phone

Me:"what are you looking at here anyway"

She tries getting it from me..we now fighting for it

Yonela:"bring back my phone!!"

Me:"what are you hiding!?"

I run away a bit and look at it...it's chats with Aidan, I gasp and look at her..she grabs her phone angrily from me then we go sit back down

Thelma:"what was it?"

I shrug my shoulders

Me:"sorry about that Nella"

Nella:"you had no right snatching my phone like that"

Me:"I'm sorry... I didn't know"

She sighs

Nella:"it's cool...might as well tell yall now"

Me:"you don't have to"

Thelma:"usile yaz...just cause you saw it already...talk wena gal"

Me:"uyazthanda indaba yoh!"(you so nosey)

Thelma:"says the phone snatcher"

We all laugh

Yonela:"okay...well I've been hitting it off with Aidan for the past few weeks"

We gasp

Thelma:"Aidan...the O'Brien Aidan!?"

Me:"No the Zuma one"

Yonela laugh and she rolls her eyes at me

Yonela:"anyway, we've had the sexual flirty vibes for a while now and we only started exploring them on Lisa's wedding day....we were flirting so much,that we both couldn't take it anymore and we kinda disappeared,we kissed only though...but after that we've been fucking"

Thelma is holding on her chest whole I'm holding on mouth,we both as shocked as hell with our mouths hang open and eyes wide

Yonela:"don't judge me"

I close my mouth and swallow spit

Me:"is it serious?"

Thelma:"and you only noooww telling us this!"

Yonela:"it's not serious.....(looks at Thelma)...I wasn't going to tell you noooww I'd it wasn't for Lisa so shut up"

Me:"if it's not serious....what is it?"

Yonela:"we just playing"

Thelma (claps once):"another Troy!"

We burst into laughter,this girl though,she's so forward!

Yonela:"uyaphapha yoh!"

Me:"mmhh...girl, I know Aidan, you probably not the only girl he's playing with...so please be careful.. protection always please don't make the same.... I mean..just be careful"

Thelma:"the same what?"

Me:"nothing"

Thelma:"you never used protection with Troy?"

Yonela:"shut up Thelma.....(looks at me)....is she right?"

Wow really now?

Me:"I guess y'all bound to find out anyway"

Thelma:"if you gonna say you pregnant.....(looks at yonela).... I want my hundred bucks"
My mouth hangs open..eeh?

Me:"well...yea I'm pregnant"

Yonela:"what?"

Thelma:"my hundred bucks?"

She stretches her hand to yonela,she takes it out from her purse and reluctantly gives her

Thelma:"thank you... you see I knew you were pregnant, you started gaining a bit of weight"

Yonela:"I just thought you were too happy or something"

Thelma:"well... congratulations to you and your husband"

Yonela:"congratulations girl"

They get up and we hug

Me:"thank you guys...just one problem though"

Them:"what?"

Me:"it's not Quinton's"

They gasp shocked... I explain everything to them

Yonela:"damn..this is sad.. how did Quinton take it?"

Me:"not so well..he disappeared for five days and beat Troy up"

Thelma:"yohh hectic.. y'all supposed to be happy now damn you've been through so much"

Me:"one thing I know is that God hasn't forsaken us... we'll get through this and we'll come back stronger than before"

Yonela:"I love your faith"

Me:"Nella...do you love Aidan?"

She keeps quiet then shakes her head

Me:"cause if you do, you better let him know before one of y'all gets hurt in this game"

y'all playing"

Yonela:"don't worry Lisa,I love him,but not in that way"

She's lying to herself

Me:"I know you scared of getting hurt,but the more you do this,the more it will hurt when something happens and you never get the chance to tell him how you really feel"

Thelma:"being in love is scary at this time,but trust me, if the feeling is mutual it's the best risk you'll ever take"

Yonela:"what if it's not mutual...what if he doesn't feel the same,and that ruins everything"

Me:"it's worth the try"

We talked about another random stuff until it was time for our last class.

After a long day it's finally home time!

We go our separate ways I stand by the old waiting spot I used to wait for Quinton after class

I first call Bella before I call Q to come pick me up

"Lisa"

Me:"Bella...how are you"

"I'm good...and yourself"

Me:"I'm good...I was wondering if will you have some free time to spare, Quinton and I would like to come see you"

"Is everything okay?"

Me:"not really...we just need some guidance on something serious...can you see us?"

"Okay,I'll come to your place around six...if that's okay?"

Me:"that will be perfect...thank you"

"See you later babe"

Me:"love you"

I hang up then call Quinton to come fetch me

Me:"love bug"

"Bub.... I'm already there"

I look at the road and he's car is coming towards me

Me:"mmh perfect timing...(whispers)...such a turn on"

"That dress you wearing....(whispers)...such a turn on"

I giggle as he parks right in front of me,he gets out and comes open for me....

Me:"mmh gentleman.... I'm so wet"

Quinton:"wet??...shit I'm hard as rock"

We get in the car and drive off,the sexual tension is too much

Me:"I called Bella... she'll come to us around six"

Quinton:"perfect...gives us exactly two hours to play"

I laugh

Me:"so how was daddy son day?"

Quinton:"awesome...you so missed out"

I sulk

Me:"unfair"

Quinton:"but it was boring without you"

I smile

Me:"really!"

Quinton:"Don't make me lie twice now woman"

I burst into laughter

Me:"uyandhlanyela"(you crazy)

We get home,we already into each other's throats kissing as we enter the door, my legs wrapped around his waist

I pull out

Me:"wait...where's mah Vic?"

Quinton:"I left them taking a nap,I'm sure they still asleep"

He pulls me back to his lips, I take off his shirt...we break the kiss he pulls up my dress and throws it on the stairs as we head upstairs we kiss again as I'm trying to pull down his pants and he's unhooking my bra, he pulls down his pants using his legs and feet and I take off the bra...we finally get to the room, he throws me on the bed,I jump up on my knees and take off his briefs with much excitement he takes off my panty,he kisses me down my neck

Me:"forget about foreplay and fuck me pleeease!!"

I shout, he looks up at me with an amused grin

Quinton:"with fucking pleasure"

He thrusts me and moans voluntery escape my lips

Me(breathless):"what's the time?"

He checks his phone

Quinton:"five minutes to six"

Me:"Bella!"

Quinton:"wait,sengzochama"(I'm cumin)

He releases inside me we both moan same time

He pulls out

Me:"let's go take a quick shower"

We run to the bathroom and take a shower,we finish up and get dressed and head downstairs,I find Mah cooking

Me:"Mah you don't have to do that all the time"

Mah:"I don't mind,I love cooking"

And she makes a mean dish

Me:"I'll let it slide since I'm always tired... I feel like I'm already nine months and heavy the way my body is sore"

Mah:"shame, I feel sorry for you when you reach that time"

Me:"sorry?...is it that bad?"

She laughs

Mah:"I'm kidding...it's not bad at all"

I squint my eyes at her

Me:"mmmh yeah right"

I sit with her at the kitchen and help her here and there while Quinton is in his office

Me:"you can go home tonight mah and it's still early"

I check the time it's half past six

Me:"whoa but it is dangerous around this time"

Mah:"it's fine,I have a special Uber driver that can pick me up, he'll drope right inside the gate"

Me:"you sure?"
Mah:"yes...and besides you and your husband need the space"
I look down,eish damn you Quinton for making me scream so loud
Mah:"don't be ashamed, y'all are newly weds it's normal"
If only she knew it's been like this even before newly weds...we just loud as hell,we should get sound proofs now
After a while her Uber gets here the same time as Bella's car
She leaves and I welcome Bella inside
Me:"thought you were not coming anymore"
Bella:"is six exactly six in South Africa?"
I laugh
Me:"you right,I'm overreacting"
I hug her and we peck lips then I lead her to the lounge
Me:"let me go let him know you here"
Bella:"okay"
I walk up to his office, I knock
"If you sexy, come in"
This guy though
I look behind me and Bella giggles
I shake me head and head inside
He looks up at me
Quinton:"hello sexy"
Me:"hey handsome"
Quinton:"come here"
I go around to him,he turns his chair to face me he pulls my hands making me sit on top of him facing him with my legs on either side
Me:"Bella is here"
Quinton:"let's have a quickie fast fast"
Me:"ayibo Q..we just had sex a few minutes ago"
Quinton:"please...I'll just go in out in out and we done"
I giggle
I wrap my arms around his neck and lay my forehead on his
Me:"No Q....Bella is waiting"
Quinton:"I'll be fast baby"
I can feel his dick is hard under me
He touches my punani
Me:"Quinton....stop"
Quinton:"you mean stop it you like it?"
I laugh and get off his crazy ass
Me:"let's go"
He gets up and we head to the lounge with him keep spanking me
Me(whispers):"stop it"
Quinton (whispers):"I like it!"
I giggle until we finally reach the lounge,and we sit down on the couch opposite her
Quinton:"good evening Bella"
She has a big smile on her face

Bella:"evening Quinton"

Me:"can I get you something to drink"

Bella:"yes please"

I get up and pour us some juice

I serve Bella hers

Bella:"thanks"

I serve Quinton

Quinton:"guqa ngamadolo mawu serva umkhwenyana"(go on your knees when serving your husband)

I look at him as if he's crazy

Quinton:"then you say, uyayithanda iJuice baba?"(would you like juice daddy?)

Bella is laughing her guts out

I do as he says, I go down on my knees and look up at him

Me:"uyayithanda iJuice baba?"

Quinton:"you don't look me in the eyes woman"

I look down

Me:"ngyaxolisa baba....(looking down).. uyayithanda iJuice baba?"

Quinton:"Yebo ngyayithanda nkoskazi"

He takes it I get up and sit...we all in stitches

Bella:"how do you live like this Lisa? I'm sure you have hiccups everyday from laughter"

Me:"I can't deal"

Quinton just smiles drinking his juice

We all settle down

Quinton:"let's get to the reason you here"

Bella:"oh yes,why am I here?"

Everyone is now serious

I sigh

Me:"well... yesterday,the diamonds showed me the future"

Bella:"wow...okay, that's good,you can finally use your seeing powers"

I tell her everything I saw

Bella:"this does not sound right at all"

Quinton:"that's the exact same thing I thought... I mean it's quite impossible for me to ever hate Lisa"

Bella:"this is confusing"

Me:"it is"

Quinton:"that's why we called you...do you think there's anything we can do to change this?"

Bella:"I won't lie to you... I seriously don't know"

Quinton:"you don't know?"

Me:"she human too Quinton,there's some things she won't know"

He shakes his head

Quinton:"you always knew everything...now that we need you the most...you don't know?"

Bella:"I'm sorry"

Me:"Quinton..calm down would you,now....last night I had a dream"

Bella:"please do tell"

Me:"the holy spirit revealed himself to me....he told me he's heard my cries,all I have to do is pray even harder...he told me the diamonds showed me a future that the devil has in store for me"

Bella:"and anything that is planned by the devil... can be defeated by the Lord"

Me(smiles):"exactly....we just have to be strong in prayer and faith, go to church often and praise the Lord"

Bella:"that's probably what I would've told you as I have always been telling you Lisa...pray,with your husband, y'all need to protect your future and family from the evil schemes of the serpent"

Me:"we need to do it together baby.... I can't do it by myself...let's fight the devil together...on our knees"

Bella:"you need to do it together cause this is both of y'all's future"

Me:"yeah..we can do it... right love bug?"

He looks at me

Quinton:"but I'm not a believer bub"

Bella:"one step at a time you'll get there"

Me:"we need to do this baby....it's the only way"

Quinton:"I'm forced to be something I'm not? For the sake of our marriage?"

Bella:"you got married in a church...why? Because you believed God was giving you his blessings to take this woman as your wife didn't you? You listened to the pastor and said you vows and he binded y'all with the holy power invested in him... you believed then didn't you?....if you were not a believer as you say,you would've just went to court"

He looks at Bella then back at me

Quinton:"I don't know about this"

Me:"Quinton..."

Quinton:"you can't force me Lisa"

He gets up and heads back to his office

We look at each other

Bella:"don't worry... I see God is at work with you now... y'all won't need me anymore....just pray for him, pray and put all your faith in him... everything shall fall into place...A promise made by the Lord is Yes and Amen"

Me:"thank you for coming"

Bella:"your husband just needs time...don't force it,just pray for God to show him the way"

I nod

Bella:"let me get going"

Me:"thanks once again"

We hug and she makes her way out,I close the door behind her... I attempt to go to his office,but I turn and make my way upstairs...gotta start praying now.

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 15

-
-
-
-
-

👑 QUINTON 👑

-
-
-
-
-

TWO WEEKS LATER

-
-
-

I'm buried into a bunch of work, I'm fully hands on, on the family business for now, I've made part of it legit. I'm more focused on the legit side since I have Kyle now, Lisa is my wife and we will have more kids, I don't wanna draw any kind of danger towards my family, while Clyde and Aidan take care of the illegal side but most of the time they call for ideas and help and I have to be there for most meetings.

We will be meeting up with some drug lord Russian today. it's a big deal. I just hope everything goes smoothly and they don't try any funny business, it's a lot of money we'll be giving them for those drugs, they have the best around the world.

I don't drugs but Clyde is the one who tastes them, he's not an addict but he does them once in a while, I don't know how he doesn't get addicted, I guess not everyone who does drugs becomes an addict same goes for alcohol.

I get a call from the office telephone

Me: "speaking?"

"Yo dude... I got the cash ready for tomorrow"

Me: "good, you have to come over, so we can talk about this"

"Yeah man... I don't trust those people man"

Me: "I don't trust any of the gangsters we do business with, but you don't see me chickening out"

"Mxm man I'm not not chickening out"

Me: "sounds like it to me"

"I'll see you there in a few"

Me: "see you later.. chicken"

"I'll crack your bones when I get there"

Me: "uuuhhhhh I'm so so scared"

"You better be Nx arse"

He hangs up, I laugh and put the phone down.

I get out my office and head to the kitchen and it smells amazing as always, Mah knows her stuff, she cooks a mean meal

Me:"mmmh mah,I'm starving"

Mah:"almost done, you done with work"

Me:"yeap"

Mah:"so you always work from home?"

Me:"Nah not always,but most of the time"

Mah:"ohh so you do go out"

Me:"yeah,but when I do I go for a week or two"

Mah:"mh... looks like you and your wife are very work driven"

Me:"yeah,but looks like Lisa will be worse...I mean she doing a not so easy job at one of the biggest firms in South Africa and at the same time she's a full time student,mother and wife...yoh that girl is too ambitious for my liking"

Mah:"she needs to tone it down,now that she's pregnant she can't be overworking herself so much"

Me:"maybe she'll listen to you,I've tried that talk but it just went in one ear out the other"

She laughs

Mah:"but then again if she's happy and feels like she can handle it....there's nothing much we can do"

Me:"yeap....but I miss her though"

Mah:"you live together nje"

I sigh

Me:"I know,but it feels like she's hardly here, she goes to school then work then gets home really late....on weekends she works till late,if she does get a day off, she'll be stuck in the study busy with her school work,then she spends another two hours everyday in our closet praying"

Mah:"in the closet"

Me:"yeah she says its peaceful in there and it's quite big"

Mah:"a praying woman...you very lucky"

I fake a smile and look away

Me:"yeah but she's always tired now.... been a while since I got.... never mind"

Mah:"I understand that she's always busy...but have you told her how you feel?"

Me:"I have complained a few times but she never took it seriously"

Mah:"that's cause you doing it wrong...you better start talking to your wife tell her how you feel...or else another woman will come and do to you what she's supposed to be doing and you will only realise your mistake late because.....afterall you are a man"

I think about what she just said

Mah:"I'm so sorry I didn't mean to intrude in your business"

Me:"No no...it's cool,I'm glad you just told me this, I didn't think of it that way,and you right, mah you just made me realise how I was going to destroy our marrige without even realising it...I'll talk to her"

Mah:"yes..that's good, communication is key... I would hate so much love going to waste,don't let the devil Rob you of your happiness"

Her words strike right through my heart giving me goosebumps.....

That's a weird feeling...??

Me:"yeah...yeh, excuse me"

I head out the back door, I need some fresh air, I take a walk around the big lawn.

To be honest, I'd do anything to save my future with Lisa, but when religion is involved. I don't know. I mean I'm not a saint I'm a bad person and I do bad things to bad people...if I were to choose Christianity, there's alot of things that would be expected from me to stop doing, and I'd

have to be this different perfect person who lives to please God, this religion thing will make me change who I am....and I don't think I'm ready for that, I wanna say fuck whenever the fuck I want without holding my mouth because that's a bad thing to say as a Christian.. besides that, I don't wanna pretend to accept Christianity just for Lisa and fake to be something I'm not.

"There you are"

I look at her my goddess walking up to me as I'm chilling at the porch, I throw the cigarette off. She sits on my lap and hugs me, I hold her back, we stay like that and not break the hug

Me:"how was work"

Lisa:"hectic as usual"

Me:"you early today"

Lisa:"yeah... Troy didn't have to go to court today"

Me:"mmh okay, aren't you tired"

Lisa:"I am... let's go eat them go to bed"

Me:"yeah, is your baby awake yet?"

Lisa:"yeah we just came back from dropping off Mah Mohale, then I put him to sleep....you've been sitting out here for quite a while"

Me:"yeah, kinda got lost in my thoughts"

Lisa:"mind to sneak me in"

Me:"yeeaa...no"

She giggles, I pull out from the hug and kiss her blissful lips until she pulls out

Lisa:"let's head inside"

We get up

Lisa:"piggy ride?"

Me:"jump on missy"

She giggles I bend a lil and she jumps on, she spansks my butt

Lisa:"faster faster horsie!!"

I laugh and run towards the house with her giggling like a five year old holding on me tight, we reach the house I drop her

Me:"your ticket ends here"

Lisa:"just like that... didn't even get to the kitchen"

Me:"your huge as was about to break my poor skinny ass"

She bursts into laughter

We dish up and eat over light conversation

Lisa:"ayibo love bug"

I raise one brow as I look at her

Me:"z'khiphani?"

She laughs

Lisa:"mmmh you should talk Zulu often babe"

I look at her and she's looking at me with those bedroom eyes lusting me

Me:"uyathanda yin indoda mayikhuluma?"

She bites her bottom lip as her eyes squint looking at me up and down

Lisa:"ewe ndiyathanda"

Me:"isXhosa sona asikcazi nah?"

Her smile widens

Lisa:"damn babe I don't know which one turns me on more...but I definitely creamed my panty"

I laugh at how horny she looks

Me:"weren't you going to tell me something?"

Lisa:"eish,now I even forgot what I wanted to say"

Me:"hlampe mangak'bhebha unga khumbula?"

She gasp shocked as she looks at me

Lisa:"Quinton!"

That came out as a whisper but I don't think it were supposed to so I remove her half eaten food away and put it on the table and mine too. I pull her hand and lead her to come sit on me

Me:"come sit on my dick baby"

Lisa:"you so blunt today"

Me:"ain't I always"

Lisa:"yeah you are..."

She adjusts herself on me I move my back to not lean against the couch so she can wrap her legs around me, once she's in position she wraps her arms around me,my dick is hard already as her nunu feels so warm on me

Lisa:"oh yah...now I remember"

Me(smirks):"I wonder who influenced that"

She looks down between us

Lisa:"thanks Mr B"

We laugh

Me:"talk to me bub"

Lisa:"heee did you know Yonela and Aidan have a thing going on?"

Me:"oh she finally told..... I mean...(acting shocked)...waaaaat? Since when?"

She squints her eyes

Lisa:"oh so you knew"

Me:"nooooo like I had absolutely no idea at all...no clue whatsoever"

Lisa:"how stupid do you think I am?"

I make a thinking face she hits my chest

We laugh out loud

Me:"you not stupid bub...okay I knew ft quite a while now,I promised Aidan I wouldn't tell and Yonela also made me swear not to tell you...so respecting their privacy I didn't"

Lisa:"didn't even whisper to me a bit... I wouldn't have told her I knew"

Me:"I keep my promises bub"

Lisa:"I'm your wife you shouldn't keep secrets from me"

Me:"haha nice try,but come on"

Lisa:"I'm kidding, I saw them from a long time that they wanted each other, I was just waiting for the day they finally stop ignoring the feelings"

Me:"but they say they just having fun,no feelings"

Lisa:"oh please,Yonela loves Aidan,but she's just afraid he won't feel the same and it would ruin their little game"

Me:"really? Well Aidan feels the same way,he's also scared of love"

Lisa:"really?"

Me:"yeah,I had a talk with him the day I found out about them"

Lisa:"do you think we should...."

Me(interrupts):"oh hell no...Lisa stay out of their business.. they'll figure it out themselves,let them find each other and things go the way they destined to go"

She sighs

Lisa:"you right, let's let destiny take its place"

Me:"yes..and do you know what destiny wants right now?"

Lisa(smirks):"what?"

Me:"it wants Mr B buried deep inside Miss M"

She moans as she brings her head closer and we kiss, I unbutton her shirt I was about to take it off when she pulls out

Lisa:"shit"

Me:"what"

I say still sliding down her shirt but she pulls it up

Lisa:"there's a report I need to do for work and I have to do research for school...sorry love bug,but I need to get working all these things are due this week"

Me:"but...I'll be quick bub"

I kiss my babies (boobs)

Lisa:"Q... I would love to but..."

I continue caressing her and kissing her, she tries moving my head from her breasts

Lisa:"Q.....stop.."

I continue

Lisa:"Quinton..."

I unhook her bra

She roughly removes my head from her

Lisa:"I said stop geez"

I look at her in disbelief,she looks so irritated,am I disgusting to her now?

She looks at me as her face changes to regret

Lisa:"Q... I didn't mean to.."

Me:"get off me"

Lisa:"Quinton....."

Me:"get off me dammit"

She gets off me

I stand up she blocks my way

Lisa:"Quinton...wait,I'm sorry, please let me explain"

My anger builds up

Me:"if I fucken disgust you just say it!

If I don't turn you on anymore,say it...is it because I'm a heathen? Is your God making you loose interest in me?"

Lisa (whispers):"Quinton...don't say that"

Me:"it's true,ever since you've been this prayer woman, you give me less of your time, I give you your space to do your work all the time,I try not to be a demanding husband and let you do what you love cause I would never expect you to change for me,cause I fell in love with the person you are....not the person I want you to be,or the person I think God would want you to be"

I attempt to walk but she attacks me with a hug, I try pushing her away but I'm too weak as heartache has drained me,I reluctantly hold her back,I wanna break down and cry but my pride won't let me

Lisa:"we need to talk... everything that you feeling in your heart, we going to talk about it"

I pull out of the hug and we look at each other

Lisa:"let me go put away these dishes you can head to the room in the meantime"

Surprisingly I obey her and head upstairs, I take off my clothes and put on my pj pants only then sit on the bed

I go through my phone then end up calling Clyde

"I'm by the gate,open up"

I hang up, looks like I called him in time

I head downstairs and bump into Bub going upstairs she already switched off the lights

Lisa:"and where you off to?"

Me:"opening for Clyde"

Lisa:"oh okay"

She carries on with her way I head towards the door I open the gate then unlock the door then make my way to the lounge and wait for him on the couch,after a while he makes his way in, locks the door then proceeds in

Clyde:"sup man"

Me:"sup"

We rub hands and bump shoulders then sit

Me:"where's Aidan?"

Clyde:"he said he'll meet us at the airport tomorrow morning"

Me:"bet he's busy shagging tonight"

Clyde:"you know your brother and pussy"

Me:"at least he's getting so....uhm where's the money?"

He looks at me with a frown but as usual doesn't get into my business,he puts the bag in front of me

Clyde:"that's all of it"

Me:"let's get counting...we have to double check..you know one wrong move with the Russians and we dead meat"

Clyde:"yeah yeah"

We start counting

Clyde:"so how's married life?"

I sigh

Me:"it's good I guess"

Clyde:"that doesn't motivate me at all"

I chuckle

Me:"married life is awesome man...it's just you know Lisa and I,we always going through some stuff"

Clyde:"even now?"

Me:"man... I really don't know when is this shit going to end"

Clyde:"don't worry man... y'all figure this one out too, y'all always do"

Me:"I guess you right"

He gives me a lazy side smile then pats my shoulder

I smile back

Clyde:"you know I don't trust those Russians"

And just like that our ten seconds brother moment is over

Me:"why do you say that?"

Clyde:"those people are always looking for war"

Me:"yeah but come on..who are we? They know better than to mess with us"

Clyde:"they dare try any funny things I won't hesitate to bust cap on their knuckle head asses"

We finish up counting and it's enough we talk about the game plan and what deals we wanna make with them

Me:"I think that'll be all man"

Clyde:"yeah,let's go lie down"

I show him to the guest room upstairs

Then I head to bed, I find her on her laptop inside the covers, she's too focused to notice me, I sit on my side of the bed and face her.

She looks so damn beautiful, I could stare all night.

I take off her glasses then I get her attention

Lisa: "Q.. I'm almost done, I just have to save everything.... please"

I give her back her glasses she puts them on and focuses back on her laptop.

I get bored and sleep with my back across the bed with my head on her legs. She closes the laptop and puts it on the table beside the bed and her glasses on top of it

Lisa: "I'm all yours"

Me: "you finished everything?"

Lisa: "yeah... I was just finishing off cause I started my research days ago"

Me: "ohh okay, that's good"

Lisa: "come here"

I get up and go sit next to her

Lisa: "what's bothering you?"

Me: "you"

She frowns

Lisa: "what did I do... okay, I'm sorry about earlier, I snapped at you, but I did try to tell you to stop, I needed to get some work done"

Me: "I get that, but Lisa we've only been married two months and already we have no time for each other... I hate to be the nagging or clingy or demanding husband who tells you what to do, cause I want you to be happy and do what makes you happy... but I expect one of those things to be me too, I feel neglected"

Regret and pity fills her eyes

Lisa: "I had no idea that's how you felt"

Me: "you slowly becoming that boring workaholic you saw in your future"

Lisa: "I am?"

Me: "you always stressed and glued to your laptop and when I try to relax you and do my duties as your partner, you push me away, you always tired.... I'd hate for this to continue, cause I don't want another woman offering me what my wife has... I'm not saying I'm gonna cheat, but I'm just being honest"

She bits her nail

Lisa: "I... I totally understand what you saying, I'm gonna try tone it down on the work, I'll talk to Troy, I'll make more time for you and Kyle.... I'm so sorry love bug... I didn't realize that I've been hurting your feelings in that way"

Me: "it's cool"

Lisa: "No it's not, I've been taking advantage of your good heart... you not like other husbands out there who are too demanding, you never asked me to be a house wife, you let me get a nanny for our three months old baby because you respect me, you respect my dreams and you don't control me, I'm letting another woman cook for you yet I'm your wife, another woman is cleaning your house and doing things that I should be doing as your wife... and you right, if I continue like this... another woman will end up taking care of your needs and I'll be so blinded by my busy life that when I find out I'll blame you.... Quinton, baby, I'm sorry"

Me: "it's okay Liss at least now we'll be more woke"

Lisa: "communicating really does help... thank you for telling me how you feel"

Me: "yeah, sometimes we do things without realising how it makes the other person feel"

Lisa(smiles): "if we continue like this, we'll accomplish alot"

I sigh

Me:"yeah"

She frowns again

Lisa:"is there something else bothering you?"

Me:"yes"

Lisa:"talk to me"

Silence

Me:"the whole religion thing"

Lisa:"what about it"

Me:"I don't know...."

Lisa:"but the last time we talked about that was when Bella was here, I never bought it up after or forced you to pray with me or anything"

Me:"I know... but the fact that our marriage depends on it makes me feel forced cause I love you"

Lisa:"Look Quinton,if you don't feel comfortable with this whole believing in God thing...that's cool....I can't force you to do that,ever, I'll pray for the both of us"

Me:"I mean,Lisa,I'm a sinner and I sin every single day"

Lisa:"so do I"

Me:"No..the things I do are worse... I can't be praising God then go behind closed doors and do all the wrong things I do for a living... I can't lie to myself...I can't cheat God now can I?"

Lisa:"No you can't... but being a Christian doesn't mean you have to change all in one day, you can be who you are, live the lifestyle you living, and just pray to God to protect you and help you find the right way...you don't have to force yourself, God will meet you halfway...God would never force anyone to love him, but his love for you is greater than great"

Me:"so you mean I just have to pray... I don't have to go and confess my sins and all that stuff"
She shakes her head

Lisa:"No baby, you don't have to do that... we'll only take baby steps, let's just pray...that's all, you don't have to come to church with me.. you'll just pray with me everyday before we sleep"

Me:"that's all?"

Lisa:"that's all baby....let's pray for protection, pray for survival, for strength, pray for God to win the battle with the devil who's trying to sneak up on our marriage.....let's just pray for good things babe"

Me:"I hear you"

She smiles hopefully

Lisa:"and you don't have to pray only for our marriage....you can ask God anything and I mean anything, pray for whatever you feel like needs praying for....even if it's just to ask him for your day to go smoothly"

A smile creeps on my face

Me:"okay...dear God I pray my wife gives me some pussy tonight"

She laughs and hits me playfully

Lisa:"I think he heard you love bug... I'm suddenly feeling all hot and bothered"

I smirk...fuck she's so hot when she looks at me like that, she gets on top me she puts her hands on my chest rubbing it.

She suddenly freezes I look at her and there's fear on her face

Me:"bub?"

I shake her a bit and she looks at me

Me:"what's up? Are you okay?"

Lisa:"is the business trip tomorrow?"

Me:"yeah,why?"

Lisa:"don't go"

Me:"why?"

Lisa:"something bad is going to happen"

Me:"like what?"

Lisa:"I don't know....but please don't go love bug... we still need you"

I frown she's starting to scare now

Me:"Bub...I'll be fine, everything will go smoothly I promise you"

She shakes her head

Lisa:"I can't make you stay can I?"

I shake my head

Lisa:"can we pray?"

I sigh, I guess it's a start

Me:'yeah,let's pray"

I meant it when I said I'll do anything to change that future...but it seems like it's going to be harder than I thought...but if this is a start, I can live with that

We get down on our knees we hold hands and she starts praying, I just listen to her..... I really don't know what to say to God

"Say what your heart desires son"

A small voice whispers to me

I open my eyes and Lisa is still praying

Who the hell was that?

Lisa:"Amen"

Me:"Amen"

We stand up and get in the bed covers

Lisa:"what's wrong?"

I look at her

Me:"what?"

Lisa:"you look like you just seen a ghost from the dead"

Me:"it's nothing"

Lisa:"so what did you pray for?"

Me:"Uhm... protection"

"You shall be protected"

I look around,where is that coming from.. am I going crazy.. I look at Lisa

Me:"what did you say?"

Lisa:"if that's what you asked for,that's what will be given"

Me:"even if I'm not saved?"

Lisa:"he believes in you"

Me:"you love this man don't you?"

Lisa:"you jealous?"

She smiles mischievously

Me:"a bit"

Lisa:"really?"

Me:"okay a lot"

She giggles I get on top of her and make love to her

I open my eyes, our bodies are tangled up, I move a bit and realise I'm still inside her...mmmh fuck... I look over her shoulder to look at the time on the small digital clock on the table it's 04:00am, I pull my dick out of her she moans a bit, I then untangle myself from her,she moans and turns to face the other way as she continues sleeping

I head to the bathroom to take a shower,I finish then dress up in my black jeans, black poloneck,black takkies, black bennie and a black coat and gloves

"Leaving already?"

She says in a sleepy voice I look at her

Then go towards her by the bed

Me:"yeah...have to get going bub"

Lisa:"please be careful"

Me:"I will"

Lisa:"when you coming back?"

Me:"I'll be back by tonight"

Lisa:"good,cause tomorrow I made an appointment with the doctor,I haven't been there since I found out I'm pregnant and that's not good"

Me:"can't wait"

Lisa:"you better come back in one peace...or Lord so help me boy"

I laugh

Me:"chill girl...you forget I'm the boss"

She smiles

Lisa:"I know.... I love you okay"

Me:"you loved by Quinton"

I kiss her lips and they taste heavenly

I pull out,I notice a tear dropped from her face I wipe her with my thumb

Me:"stop stressing... everything will go smoothly"

Lisa:"it has to"

She holds my hand which is caressing her face and kisses it

We gaze into each other's eyes

Me:"I'll see you tonight"

Lisa:"see you"

I kiss her forehead then head out Clyde was already waiting for me by the car, we'll be using his car

Clyde:"took you long enough"

Me:"shut up and drive"

We speed off

Me:"you guys ready?"

Aidan:"I was born ready"

I roll my eyes at him

Me:"Clyde?"

Clyde:"let's get this over and done with"

Me:"now,guy's be cool... Aidan I'm talking to you"

Aidan:"I'm chilled man"

I shake my head then we head inside

We get through the gate,it's some big house,we knock at the door,it opens and we pointed with guns

Me:"it's just us"

Guy:"who's us?"

Me:"the O'Briens"

He shuts the door right at our faces we look at each other,Clyde shakes his head,the door opens again

Guy:"only on of y'all can come in"

Me:"two of us or we going home"

Guy:"get in"

Me:"Aidan...you keep an eye out here"

Aidan:"why do I get to miss the action"

Me:"cause you last born...now be humble"

Clyde chuckles

Aidan:"mxm whatever"

He goes back to the car while Clyde and I make our way in,we walk straight, then we take left then a right then walk down the stairs and straight to the lift,the lift goes up,it stops then we get out,we followed by people carrying guns, I got my gun hidden in my coat,they couldn't feel it,they only took Clyde's.. we get to a room, looks like a office,the boss is sitted behind his huge table we sit opposite him

Me:"Mr Pavlov"

Him:"O'Brien"

This guy is creepy as hell

Him:"whiskey?"

Me &Clyde:"yeah/No"

We look at each other,Clyde just said no,is he crazy?

Him:"did you say No?"

Clyde:"yes.. I'm good"

He chuckles then looks at me

Him:"why did you bring this pot head here?"

Clyde (angrily):"who you calling a pot head motherfucker!?"

The guards on his side point their guns at us

Me:"Dude...calm down"

Clyde:"I'm not going to calm down he just insulted me"

Him:"tell your dog to keep his cool or I'll bust his head off"

I look at Clyde

Me:"calm the fuck down man,we not trying to get ourselves killed up in here"

He looks at me I give him the look,he breaths and sit back

Him:"good boy...now get out my office"

Me:"come on, Pavlov... everything is cool"

Him:"I'm not doing any deals with your hard-headed brother here...now get out"

His guards point the guns at us

.

.

💎LISA💎

.

.

My heart is painful, I keep getting this feeling like something bad is going to happen.

I get on my knees and start praying like never before, I sprinkle holy water on Quinton's clothes

in the closet,I have been doing that for quite some time now, I sprinkle the water on our bedroom and all over the house including Kyle's room and all the spare rooms and the office,I leave out no corner even on our car...

Me:"by fire by force! No devil is allowed in this house! Father protect my husband wherever he is Lord...in the name of Jesus!!

I hold up the Bible

Me:"let your word in the Bible Lord reign amongst this house father, protect your children Lord, I pray for Clyde and Aidan Lord....bring them back in one peace Lord,in the name of Jesus! In the name of Jesus!!"

I feel cramps coming from my tummy,I call Mah quick

"Hello"

Me:"Mah,please get here quick...I think I'm having the miscarriage"

"Im on my way,I'll call the ambulance! Hang in there!"

Just then I feel warm liquid coming down my legs

Me(wispers):"hurry"

.
. .
. .
. .

👑QUINTON👑

.
.

Clyde:"motherfucker watch where you point that shit"

Me:"come on Pavlov,how long have you known us"

Him:"obviously not long enough"

Me:"okay,how long have you known our father?"

Him:"we've had each other's backs for more than ten years....but y'all nothing like your father"

Me:"but..."

He takes his gun on the table and points it at us, Clyde takes out a gun from nowhere and points it at Mr Pavlov,he also got his gun pointed at him also his three guards...we out numbered here, I take out my gun and also point it at Pavlov

Me:"now,we came here to do fair business with you,the money is all here,you can count it if you have to"

Him:"leave the money and get the fuck out my office!"

Clyde:"what about the drugs?"

Him:"it's either y'all get out or I kill both of you crack heads"

Bhah

A gun shot goes off,and Pavlov's head drops on the table,his blood splattered on our faces,we all look behind him and Aidan is hanging from a rope tied to somewhere,he's on the air out the window and has his two guns pointed at us as he just shot the boss at the back of his head

Bhah bhah bhah

Everyone starts shooting,we drop the table and hide behind it as we keep shooting and hiding,the table now has too many holes so we run towards another while shooting,there's just this one motherfucker that doesn't wanna get shot, I aim my gun at him,but he shoots me first, out of nowhere Aidan is behind him he blows his brains off...and that was all of them.

I drop to the floor holding my lower abdomen,Clyde and Aidan come rushing to me

Me:"they shot me on the same spot I got shot in"

I feel so much pain
Aidan:"where man"
Clyde:"there's nothing man,I think he missed"
I look at where he shot me and there's no blood no nothing,I lift my shirt up there's nothing
Me:"what the fuck, I swear I got shot"
Aidan:"I also saw...but how come?"
Could this be protection from God? Or the effect of Lisa's powers when she healed me.
I look at Clyde's shoulder, it's bleeding
Me:"man you got shot"
He looks at it
Clyde:"mxm...it's small stuff,all I need is a bandage"
We laugh
Aidan:"wow,do you ever feel any kind of hurt?"
Clyde:"don't have time for that"
They help me up and we head out....damn I can feel the gun shot burning a bit but nothing...this is some wierd shit.
We now on the jet going back home
I get a call
Me:"hello"
"Mr O'Brien...it's Victoria... please hurry to the hospital, your wife is giving birth!"
Me:"birth?!"
She hangs up
How's that possible? She's only three months?

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

CONTINUATION

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

The pain has gone away, I look down and notice I just peed myself, I thought it would be

blood cause of the pain but it's just urine...that's odd, I hear sirens going off,must be the ambulance,what am I going to say to them now?

They come rushing inside

"Ma'am are you okay, we should rush you to the hospital.. we aware you having a miscarriage?"

Me:"I don't know what went wrong, I had stomach cramps,then I felt warm liquid coming out of me but I'm fine,it was pee"

They get closer to me,they look at the urine and one touches it

Me:"sick don't do that"

Him:"this is not urine mam...how far along pregnant are you?"

Me:"three months"

Him:"your water broke....we need to get you to the hospital quick"

Me:"what?"

They carry me up and we head inside the ambulance

Me:"Mah call Quinton quick!"

Mah:"what should I tell him!?"

Paramedic:"She's giving birth!"

Me:"No I'm not!"

Mah first goes back inside the house then comes out holding Kyle,she gets in the ambulance and we drive off

Mah makes the call

Mah:"Mr O'Brien...it's Victoria... please hurry to the hospital, your wife is giving birth!"

She hangs up

Me:"guys there must be some kind of mistake,I don't feel any pain...there can't be a baby willing to get out?"

Paramedic:"you don't feel anything at all?"

Me:"just an upset stomach and headache,but this can't be labour pains.... shouldn't I be screaming or something,or cursing the man who made me pregnant?"

They laugh at me

Paramedic:"I think you got the dates wrong...(he feels my tummy)...this baby is coming out today,one way or the other, you'll probably feel pain later"

We get to the hospital and I'm rushed to the ward the doctor comes in

Her:"still no pain"

Me:"no I'm aahh... I'm gooooooahhh!"

The pains start kicking in

Me:"aahh..okay,now I'm feeling it aahh ouuuch!"

Her:"it's time"

She makes me spread my legs,I'm confused and in pain

She looks at my vagina for a while with all those lights and all

Her:"okay, we gonna have to take it out surgically,you getting a c-section"

Me:"you gonna take out my undeveloped baby"

I scream as the cramps get worse

Her:"you must be confused, this baby is fully developed and ready to come out"

She injects me

Me:"but the pregnancy test results said....."

The lights go off

.
. .
. .
. .
♥TROY♥

.
. .
. .
Me:"objection your honor but my client does not have to answer that for it is.....

Phone ringing

I look down at it and it's Quinton, I have his number saved since he's my client ever since the I won his case when he killed Mr Johnson

Me:"please excuse me"

Judge:"Mullur...I been told you many times no phones during trial..."

Me:"hello?"

Judge:"wow"

"Lisa is in hospital,please hurry there, I'll be late I'm still on a flight"

Me:"hospital? Where? What happened? Is the baby okay?"

"I heard she's giving birth...just hurry and be there for her man please"

Me:"birth? Impossible...okay I'll run there just now,don't sweat it"

"Thanks, I'll see you there"

Me:"sure"

I hang up

Me:"sorry about that....but my girlfriend is giving birth,I have to be there"

Judge:"you can't walk out in the middle of a case?"

Me:"they say she might not make it...I have to be there"

Judge:"sounds like an emergency, court adjourned for tomorrow...lucky this is just a practical"

Yeah I'm not in court we are in a boardroom doing one of our practice cases

I run out as fast as I can,it's like the lift is moving way slower tight now,the basement is too far. I'm panicking I just hope with all my might that Lisa is okay,it's too soon for her to be giving birth,I'm confused,but I pray nothing bad happens to her or the baby, I

finally get to the car and speed

off immediately.

I come in flying through the hospital door, I head straight to reception

Me:"Lisa O'Brien?"

Her:"she's admitted in the marenity ward you the father?"

Me:"yes"

She directs me and I run to the ward

I find a old woman sitting in the waiting room

Me:"hey"

Her:"hi"

Me:"are you here with Lisa?"

Her:"yes,can I help you"

Me:"oh, I'm her boss, don't they allow us to come in?"

Her:"no,she's undergoing a c-section"

Me:"why? Isn't it still too early?"

She shrugs her shoulders

Her:"doctors say she's due"

I sit next to her and burry my face on my hands

Me(whispering):"Dear God if you listening, please let Lisa be okay and the baby too,I pray that whatever this is that is happening means that this baby is her husband's...in Jesus name Amen"

I open my eyes and the doctor comes towards us

Me:"how is she doc?"

Her:"she's okay,but she's still passed out"

Me:"the baby?"

Her:"it's a healthy baby girl.. congratulations, you the father?"

Me:"I don't think so.... I'm really confused"

Her:"come inside,I'll explain"

She leads us back inside her ward

I look at the baby, in the incubator, she's too tiny,her eyes are closed.

She's pretty,looks alot like her mommy

I go towards her bed

Doc:"the injection is working on her, she'll wake up any minute"

I just stare at her, she's so beautiful,when I first met Lisa,it was kinda funny how we met, I liked her the second I layed my eyes on her,her green eyes,she had that spark in her that drew me closer and closer. When we started sharing a bed and labelled it "fun" yes it was fun until I caught feelings but the more I got to know about her and Quinton,she always talked about him, I knew that it was true love,and they'll get back together one way or the other. I wish I had met her first,I wish I was the one to wake up next to her everyday of my life.... I wish I was the one.

I've never felt like this about any woman besides my wife,I loved her dearly, I hate death for robing us of our happily ever after. I miss her everyday, when I look at Lisa, I miss her more. I didn't mean to fall for her,but I have,I try my best to not entertain my feelings for her cause well she's in love with her husband and I'd hate to ruin it for them,I've been in love too and I would've hated it for someone to come between us. I respect love alot and that's why I avoid it,I don't trust the love left out there anymore. I just pray that these feelings I have for Lisa perish soon before it gets out of control.

Doc:"would you still me to explain now or?"

Me:"I think we should wait for her husband first"

Doc:"oh.. you not the father?"

Me:"I don't think so... I don't know... everything will be clearer once you explain"

Doc:"okay..I'll be in my office, you can ask any of the nurses to call me when the husband gets here"

Me:"cool"

She walks out

The elderly woman is sitting opposite me

She sighs

Her:"this is a first"

Me:"tell me about it"

"Water"

We look at her

Me:"Lisa...(sighs)..oh how I'm glad you okay"

Lisa(smiles):"Troy...when did you get here?"

Her voice is dry

I get her the bottled water that was next to her bed she drinks up

Me:"how you feeling?"

Lisa:"I'm good,just a little light headed...Mah where's Kyle?"

Mah:"he's sleeping,they put him in the children's ward"

Lisa:"please go get him"

She gets up and leaves.

She looks at me

Lisa:"what just happened here?"

Me:"the doctor will explain"

Lisa:"is that my baby?"

She points at the incubator

Me:"yes that's her"

Lisa:"her?"

I smile and nod

Lisa:"it's a girl...she has all her body parts?"

I chuckle

Me:"yes she does... although she's too tiny"

Lisa:"please call the doctor,I need some clarity"

I get up and stop a nurse on the passage

Me:"hey,could you please call the doctor for us"

Nurse:"okay"

She walks away

A few minutes later she walks in followed by The elderly woman carrying Kyle

Doc:"evening..you awake"

Lisa:"yes...doc I want to know why I gave birth at only three months?"

She sits down and explains everything

.

.

.

.

.

👑QUINTON👑

.

.

.

.

The plane just landed Clyde is now behind the wheel speeding to the hospital.

I'm confused as fuck,what is happening to my wife,she can't be having a miscarriage,we can't afford to go through that road of hurt although we've been expecting it but still it would hurt.

We get to the hospital quite late it's now seven o'clock the plane landed at six.

The receptionist directs us to her ward. Aidan and Clyde make their way in, I stand by the door, I'm in disbelief, she's holding the baby in her arms, a very tiny baby, how is this even possible? Three months? I don't get it

"Aren't you going to come in?"

I look up at her then proceed in

Me: "what's going on here?"

Lisa: "we have a baby girl"

She says excitedly

I sit next to her

Me: "but..you were not due yet"

Lisa: "oh yes I was, although it's premature but I carried her for enough time"

Me: "since when is three months enough?"

Lisa: "turns out, I was eight months"

Me: "how come?..you never showed?"

Lisa: "I'll let the doctor explain that"

Doc: "well...you wife experienced what is called 'cryptic pregnancy' this is when the pregnancy doesn't show during the first 20 weeks, the woman doesn't even experience the symptoms..there are many reasons for this kind of pregnancy to occur.....but I'll just tell you the reasons that could relate to your wife from what she's told me she's been through in her past about what doctors told her....your wife's cryptic pregnant is definitely because ofNeonates that tend to be underweight. Especially premature babies are underweight and some women don't notice the extra weight, as you can see the baby is very tiny.

Then there's Minimal pregnancy symptoms, some woman don't go through the symptoms at all or they are on and off..... another thing when the Foetus is barely moving in the womb. Most babies kick, but some are not very active, Some movements can also be mistaken for digestive issues or even a stomach bug.....last but not least...Stress and denial

Sometimes bodily symptoms of pregnancy are subtle, but noticeable and some women are in denial about the pregnancy. Even without a history of mental illness external stressors such as financial difficulties or relationship problems can cause such psychological distress that a woman "blocks out" her pregnancy...and the fact that she knew she'd never have a baby would fall under denial"

I hear everything the doctor just said but I'm in disbelief, I'm shocked and I'm still very confused

Me: "but why did you say the wrong months?"

Doc: "the home pregnancy test is not always right, it detected the term wrong"

Me: "what about the...her cervix being damaged and all that...she was told by the doctor about not being able to carry children?"

Doc: "I don't know which doctor told you that, but I checked her and her cervix, womb and everything else is perfectly healthy no damage of any sort"

I look at Lisa she looks up from the baby and our eyes lock, she smiles then looks up and mouths 'thank him'

Me: "so you got pregnant during December?"

She nods

Me: "so this is my baby?"

Lisa:"yes"

Me(chuckles):"I don't believe this"

Clyde:"why is this so confusing for you? Was it supposed to be someone else's?"

They didn't know about the pregnancy.

Troy:"I think we should give these three some time alone"

He says indicating to Lisa the baby and I

Mah:"yeah he's right... I'm sure Kyle is hungry and needs a changing"

Aidan:"man, y'all have to come down by mom's place and call a family meeting to explain everything"

Lisa:"yeah he will"

I'm starring out at space,I don't know how to feel

Someone holds my shoulder

I look up

Troy:"congratulations man,I'm glad things turned out this way"

He smiles then leaves

It's now only us

"You wanna hold her she mustn't be out of the incubator for long"

I look up at her

I get up and sit on the bed next to her

She hands the tiny baby to me

Lisa:"don't break her please"

We laugh

Me:"she's so tiny and fragile"

Lisa:"no wonder she's been hiding really good from us"

Her eyes are closed shut,I don't think they can open

Me:"how's this even possible?"

Lisa:"nothing is impossible with God"

Me:"so we have our very own little princess"

Lisa:"yeap,the girl who won't date till she's twenty something"

We laugh

Me:"damn right she won't"

I go put her back into the incubator then walk back to the bed,she moves and I jump in the bed and sleep next to her, she lays her head on my chest

Lisa:"you know what's weird"

Me:"what"

Lisa:"remember the dream I told you and Bella about, when God visited me?"

Me:"yeah"

Lisa:"well,he also said and I quote...'you will only bare children for your husband and noone else' I was confused so I never told you cause I thought he meant I was going to have a miscarriage which we were already expecting"

Me:"whoa...you mean all this was God's plan?"

Lisa:"yes...now I understand when I asked him if am I going to miscarry he said 'You will suffer no more pain... you will only bare children for your husband and noone else!' then he disappeared"

Me:"you saw his face?"

Lisa:"I wish...only a shadow"

I sigh,this spiritual stuff is scary

Me:"I guess this is what he meant"

We look at the incubator

Lisa:"I've never been so excited,love bug...we need to keep God by our side so more miracles like this can blossom"

Me:"yeah"

She looks up at me

Lisa:"I haven't got my kiss yet"

I chuckle and bend my head a bit as we share a kiss

Me:"you know I got shot today"

She gasps

.
. .
. .
. .

💎LISA💎

.
. .
. .
. .

My heart skips a beat

Me:"shot! Where?"

I get off him and look around his body

Quinton:"right here"

He lifts his shirt and shows me his spotless skin point at his pelvic area

I look at him

Me:"you think this is funny?"

Quinton:"no.. I'm serious"

Me:"Quinton,there's nothing here"

Quinton:"that's what shocked me too, I felt the bullet hit me here,but when I looked at it there was nothing...even Aidan saw the person shooting me"

Me:"maybe he missed"

Quinton:"could be..but bub.. I'm certain I felt it... I think maybe it's the effects of some of that healing magic of yours"

Me:"or it could be God's protection"

Quinton:"or that"

Me:"after everything that has happened...you still don't believe?"

He looks at me for a while, I look away

Me:"forget I asked anything"

I lay back on his chest he plays with my hair

Quinton:"God really does exist"

That was no question..that was a statement

I look up at him

Quinton:"from now on,I want to pray with you everyday"

A smile creeps on my face

Me:"really?"

Quinton:"yeap"

I attack him with a kiss

Me:"you the best"

Quinton:"No..God is the best for blessing us with a baby girl"

Me:"I thought you wanted a boy"

Quinton:"Nah...a girl is exceptional too"

I giggle

Quinton:"so you got pregnant during December huh?"

Me:"yeah I did"

Quinton:"and that was the time I was a cripple"

Me:"yeap"

Quinton:"and you were doing all the work in bed"

I look at his mischievous face

Me:"yeeah..."

Quinton:"the times you used to ride me like crazy...and you scored yourself a baby..bawushaya iself catering bub, waziphakela"

I burst into laughter

Quinton:"all this these other times I've ficked you raw...but never scored anything, kanti ufuna ukuzkhethela wena isperm esiright" (you wanted to pick out your own suitable sperm)

I can't stop laughing

Me:"mxm,you such an idiot though"

Quinton:"you should ride me often bub"

Me:"ha! We have two babies now...no more ngeke till I finish school..then maybe"

He laughs

Quinton:"we'll see about that, actually I'm hungry right now"

He tickles me nunu I giggle

Me:"Stop it! Someone might walk in and besides I just gave birth, I can't have sex for at least five months"

Quinton:"five what!!! They must be out of their minds, don't they know you have healing powers,you can just heal yourself right now and we get on with it"

I laugh as he gets on top of me but doesn't lay his body on me

Me:"Quinton..get off me, someone might come in here....we not having sex here"

Quinton:"who said anything about sex?"

He goes under the sheets,I feel him pull up the dress and down my underwear..he pulls it up again,then comes back up

Me:"what's wrong?"

Quinton:"I love you,but I'm no vampire"

Me:"what do you mean?"

Quinton:"you bleeding"

Me:"oh come on,a lil blood never hurt anyone"

Quinton:"let's just stick to cuddling"

I laugh

Me:"it's your baby's blood nje"

Quinton:" I'm not sucking your blood woman.. do I look like a vampire to you?"

Me:"kind of"

he gives me a deadly Stare
Me:"now you even worse"
he laughs and we just continue cuddling

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 16

-
-
-
-
-

THREE WEEKS LATER

-
-
-

💎 LISA 💎

-
-
-
-
-

My baby and I are being discharged today, the doctor said she's now the right weight and she doesn't need the incubator anymore.

I named her Enzokuhle and Quinton named her Rachelle..so she's our Rachelle Enzokuhle O'Brien. This time we using his name as her first name since I got to give Kyle his first name,I figured it's a fair thing to do and besides I fell in love with the name Rachelle.

I just finished freshening up and dressing up,the doctor will come give me pills and some baby vitamins I should give my baby, Quinton will come fetch us,well he's been visiting us sometimes three times a week during the second week he only came twice and he never sleeps over, he's been too busy caught up in work and he's visits are sometimes short most of the time.

Doc:"I got your medicine, make sure you give her this every morning before breastfeeding her"

Me:"okay... can't wait...my breast hurt, I need her to suck on them and make them lighter"

Doc:"I feel you"

"I can also help with that"

We look towards the door and he makes his way in

Me:"sick! That's disgusting Q"

Quinton:"can't be that bad,I'm sure your beautiful breasts give out tasty milk bub"

The doctor laughs at him

Me:"don't laugh doc...this is serious, he needs a check up"

She laughs harder

Quinton:"I'm not crazy"

Me:"you see...that's exactly what a crazy man would say"

She can't stop laughing

Doc:"you both need a check up"

I gasp

Quinton laughs at me

Quinton:"haaa at least we in this together"

Me:"mxm...wow girl I thought you were on my side... I'm so getting another doctor next time"

Doc:"my bad girl.... you so normal,no check up needed"

Quinton:"lies...bub why you blackmailing"

Me:"cause I can"

Quinton:"and you just going to let her manipulate you like that...maybe Doc needs a check up too"

She laughs

Doc:"you two need to stop, anyway that'll be all"

Quinton:"thanks Doc... we'll leave you to it...bub, y'all ready to go home?"

Me:"more than ready,I miss my bed"

Quinton:"wow...what about me and Kyle?"

Me:"y'all too"

Quinton:"ouch"

I roll my eyes, I reluctantly give Quinton the baby for him to hold as we head to the car, I feel like he'll squash my little sunshine with his strong arms

We get to the car and drive off

Quinton:"is she asleep or awake?"

He glances at us as I'm breastfeeding her,she's sucking on my titties for dear life as her eyes are closed

Me:"she's awake"

Quinton:"does she ever open her eyes?"

Me:"yeah,she does, you've just never seen her"

Quinton:"I always see her when she's asleep"

Me:"well you the one who visited us at night only and you only stayed a few hours so you wouldn't have gotten the chance to see her awake"

He sighs

Quinton:"I'm sorry about that bub...work has been hectic,ever since the Russians betrayed us, I've had to be hands on, on both side of the businesses, Clyde is not that good when it comes to making deals he's impatient so I.....

Me(interrupts):"you don't have to explain"

It remains silent almost the whole drive

Quinton:"you mad at me?"

Me:"No"

Quinton:"then tell me you love me"

I remove the boob from my baby's mouth as she has fallen asleep and hold her comfortably on my arms.. I kinda am a bit mad at him,he hasn't been making much time for us and I just gave birth he should've been with me all the time

I look out the window

Quinton:" you are mad"

I thought I'd let it slide but now that he's brought it up back to my attention,the hurt of the times I was missing him comes back

Quinton:"bub"

Me:....

Quinton:"I'm sorry"

Me:...

Quinton:"I'll make it up to you"

He should just shut up cause he's just making me angry

Quinton:"Eish.... I'm in shit....damn"

He rubs my thigh then leaves his hand there

I remove it

He parks the car outside the shopping center that's near our neighborhood

Quinton:"I'll be right back, I just need to get a few things"

he looks at me,I look away

Quinton:"do you need me to get you anything?"

We already have all the baby things we need as family and friends have been coming with gifts I shake my head no,he gets out and locks us in

... Quinton hasn't bought one thing for our baby,that's another thing that makes me so mad at him,we just had a miracle baby but all he cares about is his stupid shady businesses that are putting his family in danger,he's not thinking about our kids, mxm he doesn't wanna fucken grow up... forgive my language Lord,but this man is getting on my last nerve!

The door bangs that's him closing the boot,my poonkie bear wakes up and cries.. wow thank you very much Quinton

I try to shush her but it doesn't work,she must've got frightened

Quinton gets in

Quinton:"whoa what's going on in here"

Me:"you frightened her when you banged the boot"

Quinton:"ohh I'm so sorryy marshmallow,let daddy see"

He takes her from me,he lays her in his arms gently and plays with her tiny hands

Quinton (baby talk):"daddy is so very sorry my princess...(hercries decrease).... please please do forgive me Bhabha...will you? Will you forgive dada? Huh? huh my princess..my little princess...my Thumbelina..yes from now on you daddy's princess Thumbelina cause you so tiny"

She has stopped crying,she's now just staring at him, I feel like laughing cause she's looking at him as if she's going to say 'what the hell is this crazy man talking about?' Lol, I move my eyes from my baby to him as I realise he's quiet, I find him looking at me

Quinton:"you have a beautiful smile"

I stop smiling immediately, mxm

Me:"bring my baby and drive I'm tired"

He sighs and gives me pookie bear,he drives off

We get to the house,he opens the door for us and we head inside.

Thank Goodness she's sleeping. Eish we don't even have a room for her,she did kinda came unexpectedly,oh my poor baby, I wish I had gotten the chance to prepare everything for her

Me:"she'll have to sleep in Kyle's bed and Kyle sleeps with us"

Quinton:"that's okay with me"

Me:"I go put him in Kyle's bed, I find Kyle and Mah sitting on the floor playing, Kyle looks up at me with a big smile on his face,oh how I missed my boy
Me:"hello Mah"
Mah:"hey unjani?"
Me:"I'm good just tired"
Mah:"she's so cute"
She says looking at her
Me:"yeah,even though she looks a bit like an alien"
She laughs
Mah:"they all look like that at this stage"
Me:"yeah cause I remember also Kyle looked a bit weird but now he's dripping sauce"
Mah:"it's the first time I'm hearing a mother actually admit that a baby is not cute right after birth"
Me:"I'm just being honest...but I just love her to death"
I kiss her tiny hands
Mah:"what's her name?"
Me:"Rachelle Enzokuhle O'Brien"
Mah:"those are beautiful names"
Me:"only the best for my first princess"
Kyle makes baby sounds
Me:"I love you too Kyle"
Mah laughs
Mah:"he's jealous"
I put my baby in the cot
Then turn to go pick up Kyle who seems excited to see me
Me:"don't worry Kyle you will always be my first prince"
He giggles and lays his head on me
Me:"ncaaoo my baby missed me... I missed you too cuddle muffins"
Mah:"I understand,you must be tired,do you need anything? Something to eat or drink?"
Me:"kuphekweni?"(have you cooked?)
Mah:"umphokoqo kodwa, I don't know if you like it?"
Me:"I love it and I'm starving"
We head downstairs,she dishes up for me, then I head to the lounge and eat,I put Kyle down.
Me:"where has that husband of mine disappeared to?"
Mah:"I haven't seen him since y'all got back...I've been here everyday sleeping over taking care of Kyle, he keeps disappearing everyday,he's been busy"
Me:"wow..has he been sleeping home?"
Mah:"Yes he comes back...but really late then goes early, I hardly see him...and...(pauses)
Me:"and what?"
Mah:"No,it's not my place to tell"
My curiosity is sky high
Me:"No please Mah,do tell,if there's anything that my husband is doing that he shouldn't be doing... I deserve to know and don't worry you won't be the cause"
She sighs
Mah:"there's a lady that's been coming here every Wednesday and Friday and they'd stay in the office for hours then he'd take her home then come back late..he's been really busy these past few weeks, even his calls he was always careful not to answer in front of me."
My heart sinks through a sharp knife as I feel like I've just been stabbed

Me:"wow... I don't believe this"

Mah:"but Lisa,let's not overthink it could only be work that's keeping him so busy"

Me:"so busy all of a sudden when I'm at the hospital, going through pain as I just bought life to our baby...he was hardly there for me, even though he called everyday but it's not the same....he's already getting bored of me,what was I thinking marrying a fuck boy,a thug...mxm"
I feel tears threaten,but I'm done crying for Quinton,I've cried too much for him in the past

Mah:"calm down Lisa...we don't have much proof, these could be false assumptions and accusations"

Me:"for his sake Mah.. I really hope it's false.....cause this time,I'm not going to stand for his bullshit"

I leave my bowl of maas on the table and head upstairs

Me(shouts):"we just got here and already he's gone!! This man has absolutely no respect for me!!.. aarrgh!!"

I bang my door and throw myself on the bed, I grab the pillow then start punching it and biting it,I suffocate my head on it and scream my lungs out... I'm so full of anger, I feel like breaking something, I walk up to the closet and take his clothes, I head with them to the balcony in our room, throw them outside, I keep going in to take his clothes and throwing them out,his shoes his cosmetics, I throw out his expensive cologne he loves so much,the one that drives me crazy everytime he holds me against him, I watch it fall and break into pieces on the ground... I laugh,this feels good actually, if he's not cheating on me then this will be a shame,but still good for being so distant when I needed him closer than ever!!.. I laugh as I throw out more things, everything of his..

I'm tired now,so I sit on the bed breathing heavily, I feel pain coming from my lower abdomen must be the surgery.

I lie down on the bed and close my eyes.

"What the fuck happened here!!"

I open my eyes then lazily sit up as I yawn and stretch my arms

Me:"so much noise?"

I look at the fuming Quinton standing below the bed looking at me confused mixed with anger
Quinton:"noise? You worried about noise? Lisa what the hell happened here? Why are all my stuff thrown outside?"

I shrug my shoulders

He walks around the room and looks at the closet then looks back at me

Quinton:"what the fuck you mean you don't know... there's ghosts in this house now,that throw Quinton's clothes and everything that only specifically belongs to Quinton away?"

Me:"Quinton.. I'm tired, please shut the hell up"

He looks at me with his eyes widen and brows up

Quinton:"abpshhhh oh okay...she's tired... tired of throwing my stuff away? Girl you must be out of your damn mind!"

He chuckles and gets in the closet,he comes back out holding a bunch of my clothes

I gasp

Me:"what are you doing?"

He passes me and heads to the balcony I run after him

Me:"Quinton!!"

He hangs them over the balcony fence then looks at me

Me:"Quinton... don't do it..."

He smirks

Me:"I'm warning you"

He let's them go while looking at me and they fall to the ground

Me:"oh no you didn't"

Quinton:"oh yeah... I did"

He walks back in and comes out with more of my clothes,I block his way

Me:"Quinton,stop it..stop this madness now!"

He walks past me pushing me like I'm nothing

He throws my clothes out he fetches more things even my shoes ,I try fighting him but I'm very weak and this slight pain coming from my tummy isn't helping.

I finally give up in fighting him and watch him throw my stuff out including my cosmetics

Me:"No Quinton not my cologne please.. I just recently bought that..it's very expensive,don't do that"

I bought it while I was Miss Prada Diva

Quinton:"you didn't think about that when you threw mine out?"

He throws it out I hear it break into pieces

Me:"you so evil!"

Quinton:"you started it"

Me:"Argh!! You so damn childish!! When are you going to grow the fuck up and be a man!?!..."

Quinton:"Lisakhanya! I don't like that tone you've taken up with me.... I get that you mad at me for whatever reason but.. woman... don't you raise your voice at me!"

He's face has changed to anger oohh but I'm too angry to care too

Me:"or what!! What the fuck are you going to do!! Huh!! You going to run away and go fuck a hoe? Is that what you gonna do?...or you gonna call up miss sexy brunette babe to come for another session at Your Damn Office!!! Huh!! What are you going to do!"

He moves closer to me his eyes filled with fire his nose creased with his hands fisted

Quinton (clenched teeth):"don't test me Lisakhanya Mthethwa...I've been way too patient with you.... don't fucken test me now"

Me:"I've never in my life met such a whore!! I give you pussy almost every single day but you never have enough,you always out there looking for more!! Am I not enough for you!!? You a bloody man Whore!! I wish I never met you!!"

My cheeks heat up as a slap crosses my face turning my head to look the other way,my hair covers my face,I hold my cheek and slowly lift my head up to look at him,his still filled with much anger...this is the first ever time he's layed his hands on me,I stare at his eyes

.....

Lee:"if you love me we'll do it my way"

Me:"NO!! Stay Away from me! Help!!"

He laughs next thing I know my cheek is heated up,he just gave me a hot slap, I burst into a loud cry

.....

Me:"you...you...."

My eyes tear up

His eyes change into regret he comes closer I move until I trip over the furniture

Quinton:"bub"

Me (whispers):"you hit me"

Quinton:"bub"

He tries to touch me I hold out my hand for him to stop

Me:"don't. touch. me"

Quinton:"Liss... I'm sorry.... I don't know what got into me"

I go sit on the bed,he comes sit next to me,he buries his face in his hands

I do the same tear drops finally leave my eyes

Quinton (breaking voice):"what is happening Lisa?"

I cry silently

Quinton:"why are we fighting?"

Silence

Quinton:"you just gave birth to our baby girl"

Me:....(crying)

Quinton:"shouldn't we be happy?"

Me:....(crying)

Quinton:"what in the world are we fighting for?"

I look at him

He looks at me

Quinton:"what is happening Lisa?"

This man is not cheating on me, whatever he's been doing but he's definitely not cheating, he's eyes reassure me,why the hell did that even come into my mind

Me:"it's me"

Quinton:.....

Me:"I'm the insecure one"

Quinton:".. why?"

Me:"I don't know.... I don't know okay, I don't know Quinton"

Quinton:"you do...you know exactly why...why Lisa? Why?...say it...you still think I haven't changed from the person I was before I fell deeply in love with you? You still think I will cheat on you? You think I'm that thirsty nigger who will never get satisfied? You think I'm some kinda desperate sex addict who fucks anything in a skirt?"

Me:"No"

Quinton:"then why the fuck are you insecure?"

Me:"because I love you!! Because I love you so damn much! I don't want to loose you again....so many bad things happen to us, I can't help but think you'll choose another woman over me again... I'm scared Quinton,now that there are kids involved, makes me even more terrified"

He goes on his knees and kneels infront of me

Quinton:"Lisa.... I done some mistakes,bad mistakes and I'm sorry I hurt you so much...but Lisa I'm not sorry those mistakes happened, for if they didn't I wouldn't have learnt that you are the only woman in this world my heart desires to love, I wouldn't have realised that I have to marry you and make you mine forever,if all those mistakes never happened... I wouldn't be with the woman who prays for me more than anyone else the woman who loves me more than anyone has ever loved me the woman who will bare me beautiful children and fill our home with much warmth comfort and love....Lisa,we married now,the pastor said it,we were bind together by God himself, nothing can ever separate me from you...not a woman,not even the devil, nothing... I promise you"

A side smile creeps on my face as I look at his sparkling dark blue eyes

Me:"I'm sorry Q... I'm sorry for doubting you"

Quinton:"I'll forgive you if you just please forgive me for laying my hands on you.... bub I'm so sorry, I don't know what kind of anger got into me,but it won't ever happen again"

Me:"I was also way out of line,I pushed you"

He shakes his head

Quinton:"I've been angry before,but never in my life have I layed my hands on a woman,not even my worst woman enemy..and I start with the woman I love the most...what's wrong with me?"

Me:"let's pray"

He nods

Me:"let's pray that anger never comes back,and I should never find the courage to talk to you the way I did again"

I get down on my knees and we pray,this time I hear him praying,for the first time ever,he always does a silent prayer

Me:"I pray that you make us stronger in love and peace Lord, help us find the right ways to go about our misunderstandings...we will only be separated by death as we have made an oath infront of the holy spirit and witnesses,may our love grow stronger with each passing day father...we also thank you Lord God for the wonderful precious gift you have blessed us with,indeed you are a miraculous God,may we never forget the blessings you've blessed us with..we keep our faith in you Lord and may you continue protecting our family and all our loved ones,in Jesus name we pray, Amen"

Quinton:"Amen"

He pulls me to him and we hug for a long time

Quinton:"I love you"

Me:"I love you more"

We break the hug

Quinton:"let it never get out of hand again"

Me:"never again"

Quinton:"good"

He gets up and helps me up

Me:"let's go get our things"

Quinton:"we'll do that,but there's just one thing I have to do"

Me:"work?"

Quinton:"yes.. just one phone call"

Me:"okay, I'll clean up here for now"

He kisses my cheek and heads out

I sigh then start tidying up ,after a while I take a bath,it's still early,it's now eleven o'clock, Quinton fetched us early from the doctor. I take a bath and relax in the bath salts. I feel much better now

Quinton:"am I too late to join you?"

I look at him by the door

Me:"yes you are,I'm done"

I get up he looks at me up and down

Me:"don't even think about, four more months left"

Quinton:"that's just pure torture"

Well it's not really five months the doctor said we should wait atleast two months,so it's just one more month left

Me:"doctors orders love"

He sulks

Me:"sorry babe"

I get out the water and wrap a towel around me,I stand infront of the mirror and brush my teeth,

I notice my cheek is a bit red I bush it, I feel his hand on top of mine on my cheek
Quinton (whispers):"I'm so sorry"
I look at him through the mirror
Me:"it's okay"
Quinton:"I'm so disappointed in myself"
Me:"don't be love bug,it was a mistake"
Quinton:"now I'm no different to that low life mncence "
I chuckle and rinse my mouth then turn to face him
Me:"you nothing like him,he was mentally sick,you will never be anything like him"
Quinton:"I wish I could reverse time, I really don't believe I hit you"
Me:"you didn't hit me"
Quinton:"I did,I can't forgive myself"
Me:"well I don't remember such...you've never ever layed your hands on me as far as I'm concerned"
He looks at me in the eyes
Quinton:"so we'll just pretend it never happened"
Me:"no...it never happened,now please let's drop it.. we'll never talk about this again"
Quinton:"what kind of amazing creature are you?"
Me:"the one that was made for you"
Quinton:"and damn am I grateful"
He moves closer and we share a kiss
We head to the room,I lotion and dress up into a long comfortable dress ,I tie my hair into a loose ponytail, we now chilling on the bed while he's on his laptop and I'm on mine, looking through my emails to check if I got any new assignments and indeed I do but first I need to study before I can understand anything, I need Yonela to come over and explain some things to me,but not today I'm too tired.
I close my laptop and put it away.i take my pills and drink them down.
I move closer to Quinton,he closes his laptop quick and puts it away
Me:"you don't have to stop, I just want to take a nap anyway"
I lie on his chest he wraps his arms around me
Quinton:"nahh I was done anyway"
Me:"mmh..so how's business going?"
Quinton:"hectic,the side of the business that I've been trying to avoid is just getting more and more complicated and I'm forced to be hands on it... then there's the family company,I've hired someone to take care of it"
Me:"so you'll be working more with Clyde now?"
Quinton:"just until everything is back to normal, after what happened with the Russians,all our dealers are disappearing one by one,I think some of their Allies are here in South Africa and are taking out our dealers bit by bit"
Me:"Quinton,that's bad,what if they come for you?"
Quinton:"that's what I'm trying to fix, I need to come up with a plan,fast,but first I need to find out who exactly is doing this cause we not even sure if it's one of the Russians"
Me:"just pray whoever it is, is revealed to you sooner than later, before he becomes a threat to us"
Quinton:"it won't go that far"
Me:"for our kids sake,I hope not"
He remains quiet

Me:"after you've sorted out this mess, Quinton, you have to quit this life, I'm not trying to change you or anything but Quinton, you have a family now, you can't afford to attract such danger to us"

Quinton:"I know bub... I'm working it out"

Me:"okay"

His phone beeps he takes it and opens the lock. Okay. I thought we got rid off locks a long time ago. Now they back?

I look at his phone hoping to see what his looking at but he brings it closer to his face hiding it from me,he puts it away, I look up at him and he has a smile on his face

Me:"what, what's that smile?"

Quinton:"it's nothing"

Me:"you just smiling at nothing?"

Quinton:"it's just some stupid joke Brandon reminded me of"

Me:"ohh what's the joke?"

Quinton:"you wouldn't get it bub"

Me:"mmmh"

I lie back in his chest,it's clear he doesn't want to tell me so I'll let it slide

He kisses my head I feel my eyes getting heavy as I can't keep them open anymore, I yawn

His phone rings

Quinton:"hello?"

....

He shifts me and lays my head on the pillow, I keep my eyes closed

Quinton(smiles):"Miss Nxumalo, how are you?"

....

He gets off the bed and I hear him walk towards the balcony

Quinton:"Uhm oh no, not here, can we meet somewhere else?"

....

Quinton:"yes I'll be there....."

The balcony door closes and I can't hear him anymore

After a few minutes he comes back to bed

Quinton:"bub?"

He's checking if I'm asleep so I remain quiet and pretend to be asleep

He kisses my forehead, then my nose then my lips, I hear the door close and his footsteps walking away.

I open my eyes, I hear the car start and drive away.

I sigh, what is this man hiding from me? I'm not stupid, I know when I'm being made a fool,one minute I believe he's faithful then the next he starts acting like this!?...he's up to something and it's more than just business!

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 17

-
-
-
-
-

💎 LISA 💎

-
-
-
-
-

ONE WEEK LATER

-
-
-
-

Rachelle is on a mission I tell you, a mission of driving me insane! That girl can cry more like scream damn! Oh God I think I'm going to lose my mind.

I'm sitting on my bed, trying to get some work done, I'm ignoring the crying baby but she's un-ignorable.

I lazily get up after much groaning and huffing and fighting with the bed, careful not to wake Kyle up.

Me: "Why why why can't you just give mommy a small break"

I say as I pick her up, I walk around shaking her but she doesn't stop, I sit on the comfy small couch in their room I take out my boob and she sucks on it immediately

Me: "ayi Rae you have made your presence felt baby"

I've been up all night trying to catch up with work I've missed out on and poonkie bear is not making it easy for me and she's rubbing it off on Kyle, Kyle is now becoming a cry baby too, when his sister cries he cries, but Kyle never cried this much when he was at this age oh he cried a lot but Rae is worse.

She's not sucking anymore she's just staring at me with her big eyes, I thought she'd have green eyes like me or blue eyes that change colour like her dad but nope my girl just went for normal black but they so cute. I put my boob back and carry her to my room, I put her on the bed next to Kyle, I have big pillows on the edge of either sides of the bed so that they don't roll off and fall. I take her small bath tub and go fill it up with water then go to her and take off her clothes. This is the hard part, she'll cry the whole time while I bath her, this baby though.

I carry her naked self to the tub and start bathing her and as usual she screams as if I just burnt her with this water but it's luke warm I always make sure I put my whole arm when feeling it she just hates water period. I hurry her up then cover her with her towel and we head to the room I'm now lotioning her then dress her up and she has stopped crying. I look at Kyle and he's wide awake just quiet lying on his back and pulling his feet, I kiss him

Me: "morning cuddle muffins"

He smiles widely I put her sister next to him then take a picture of them, I take Kyle and go give him a bath too then clothe him, I risk leaving them alone in bed as I run downstairs to make Kyle food, after a few minutes I'm running back up, phew! I thank the Lord silently as they still in one peace, I feed Kyle while Rae is just lying there behaving and looking adorable. I play with them

for a while

I make Enzo lie on me inbetween my legs with a cushion to support her, facing Kyle whose sitting in front of us but I have a pillow behind him as he's still learning to sit up,he hasn't mastered it yet he can roll over now from his tummy to his back and forth....he's starring at Enzo and so is Enzo I think they having some sorta stare down

Me:"you see your little sister cuddles? Say hi lil sis"

He looks at me and giggles I laugh at him he seems to be in love with her

I make him come closer

Me:"come give her a hug..she want a hug baby"

I hold him carefully and make them hug, I grab my phone and take snaps, they so cute I literally take pictures and videos of every moment nowadays. I'm obsessed with them.

Me:"look at y'all, y'all so cute"

I show them the pictures I doubt they even know what I'm showing them. At least Rae is slightly smiling now and then but mostly sucking her hands.

Quinton makes his way in while I'm telling them a story, my Babies are just starring at me Kyle is the only one that giggles to my funny faces well, Rae is quiet

Quinton:"what are my favorite people up to?"

He comes to the bed

Quinton:"hey bubbly"

He poutes his lips, I peck them for a long while,he pulls my lip and we end up smooching, I pull out

Me:"love bug"

He sits next to me and takes Kyle

Quinton:"hey kiddos,are you behaving..you know you gonna have to set an example to your sister right?"

Kyle blabbers

Rae starts getting irritated,I pick her up before sending start crying and give her the boob,she calms down

Quinton:"can I have some too?"

Me:"No"

Quinton:"please"

I look at him and he has that stupid cute puppy face of his

Me:"fine,but this is just weird you know"

Quinton:"I know"

He goes for the other boob he sucks he makes a digusted face and spits it out at the side of the bed on the floor

Quinton:"arrhh sickk"

He wipes his tongue

Quinton:"how do kids drink that shit"

I'm in stitches Kyle is also giggling

Me:"but I thought you said my beautiful breasts give out tasty milk"

Quinton:"yeah you can forget about that"

Me:"mxm"

Quinton:"I'm joking it is tasty bub..but for Rae not a grown ass man like myself"

Me:"yes..they Rae Rae's territory now"

Quinton:"when is she moving out again?"

Me:"not anytime soon"

Quinton:"even Kyle has over stayed his welcome... when are you going out there boy?"
He says holding him up
Me:"how is he even going to go when he can't even walk?"
Quinton:"what's taking him so long anyway?"
Me:"the fact that he's only lived four months and doesn't know who you are yet"
Quinton:"he does know who I am... right kiddos"
He smiles
Me:"please go tuck her in,she's fast asleep"
He takes her to the room I take Kyle
And play with him,more like kiss his lips repeatedly ,I can't get enough of them.
Me:"I'll get you your very own room soon cuddles"
Kyle:"hsggfjdhjjsuaygrhdjksk"
Me:"yes you won't have to share with us anymore,and daddy won't fart on you anymore"
Kyle:"hdjgbfgffkjubsj"
Me:"I know right, I think I also want my own room"
Quinton:"in your wildest dreams, the only time you'll sleep alone is six foot under not in our home"
Me:"what a bummer"
He laugh
silence
Me:"Quinton"
Quinton:"Lisa"
Me:"is this some kinda pay back?"
Quinton:"what are you talking about?"
Me:"you are been so busy ever since I gave birth,you always cooped up in your office and everyday at exactly three o'clock you disappear to go meet a mysterious person"
He looks at me for a while then looks down before looking back up at me...he's about to lie to me, I know all his tricks when he's not honest,he can never look me in the eye for long as he usually does
Quinton:"I thought we've already talked about this, I'm sorting out business"
Me:"Quinton,I'm no fool,since when have you become secretive with the people you do business with on the phone... I know all about your shady businesses, why now all of a sudden there are phone calls you can't answer in front of me..you even have a damn lock on your phone"
Quinton:"what are you trying to imply Lisa?"
Me:"I'm not implying anything Quinton,I just feel neglected..."
Quinton:"Lisa I thought you understood when I told you about the danger we in"
Me:"I'm trying to understand Quinton,but the way you acting is suspicious..and I'm not a fool,we've been down this road... I know what comes next"
Quinton:"Lisa... I'm gonna need you to trust me"
Me:"you making it hard for me Quinton..."
Quinton:"so you saying you don't trust me?"
Me:....
Quinton:"oh wow okay,good to know my wife don't trust me"
Me:...
Quinton:"why did you marry me if you can't trust me?"
Me:"Quinton...why are you hiding things from me?"

Quinton:"I'm not hiding anything from you"

Me:"then let me see your phone"

Quinton:"wow.. I'm not going to sit here for this"

Me:"you running away again"

He stands up

Quinton:"I don't wanna fight with you,I'll be in my office, you can come see me when you've stopped your madness"

He walks out

Kyle:"hfdbcjbyjxzfxhivjaaa"

I sigh.

I walk to the bathroom,I leave Kyle on the floor to play around while I take a bath,I have a class to attend

Luckily I only have one class today and I'm still off at work.

I hate leaving my babies wish I could take them to school with me.

I don't know what's happening between Quinton and I seriously, he's acting really strange, I don't want to believe that he's cheating on me but his actions are pointing at that direction. I'll just have to believe the lie he's telling me until I actually catch him even if I don't,the truth always has a way of coming out.

After I've finished dressing up I find Kyle passed out on the floor, I laugh and pick him up gently then go lay him next to his sister.

I should really organise another room from one of the guest rooms or just buy another cot,but I've been so tired.

The doctor said I should wait until after six weeks before I can go to school or work the bleeding would've stopped by then ,but I've missed out on so much I'll have to go attend atleast this one class,I've dropped to being a B student now,I want my A game back. I need it if I wanna keep my Job at Toy's firm.

I go downstairs I've already called Mah Vic to come look after my babies.

I head to the kitchen to make me some food.

I mix some muesli with yogurt,my favorite morning dish.

I sit by the high chairs and eat up, I keep glancing at his office door.

Maybe I should just chill, I mean God did say I should let him fight for me,what am I stressing for? The devil might be at work but God is also at work in my marriage,and I know for sure that he is an undefeated God, hell Satan has already been defeated, I won't let him rob my happiness for sweet nothing. From now on I fully put my faith and trust in God and I believe whatever the devil is trying to achieve between my husband and I...isn't going to work.

The devil is a liar!!

After I finish eating I get off my chair and head to his office

I knock..he's told me many times I don't have to knock but I just can't, I can budge in in any room but never his office specially when I know he's in there, I don't know why but it just happens.

"Come in if you come with peace"

I laugh a bit and walk inside

He's focused on his laptop while the other hand has his phone

Me:"hey"

I stand behind the chair in front of his desk

He looks up at me

Quinton:"sit down"

I obey and sit

He locks his phone and puts it down then closes his laptop

Quinton:"Lisa,for the last time I am not cheating on you"

Me:"I know"

He raises his brows amused

Quinton:"oh?"

Me:"I'm sorry for the assumptions and accusations, one thing that I learnt in the past is that we need to trust each other more...we need to protect our marriage by trusting each other"

Quinton:"I'm glad you finally came to your senses"

Me:"I'm glad too..but we also need to be honest with each other too"

Quinton:"I've been honest Lisa, trust me when I say I just have to sort out a few things to get us out of the mess I've gotten us into then everything will be back to normal"

Me:"okay"

Quinton:"okay?"

He seemed shocked,he's expecting me to fight with him.. I'm sure the devil is also expecting me to fight with him..but now I aim to please God not the devil so I'll show him love even if he doesn't deserve it cause no one deserves God's grace but he still gives it

Me:"I love you love bug and I'm tired of fighting you..I just want to love you and for you to love me back"

He looks at me confused

Quinton:"you not mad anymore?"

I smile and shake my head

Me:"No, you've made it clear to me that you just handling business nothing more...and I trust you"

Quinton:"oh...okay"

I walk around the table to him and sit on his lap

Me:"I miss you though"

Quinton:"I'm right here bub"

I kiss his lips

Me(whispers):"I miss Mr B"

He chuckles naughtily

Quinton:"he misses you too"

He deepens the kiss

We kiss for a long while twirling our tongues,my hand finds its way to his guy I massage him..he moans in my mouth,he's hard already,he massages my boobs gently rubbing his hands all over my body. I feel the temperature rising as Miss M is beating uncontrollably throbbing

He pulls my pony back making my head tilt back as his lips smooch my neck,moans escape my mouth

I push him back gently and he stops we stare into each other's eyes as we try to catch our breathe

Quinton (whispers):"I wanna make love to you so bad"

Me (whispers):"me too"

We rests our heads against each other

My hands caresses his spiky chin as he has shaved his beard but not all of it it's just neatly trimmed,his hand is resting on my thigh while the other is brushing the side my face and hair

Quinton:"will you marry me"

I chuckle

Me:"I already did that"
Quinton:"what else can I do to prove how much I love you"
Me:"take care of the kids while I go out...bye"
I get off him
Quinton (laughs):"oh great! We have kids"
Me:"yep..and you babysitting"
He looks at me as though I'm crazy
I'm just messing with him Mah will be here
Quinton:"and where you off to?"
Me:"school I need to attend this class my assignment is based on it"
Quinton:"that's awesome!"
He says excitedly... okay?
Me:"okay...it's like you couldn't wait until I go"
Quinton:"whaaat...no.. I mean it's great that you catching up"
Me:"since when do you show so much interest in my school work?"
Quinton:"bub...you going to be late"
I frown what does he want to do while I'm gone?
Me:"okay...bye"
Quinton:"bye...love you"
Me:"wait!.. can I take the car?"
Quinton:"yes,I won't need it?"
Me:"what about your daily three o'clock appointment?"
Quinton:"I'll have my meetings at home today"
Oh wow,so.....(breaths)...
Me:"okay.. love you too"
I grab the car keys and head out, I take my bag and off I go.
I get to school welcomed by my crazy weirdos
Thelma:"yoohhh at long last mother Teresa comes back!"
I give her a dead glare
Me:"call me that again if you don't wish to see tomorrow"
They laugh
Yonela:"yoh I feel sorry for my baby Kyle and Rae already"
Me:"shut up...if only you knew how much of a handful those two are"
Yonela:"and they not even that far apart of age,yuuhh the chaos you'll endure damn"
Me:"don't even mention it"
Thelma:"nawe girl you don't call us...for us to come help you with babysitting"
Me:"guys you know y'all always welcome, I don't even have to call yall, you should just pop up"
Yonela:"ayi ungathi uyalibala ukba you married now, we can't just pop up, we might just have bad timing and hubby wouldn't like that"
We burst into laughter
Me:"okay fine...I'll call yall when I need you guys"
Thelma:"yah we need to do our Auntily duties"
Yonela:"speak for yourself I'm the godmother so motherly duties for me"
Me:"weehh and who gave you that position?"
She gasps and frowns
Me:"phela I was supposed to give those rewards in the baby shower...but unfortunately Rae wanted a surprise entrance"

Yonela:"ayi naye kodwa..she likes playing hide and seek"
Thelma:"you know...I mean how does a whole baby hide in such a tiny body like yours"
Me:"heeyy I'm not tiny ayibo"
Yonela:"dude,you know,I was thinking"
Me:"what?"
Yonela:"if you were still like a teenager in high school and you got pregnant with Rae...this cryptic pregnancy would've worked on your favour, you wouldn't have to worry about telling any body,and boom just surprise them!"
We laugh
Thelma:"miracle baby...and just tell your mom maybe you the next virgin Mary"
Me:"mxm you guys are out of it"
The time comes for us to go to class
And I make sure I take down my notes and ask questions
Class is now over
Me:"I need to get home and sleep! Damn!"
Yonela:"Uhm home?"
Me:"yeah"
Thelma:"so soon...let's hang out guys,it's been a while"
Me:"No... I'm sorry hunnies but I have to rest"
They look at each other then back at me
Yonela:"but Lisa..come on,okay we'll just chill at my place and relax and catch up that's all"
Me:"maybe some other time guys"
They nudge each other's elbows..okay they acting strange again, they've been like this for days now ever since I came back from hospital,I'd call them to come help me with my assignments and they'd show each other things on the phone and laugh or go ncwooo when I ask to see they'd show me but I knew it wasn't what they were looking at.. I don't know what's happening,but I think they slowly drifting away from me...is it because I'm the odd one out? I mean I'm married and have two babies already yet they still wanna have fun, maybe I bore them with my family problems and the baby talk all the time. What's happening to my relationships? I cannot end up a lonely bitter woman with no friends nor a husband
Me:"guys what's up?"
Yonela:"nothing"
Me:"say it"
Yonela (sighs):"fine...you don't have time for us anymore"
Thelma:"and we miss you so much"
Yonela:"please all we ask is these few hours of today"
Me(sighs):"fine"
They jump in excitement and hug me
Me:"okay okay enough"
They get in my car since Thelma didn't come with her car today so we all going with mine
We get to yonela's apartment, I head straight for the couch and sleep on it
Yonela:"damn, you really are tired"
Me:"told you, if I fall asleep in the middle of our conversations guys do forgive me"
They lauhh
Thelma:"we understand... wait,what's Rae drinking if your boobs are here?"
I laugh at her
Me:"I squeezed some milk on three bottles"

Thelma:"mmh okay"

Yonela makes us some sandwiches and snacks and Juice, we dig in.

Me:"So Nella,how's the story with Aidan.. y'all still at it?"

Yonela:"actually..."

Me:"what! Y'all decided to make it official?"

Yonela:"No.. I broke things off"

Thelma & I:"what!"

Yonela:"guys... I just couldn't carry on playing with him,it was fun while it lasted but nooo"

Me:"I'm confused as fuck right now?"

Thelma:"me too please find us you've lost us"

Me:"yeah...just last week y'all were cool"

Yonela:"I ended things two days ago"

Thelma:"why?"

Me:"yeah why?"

Yonela:"because guys...it's over,we were just playing all games must come to an end"

Me:"what did he do?"

Yonela:"nothing"

Me:"you just ended it with no specific reason?"

Yonela:"should there be any? It's not like he was my boyfriend"

Thelma:"yoh...yabona these things of no strings are complicated"

Me:"I thought you liked him"

She keeps quiet for a while

Yonela:"Lisa, it was fun until I started catching feelings... when he flirts with other girls I get jealous,when we go to parties and he gives another girl attention more than me, something inside of me crashes and he dances with them touching them sexually...you see before I caught feelings I didn't mind that,I knew how to draw his attention back at me....now,I just become weak and not know what to do"

Me:"you've fallen on love with him"

She nods

Thelma:"then why break things off why not just tell him?"

Me:"it's not easy Thelma...you've been friends with Tsepo for a long time and you never told him how you feel even though you knew very well"

She looks down

Thelma:"well you too"

Me:"Yes... Yonela.. running away from your feelings won't help, you should tell him already...who knows maybe the guy loves you too"

Yonela:"the way he makes me feel with just a touch is scary..the way he looks into my eyes,his blue eyes tell a story....the chemistry is too much,I've never felt like this before guys...(she looks at me)... I'm scared Lisa.. he'll hurt me, or worse..I'll hurt him"

I signal her to come closer to me,she comes to me

I sit up

Me:"I know it's very scary...you just protecting your feelings... look you know my story with Quinton and all the shit we've been through right"

Yonela:"but Quinton loves you unconditionally"

Me:"that doesn't make him the most perfect man...he still makes some stupid mistakes and hurts my feelings and I do some stuff that hurts his feelings too,we drive each other mad at times, we sleep angry at each other some other times...but Nella that doesn't mean we stop

loving each other, the love will always be there, and as long as we have that love for each other that love will always conquer and rise above everything else that didn't matter..we all humans and we all make some bad decisions and say shit we don't mean and drift apart, but if the love is real we'll always find a way back into each other's arms..you can't run away from your feelings, they reside in your heart and you can never run away from your heart"

Silence

Thelma:"shit that's deep"

We laugh

Yonela:"thanks Lisa, you always have the right things to say...I'll think about what you just said"

Me:"you do that while I take a quick nap"

They laugh at me I blank out

I wake up as I feel my body bumping up and down

I sit up and realise I'm in the backseat of my car, Yonela is driving

Me:"guys...where we going...?"

I look out the window it's getting dark

Me:"oh shuu what time is it! My babies!"

Thelma:"we taking you home"

Me:"yoh guys why didn't yall wake me up earlier?"

Yonela:"you were so peaceful"

Me:"mxm... Eish where's my phone, Mah must've called me a thousand times"

Thelma gives me my phone and I have no missed calls and no messages

Me:"wow, not even my husband is worried about me"

I try calling Mah but she doesn't pick up

Me:"yooohh mh mh mh mu baby Nkosi yam...she must be starving for her milk"

Yonela:"oh come on I'm sure the three bottles was enough...nanku uMah engakofoni"(since mah hasn't called yet)

Me:"no no..but she needs me,mmh I should've never went to school what was I thinking...yoh, my cuddle muffins and poonkie bear"

They laugh at me

Yonela:"chill girl"

Me:"chill!? You don't know how I'm feeling so sush!"

Thelma:"yoh"

I look out the window this is not the way home

Me:"guys we don't have time to be passing places...ayibo I have a four week old daughter...kanti how is you nina! Tshin these women my loort!"

They busy giggling I swear I'm gonna strangle them!

Me:"guys what are we doing in Clifton? We supposed to be in Westcliff!?"

Clifton is at the top list of one of the most expensive suburbs in South Africa, we can't afford to be here

Me:"am I going crazy maybe? Why am I talking alone PEOPLE!?"

Thelma:"we right here and you shouting... maybe you are going crazy"

Me:"this girl"

I attempt to strangle her but Yonela turns the car left and right making me fall back

Yonela:"ladies..chill"

Me:"you tell me to chill one more time I swear Yonela we'll all die in this car"

Then:"yohh"

I sit back , I feel tears threaten, I need to hold my little princess I need to feel her mouth hogging my nipples

Damn I feel like a part of me is missing

They finally park in front of some big gate they press some nice looking technical thingy

"Guests name?"

A robotic woman voice speaks...mmmh fancy

Yonela:"Yonela Griffins"

"Please wait"

We wait a few minutes

"Welcome, please proceed in"

The gate opens

I chuckle

Me:"wow guys, I thought things like that only happen in movies"

We drive for a while

Thelma:"yohh this is the longest drive through I've ever seen"

Yonela:"tell me about it?"

Me:"what are we even doing here, visiting the president?"

Thelma:"are you sure this is the address yonela?"

Yonela:"yes I'm sure..they wouldn't have let us in if we got the wrong house?"

We park in front of another gate

Thelma:"ayibo another one?"

Me:"is this even a house..wow guys look at the lights on the gate"

Yonela:"Yonela Griffins"

Thelma:"damn the gate is magical,the green colour"

It reminds me of my diamonds

Me:tell me about it"

"Welcome, please proceed in"

The gate opens

We all gasp at the same time

This house is one huge ass house

Yonela:"Paradise"

It's a three story long house

Me:"I don't wanna curse but.....Fuck!! What is this place?...guys the green lights... I'm so in love"

Thelma:"this is heaven"

Yonela:"I wouldn't mind sleeping outside right on that yard"

Thelma:"let's get in"

Me:"don't we need some kinda passport to get in here?"

Yonela:"maybe we should take off our shoes"

We laugh and get off the car, On my word a person can only dream of living here

Thelma presses a button next to the door

The door opens itself

And it's completely dark inside

Me:"it's so dark?... guys,maybe we should wait before we get in

They pull me inside

The lights go on

"SURPRISE!!"

I look around and Quinton is holding Rae and mah is holding Kyle,Q's whole family is here even

mom, Bella and her husband and child, Brandon and other people
Me: "w w what's going on?"
Quinton: "welcome home bub"
I look at him for a while and I get a little light headed
The lights go off again!

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 18

-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-
-

My eyes open a bit and I'm met by Quinton's mesmerizing eyes, he smiles

I don't take my eyes off him

Quinton: "are you okay bub?"

Me: "love bug... I just had the craziest dream ever"

Quinton: "really? Tell me about it"

Me: "well I dreamt like Yonela and Thelma took me to this huge beautiful house that looked like heaven, when we got inside everyone shouted surprise and you said welcome home....."

I tilt my head up and see people's heads over me

Me: "and you were there"

I point at Brandon

Me: "and you were there"

I point at all the heads surrounding me

Me: "and you too..and you....heeyy...."

I sit up and Quinton helps me

I look around and I'm still on the same spot and everyone is here also my babies, I look back at Quinton

Quinton: "it was not a dream bub... welcome home"

I get up on my feet and look at Yonela and Thelma

Them: "Surprise"

I shake my head smiling,
I look around the house it's soooo beautiful, I look back at Quinton
Me:"is this all mine?"
Quinton:"you bet your life it is"
I scream in excitement, I notice everyone getting a shock
Me:"Ohhhh my Gooosshhhh!!"
I start walking around looking at it, everything is already set, everything is brand new
from the beautiful sofas in the lounge not to mention the biggest TV screen I've ever
seen built in the wall it takes up alot of the wall,most of the things are baby proofed....I
rush to the kitchen
Me:"this is beautifuuuuul"
I just love the red and white theme with black... I was about to take the stairs when I
notice a lift..ohh hell no!!
This is one big house, three stories!? Like what the hell
I look back at Quinton he has a big grin on his face, I walk up to him and stand right
infront of him
Me:"this is what you've been busy with all alone?"
Quinton:"yes"
Me:"this is the cause of the password lock on your phone,not being home most of the
time, Wednesday's three o'clock meetings, mysterious phonecalls?"
Quinton:"yeah pretty much"
Tears immediately escape from my eyes
Me:"you planned all this for me?"
Quinton:"yes bub..for you,me and our kids"
Me:"a house Quinton?"
Quinton:"a mansion babe..fit for a Queen"
I laugh through the tears
Me:"I I'm so sorry... I'm so sorry for ever doubting you,for only thinking of the worst from
you.... I'm so sorry love bug"
Quinton:"Lisa...I'll never ever repeat that same mistake ever again... I love you, you the
only woman for me..out of all the woman around the world... I chose you,and I'll forever
choose you for the rest of our lives and this house..is nothing compared to the love I
have for you"
"Ncwoooo"
That's the family and friends behind me
I attack him with a big hug
Me:"I love you plus plus plus infinity"
I remove my head from his shoulder we look at each other then kiss
"Okay okay that's enough jeez"
That's Aidan being jealous
I turn to be met by mom
Me:"mommy..when did you even get here? Why you never told me anything? I trusted
you"
Mom:"I love you too, come here"
I walk up to her with my arms folded as I'm supposedly trying to be mad at her
She hugs me, I hug back

Me:"I missed you"

I last saw her the time I was still admitted

Mom:"I missed you too"

We break the hug then I hug Q's mom Candra and his two weird brothers

Me:"I'm gonna hug you now"

Clyde:"if that's what you want"

Me:"yeah.."

I get closer and open my arms he holds me tight

Me:"please don't break my bones"

He let's go, yeah he's still wierd and intimidating as hell.

I look at Mah Vic and squint my eyes at her

Me:"how long have you known?"

Mah:"to be honest I only knew yesterday"

Me:"really?"

Quinton:"I knew you and Mah like to sit and gossip together everyday so I couldn't trust her not to spill it out"

Mah:"and he did good, I could've never kept such exciting news to myself"

I chuckle

Me:"Brandon dude"

Brandon:"surprise!"

Me:"mxm idiot"

He sticks his tongue out

Me:"Tsepo...you too"

Tsepo:"how can I miss your house warming party"

Me:"Troy"

Troy:"Lisa"

I smile at him

Troy:"congratulations,with everything"

Me:"thank you"

We've never talked since I gave birth,like person talk, I need to know if is he okay... I mean we all were expecting him to be the father,and knowing his past it must've crashed home somehow.

I look at Thelma and Yonela who are holding Kyle and Rae

Me:"y'all sneaky basturds"

Yonela:"what did we do"

Me:"y'all knew all this time"

Thelma:"to be fair it's the first time we seeing the house"

Me:"yeah right... then what have yall been gossiping about and giggling about on your phones"

Yonela:"oh...well that would be our contributions to a certain room"

Quinton:"okay, everyone please let's head to the back while the girls go show Lisa their surprise for her... dinner will be served"

Everyone heads to the back

Me:"another surprise?"

Yonela:"upstairs"

I take Rae from Yonela while Thelma holds Kyle we head upstairs we reach the second

floor, this place is mostly gold and white very classy elegant and simple yet very beautiful, we get to the room and make our way in
Me(surprised):"no way!!....guys, this is amazing"
It's all purple and white
Me:"it's sooo cute!"
There's a comfy couch at the corner and a big treasure chest with toys inside everything looks polished yet very cosy and babish at the same time
I look at them and smile
Me:"Y'all did all this?"
Yonela:"well we didn't decorate it ourselves, Quinton made us talk to the woman who will be responsible for decorating the house, so we bought everything and told her the colours and all then she put it together like this"
Me:"I'm speechless"
Thelma:"bitch you better cry or else"
I laugh and fake tears of joy and hug them
Me:"you guys.. I love y'all so much"
Thelma:"we live you to bitch"
Me:"okay dude ease it on that word"
Thelma:"sorry"
Me:"it's cool"
Thelma:"bitch"
We burst into laughter
Me:"wow..some friend you are"
Yonela:"we not done...(looks at Kyle)...you didn't think we forgot about you now did you?"
Kyle:"bbrrrrbbrrrrr "
Me:"Quinton allowed y'all to do his too? I thought her want his soccer theme"
Yonela:"follow me"
Me:"how do you know your way?"
Yonela:"I don't.. we'll just go trying every door"
We laugh and try the room right across Rae's room and we found it
Me:"that was quick"
Thelma:"it has to be close to his sister"
Me:"wow this is so cute guys... I'm in love"
Kyle(screaming):"aahhhh !!"
Me:"he loves it too"
Yonela:"I'm glad y'all do"
It's dark blue and white, it still a soccer theme just better than before"
"Lisa and your crew!! We waiting for y'all"
That's Aidan calling us
Thelma:"uyadelela lomfana..Lisa and crew? Heee "
Yonela:"I wish we could explore more of this house"
Me:"this is not your last visit"
Thelma:"yoh..you have to think twice about coming here...the extra petrol used just by your drive through"
Me:"shut up wena"

We laugh and head downstairs Rae starts getting irritated as she attempts crying I quickly unbutton the few buttons of my dress and take out my boob she sucks like her life depends on it

Thelma:"aaww little pookie bear is hungry"

She kisses her cheek

As we carry on walking we get to everyone else

This is the best back yard I've ever seen,the shelter like place near the pool is priceless,I don't even know how to explain it..

I can't believe that this is our house like seriously I feel like I'm in the "top billing show"or "cribs"

Quinton:"finally! Come sit next to me"

I roll my eyes and sit next to him

Me:"as if I was going to sit anywhere else"

He kisses my cheek

Quinton:"don't back chat your husband"

Mom:"he's right Lisa...cause the cows there's no refund "

We all laugh

Aidan:"let's dig in already"

Brandon:"please"

Everyone pick up their forks and knives

Quinton:"wait"

Clyde:" not another speech please"

We laugh

Brandon:"we know,you love her she loves you...love everywhere...now let's get on with this chow"

Me:"oh God... Brandon you still obsessed with food"

Yonela:"he'll never stop this one"

Brandon (looks at yonela):"but I can still do this"

He flexes his muscles which are visible underneath his long shirt

Yonela laughs

Yonela:"boy please"

Brandon:"girl please stop drooling,there's adults here"

Me:"would you two stop already"

Aidan:"yeah stop already"

He gives her an undermining look

Me:"love bug you wanted to say something?"

Everyone has his attention

Quinton:"oh yes...let us pray"

I look at him shocked with a big smile on my face

Quinton:"close your mouth and eyes bub"

I chuckle then we all close our eyes

Quinton:"dear God,thank you for this wonderful day,that we all got to come together as family and friends to rejoice together and enjoy this wonderful meal you've blessed us with..Amen"

Everyone:"Amen"

Q's mom:"that's a first"

Candra:"I'm shocked just as you mom"
Brandon:"it's gonna rain cats and dogs"
We all laugh and enjoy the food over light conversations
Quinton:"cover your boob bub"
Me:"but Rae is still drinking"
He takes off his jacket and covers Rachel and my breasts
I hear a few laughs
Me:"territorial much?"
Mom:"that's only his to see"
Quinton (smiles):"tell her mom...she thinks they hers alone"
I roll my eyes
Everyone around the table is having their own conversation, I notice Rae is fast asleep
and so is Kyle so I get up
Quinton:"where you going?"
Me:"I'm going to put my babies to bed"
Quinton:"oh okay..let me kiss them first"
He kisses Rae's forehead and Kyle's cheek, Mah and I head up the stairs to go put
them in their rooms,we make our way downstairs
Mah:"I guess you not going to get used to using the lift"
Me:"I really don't think I will..."
Mah:"but the stairs will get tiring, I'm sure your bedroom is on the third floor"
Me:"yeah that is alot of steps hey and I heard there's a rooftop"
Mah:"have you seen the whole house?"
Me:"No I haven't... there's so many doors in the second floor lining along with Kyle's and
Rae's rooms"
Mah:"I wonder what rooms are those"
Me:"I haven't even seen our room"
Mah:"I'm sure he'll show you around once everyone has left"
Me:"he has too we won't leave any coner unseen"
We get to the table and everyone has spread out, Yonela, Thelma,Candra,
Brandon,Tsepo and Troy are standing in one corner laughing and holding glasses of
wine some beer....a bit far from them is Aidan, Clyde and Quinton...then the mommies
are sitting together having their own conversation,Mah Vic goes to join them while I
head towards my man.
They engaging in a serious conversation so I go sit next to Quinton
Clyde:"they seem to have gone quiet now"
Aidan:"they probably planning they next move"
Quinton holds me against him and I lay my head on his shoulder
Quinton:"are you good?"
He speaks softly again my earn
I nod
Quinton:"you not feeling cold?"
It is getting a bit chilly out here
Me:"I am"
He takes off his jacket and helps me wear it and he's left in his short sleeve white shirt, I
wrap my arms around him

Quinton:"warmer?"

Me:"yes,thank you"

Quinton:"you welcome,even though I have to freeze to death"

I giggle

Me:"what a gentleman"

Quinton:"No I'm a freezingman"

Me:"mxm die"

He looks at me shocked I stick out my tongue he kisses it,we play tongue fight until we end up kissing

"Quinton"

He pushes his tongue deeper into my mouth

"Quinton"

I pull out he rolls his eyes then looks at Aidan who's calling him

Aidan:"why don't you guys just tell us to leave do y'all can get on with it"

Quinton:"is that why you interrupted me?"

Aidan:"yes"

Quinton:"mxm"

He looks back at me, he was about to kiss me but I place my hand on his lips blocking him

Me:"enough"

He looks back at Aidan with squinted eyes

Quinton:"now look what you've done"

Aidan (laughs):"my bad"

Clyde:"didn't you have something important to say?"

I look at Quinton confused

Quinton:"oh yes... thanks for reminding me man"

He looks at Aidan

Quinton:"now that's what you can interrupt me for,not the shit you did"

Aidan:"yeah whatever, y'all should get a room"

Quinton:"you should get your own house to say that shit"

He gets up and pulls my hands as he leads the way to the table,he picks a glass and a fork then hits the fork against the glass getting everyone's attention

Quinton:"now that I have your attention...can you all please come closer"

Everyone gets back to the table

I look at him with a questioning look

He winks and kisses my forehead

Quinton::"please take your seats"

They all sit down

Quinton:"so I understand that everyone has been in the dark with the whole Lisa's pregnancy story and I understand that we need to explain"

Candra:"I've been meaning to ask but..."

Quinton:"Lisa found out she was pregnant two months ago... She found out she was two months and two weeks pregnant at that time... we were surprised since that would've made it impossible for the baby to be mine since we were never intimate since we were separated during December until after our wedding day..."

Q's mom:"so y'all should've known that it's impossible for her to be pregnant and go

address the doctor about it"

Quinton:"actually it was possible that she could've been pregnant"

Candra:"which means y'all were intimate sometime during y'all separation?"

Quinton:"No...she was intimate with someone else"

I look down and fiddle with my hands,well this is embarrassing,but they had to know, to clarify why we believed that pregnancy test when it showed me the wrong term

Quinton:"so when she did some counting and reminisced back it made sense and was convinced that it was this other man's baby...she told me about it, I didn't take it well but we worked it out...we were just waiting for her to loose the baby, but we were also hoping for a miracle"

Aidan:"why were you waiting for her to loose it? Did you ask her to abort the time you disappeared to Brandon?"

Quinton:"how many glasses of wine did you have?"

Aidan:"I'm not sure"

Quinton:"cause you talking a whole lotta things that'll make me kick your ass,I would never ask anyone to do that shit,what do you take me for?"

Q's mom:"then why were you wanting for the baby to not make it?"

Me:"cause the doctors said I will never be able to carry full term because of my damaged cervix"

Candra(shocked):"whoaa that must've been a horrible thing to know... sorry"

Q's mom:"but how come the baby made it?"

Quinton:"I guess God had other plans for us"

Q's mom:"so who was supposedly to be the father of this baby?"

Silence

Q's mom:"I asked a question"

I look at Quinton he looks at me too

He looks back at his mother

Quinton:"Troy"

Everyone looks at Troy, he picks up his glass and takes a sip of his drink

Q's mom:"the boss?"

Me:"it was before he became my boss"

I bite my tongue after I said that and look down

Q's mom:"so you had an affair with this man"

Me:"it was not an affair, Quinton and I were

Q's mom:"I don't care! You knew y'all were still going to get back together, y'all always do, a few months of going through a rough patch you already giving up on my son once again for another man"

Me:"we had broken things off at that time, I tried giving him a chance but....

Q's mom:"but he was protecting you! Like he always has but you too damn loose to see it"

Mom:"Loose!!?"

Q's mom:"Yes! Loose...your daughter has always given up easily and always chose another man over my son...she acts like a Bitch!"

I hear a clapping sound I look up and mom has just slapped her

Mom:"don't you ever call my daughter a bitch or loose ever again...You hear me!!!!"

Q's mom:"look at all this...she has sucked my son's bank account dry with this house...a

house bigger than his home.. before she came to the picture my son had no problem with staying in a two bedroom apartment in the poor neighborhood but since he started showing interest in your daughter....

"ENOUGH!"

everyone startles as Quinton just broke his glass

Quinton:"shut up!"

Q's mom:"Quinton...you made a mistake marrying this....

Quinton:"I said shut up mother!!"

I look at his mom, I can see through her chest,her heart is burning her eyes are full of hatred, I look up next to her,I startle as I see the same figure of a man who is in a long black hooded coat....the exact same way as I saw through the diamonds.. I stare at the man he looks up at me while holding Quinton's mom's shoulders

He takes off his hood,my eyes widen as I see Quinton's father staring at me smirking. He's the one with the hatred, he doesn't want Quinton and I together..he's been using he's evil ways through Quinton's mom...that's why she has a heart problem, he's been burning all the goodness that's in her

Q's dad:"you might've been able to save that baby...but she's going to die one way or the other....the Mthethwa blood can never combine with the O'Briens bloodline...not under my watch!!"

.....

Q's mom:"I won't sit here and be disrespected by you!"

She gets up and leaves I didn't even hear what Quinton said to her

He holds me

Quinton:"I'm sorry about that"

Me:"it's okay"

Mom:"okay? How can she be so cruel?"

Troy:"it's my fault... I should've..."

Me:"No...it's not your fault, not is it mine,it's not anyone's fault...she's just being used by the devil,it's not her"

Brandon:"I think it's time for me to go guys"

He looks at his wrist watch

Yonela:"yeah,we should get going, it's very late"

Troy:"I also have to get going,work tomorrow"

Me:"thanks for coming guys... I really enjoyed myself, this was the best surprise ever, despite how it ended... I'm thankful to you guys, y'all the best friends we could ever ask for"

Thelma:"ncwoooo....we love you too cutie and I hope all of you boys learnt a lot from what Quinton did for Lisa today...mmmh?"

She says looking at Tsepo up and down

We burst into laughter

Tsepo:"eish"

He scratches his head looking down

Thelma:"I'm just saying hey..first it was the jet then Dubai now this... I just hope y'all taking notes.....no pressure though"

We laugh

Aidan (sarcasm):"yeah right...no pressure felt"

Clyde:"and that's why I'm single"

Brandon:"lucky you man"

Yonela:"you not single?"

Brandon:"sorry babe.. I'm now a taken man"

Me:"really!?"

Brandon:"yep we've been together for two months now"

Yonela:"two months? Damn it's serious..that's a first"

Brandon:"jealous much? Don't worry I'll call you when things don't work out"

She rolls her eyes

Yonela:"I'm not that desperate...even if I was I wouldn't date you even if you were the last man on planet Earth"

Brandon:"say what you wanna say but we both know the truth sweetheart"

He winks at her

Me:"okay ok... goodnight guys"

We accompany them out.

After more hugs and goodbyes we head back inside,it's now him and I,mom went back to the hotel she was staying in while helping Quinton with the house surprise. Mah also insisted to go home so Clyde offered to take her home.

Quinton:"I'm sorry about mom's behaviour, I really don't know what's gotten into her"

Me:"it's okay,I understand....do you remember the prediction I was shown by the diamonds?"

Quinton:"yeah,looks like the same thing happened but in a different way"

Me:"yeah,cause I noticed the same man in a dark cloth standing behind her holding her shoulder"

Quinton:"really?...what's that man's purpose anyway?"

Me:"he's controlling your mom... he's an enemy of my father, we'll never be happy until he rests"

He looks at me confused

Me:"it's your father,he's the one filling your mom's heart with so much hatred,and he promised to kill our princess"

He's eyes change to shock and anger

Quinton:"you mean my little innocent Rachelle?"

I nod

Me:"he said he can never allow the Mthethwa and the O'Brien bloodline be one"

Quinton:"I'm gonna kill him"

Me:"he's already dead Quinton"

Quinton:"but Lisa.. we've been praying, aren't things supposed to be changing?"

Me:"they are Quinton, Satan doesn't give up easily....we need to improve our faith, we need to be strong together,we have to pray for our children"

Quinton:"I think it's time I went with you to church"

My eyes widen,did I just hear him correct?

Quinton:"every Sundays we all go to church,as a family"

My God is an awesome God, this is the very same man who wanted nothing with religion,now he's the one leading his family in that direction

Me (smiles):"that's a great idea love bug... I'm so proud of you"

Quinton:"if this is the only way to fight for my family, then I'd do it my whole life.. I love

you bub, I love my kids, y'all mean the world to me, and I can't afford to lose any of you... I need this great God you boast about to protect us"

Me: "he will"

I pull him closer, he holds me around my waist and we kiss

Quinton: "let's look around the rest of the house shall we?"

Me: "please!"

He laughs as he leads the way, we look at the whole house from all the floors... there's a big gym room with mirrors everywhere, a cinema room, a game room for us and one for the kids, oh in the second floor there's a bunch of babies rooms.. along Kyle's line it's the boys rooms and along Rae's line it's the girls rooms... I was shocked, how many kids does he think we'll have, cause that's like ten spare kids rooms all together, so give more boys and five more girls, This guy is crazy for real, I'm never giving birth that many times, four kids is my limit, so we'll have two more then after that he can forget! Ha! I'd die if I listen to everything Quinton says.

There's a jacuzzi room it also has a spar, so that's where we get our bodies rejuvenated, there's also a bar, it looks like a party room cause it has everything a club would have.. what shocked me the most was the prayer room, it's designed in a way where we can all enjoy as a family, it has our pictures of us and the kids, the wall has different headings all over, where we'll be sticking different things according to the heading... this is how the heading read.. 1. YOUR FAVORITE VERSE TODAY..... 2. HOW WAS YOUR DAY 3. WHAT DID YOU PRAY FOR THE MOST TODAY... 4. WHAT GOAL DO YOU WANT GOD TO HELP YOU ACHIEVE THE MOST.... 5. WHAT DID YOU DO TO MAKE GOD PROUD TODAY... 6. THE NAUGHTY LIST.

The naughty list has all our names, and there's red and gold stickers, so everyone gets a sticker everyday your color depends on your behavior on that day... if you've been naughty you get a red sticker if you've been good you get a gold sticker, we all check at the end of the month on who has the most red stickers then we find a suitable punishment for that person, then whoever has the most gold gets a suitable reward, if you have more than fifteen red stickers you not getting anything nice for the rest of the coming month. Quinton came up with the idea of the naughty list, and the other ideas he got a lot of help from mom on the design of this room. I love it, I can't wait until Kyle and Rae are all grown enough to participate. I also can't wait to see all the stupid punishments Quinton will give them, oh my poor babies.

Me: "wow baby, this house is so yet so homey at the same time"

Quinton: "that's what I was trying to achieve... a cosy and playful environment for us to enjoy as a family... a place where our kids will want to be all the time... I made sure I made it so cool so that they hate being away from home"

Me: "yeah you really achieved that part, I mean this place has everything, even a bowling area? I see you also bought trigger your horse too.. so what will we do when we want to go out if everything is here?"

Quinton: "I don't know, I guess we could travel"

I hit my head

Me: "I even forgot I have a private jet"

We burst into laughter

Quinton: "you'll get used to it... you've suffered enough now bub.. it's time you live the life you so rightfully deserve"

I'm smiling ear to ear as we now making our way to the lift
Me:"so where we going now?"
Quinton:"it's a surprise"
Me:"dude! How many surprises do you have"
Quinton:"plenty...just don't faint on me again"
I laugh
Me:"mxm shut up.. nothing can beat this house"
Quinton:"really?"
Me:"yep,it's the best"
The lifts stops and opens
We make our way out
Quinton:"Abra kadebra! Tada!"
He switches on the lights and I'm standing in front of two sexy machines .
I'm stuck, frozen
Quinton:"Lisa?...hello?"
He waved his hand in front of my face
Quinton:"bub?"
He shakes me
Me:"Quinton"
Quinton:"Lisa"
Me:"cars"
Quinton:"yes love cars"
Me:"beautiful cars"
Quinton:"mhm sexy cars"
Me:"our cars"
Quinton:"yes,our cars"
I look at him then scream my lungs out he screams too as we get louder and louder... I
attack him with a big hug he picks me up and spins me
Me:"give me the damn keys!"
He takes them out his pocket and gives them to me
I open the Mercedes GLE 63 S Coupe...it's so beautiful, it's everything a mother could
ask for big enough for my kids and I and my husband,it's just amazing
Quinton:"wanna test it?"
Me:"Nah I'll test it tomorrow... so that one is yours?"
I point at the Mercedes AMG GT 63 S 4matic
Quinton:"well I bought this one specially for you and that one for me..but since you my
wife you can use anyone you want anytime"
Me:"Quinton..what am I going to buy for myself when I start working? If you busy buying
all these things"
Quinton:"you'll still buy the things you've always wanted.. it won't hurt to have more than
two cars,or houses"
Me:"it's like everything we've always pillow talked about is really happening"
Quinton:"you thought it would just end on the pillows?"
Me:"No,but I never thought it'd be this soon.... I mean come on... I'm nineteen, I've been
married twice and divorced once, I've lived in more than two homes, I have a job I'm
studying,I have two babies, a husband, the biggest house I've ever seen, more than one

car,a private jet an amazing gift and the Greatest God beside me.... dude! Why am I still going to my twenties and thirties for when I've already been through so much?"

He laughs

Quinton:"yeah you kinda did over do it in life hey"

I burst into laughter

Me:"idiot..shut up and take me to the bedroom ...I feel like unleashing the Diva"

His eyes widen in amusement as he licks his lips

Quinton:"say no more!"

He picks me up and closes the door with his leg,I press the keys and the car locks we get inside the lift he puts me down and presses the third floor button repeatedly

I take my dress and bra,he looks at me

Quinton:"fuck!"

He presses the buttons more

I take off my panty,he picks me up and we head out the lift, I take off his shirt throwing it on the floor, he opens the door and throws me on the bed, I feel my body bounce on the soft covers, daammnn this room is magical,this is the comfiest bed I've ever slept in.

Me:"wait.. Quinton"

He stops kissing my neck

Me:"I just remembered"

Quinton:"what?"

Me:"we can't have sex now,it's still early"

Quinton:"fuck Lisa!"

Me:"I'm sorry"

He settles next to me and we both face the ceiling trying to catch out breath

I roll myself and get on top of him

Me:"but I can take care of you"

Quinton (smirks):"how exactly?"

I smirk then kiss his lips as I go down on him, I give him one hella blow job, he cums in my mouth as he groans out loud,he doesn't take it out as he's also holding my head forcing me to swallow

I get back up and we share a passionate kiss for about more than an hour, while playing and pausing of cause,we now just cuddling kissing and talking a whole lotta rubbish

Me:"is your money finished yet?"

Quinton:"it's getting there,you want it finished?"

Me:"yeah,I want you to do everything for me, buy me houses and cars all over the world and everything must be under my name...so once you broke I leave with everything leaving you with nothing"

He gasps holding his chest

Quinton:"so that's your agenda"

Me:"atleast now it's out there I don't have to hide it anymore"

Quinton:"I want a divorce"

I laugh

Me:"ohh if only it were that easy....the love potion I used on you will never allow you to do such"

Quinton:"I knew it!! I knew there was something wrong with me...when I was planning on buying this house I knew there was something wrong with me,I was being

controlled!...you little sly devil you!"

He spansks my butt making me giggle

Me:"look at you, you can't even hate me after I've told you my evil plans...and even if you try to leave me,I'll make sure you go crazy and pick up papers"

Quinton:"I officially hate you"

Me:"really?"

Quinton:"yes,with all my soul"

Me:"then don't kiss me"

I pout my lips next to his he looks away

Me:"I know you so disgusted by these juicy lips.. you hate them so much"

I place them on his cheek..he turns his head slowly

Quinton:"I don't want them"

Me:"I know..you hate me so much"

He turn to look at me fully our lips are now touching

Quinton:"you make me wanna vomit"

Me(whispers):"you can't stand the sight of me"

Quinton:"I will never do this to you again"

He pulls my bottom lip and we kiss ,he breaks it

Quinton:"and I won't ever dream of doing this"

He puts his tongue in my mouth and we kiss playing with each other's tongues, his leg gets inbetween mine as he holds me tight against his naked body,his hand rested on my face

Quinton:"I so hate you"

Quinton:"I hate how much I love you"

Me:"buy me more houses,designer clothes and flashy cars and I'll stick around"

Quinton:"as you wish"

I laugh

Me:"oh my gosh why didn't I use you like this all these years?"

Quinton:"cause I used to blind you with the good vitamin D"

He winks

Me(laughing):"mxm,damn you Mr B!"

Quinton:"bub"

Me:"love bug"

Quinton:"please tell me a bedtime story"

Me:"I sometimes forget I actually have three children"

Quinton:"I'm no child! I'm the man of this house...now tell me a story woman!"

I laugh

Me:"once apon a time"

He adjusts himself and rests his head on chest

Me:"there was a girl and a boy who fell madly in love, they kissed and had many babies then got married and lived happily ever after..the end"

He looks up at me

Quinton:"that's was the shortest most weird story I've ever heard"

Me:"goodnight love bug"

Quinton:"but...."

Me:"I love you"

I kiss his forehead then turn my back on him and sleep
He kisses the back of my neck
Then wraps himself around me
Quinton:"goodnight bub"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 19

-
-
-
-
-

👑 QUINTON 👑

-
-
-
-
-

FOUR MONTHS LATER

-
-
-

Rae is now five months old and Kyle is eight months and yes they are a whole lotta work, Kyle can now say a few words and his first words were dada, I'm a proud dad,he can say mama and a bunch of other stuff we don't hear, although he can't say a proper sentence yet..... Mah Vic has been of a lot of help,and we also now have more helpers since it's a bigger house Mah will need help and she's only responsible for the kids,the cleaning and cooking are done by others. I've been going to church with Lisa and I must say it has been fun, turns out church is not as boring as I thought,it's actually fun depending on the pastor, the keyboard and drum guy, damn those three people make church so much fun.... we've been praying everyday and we've never been this happy in a long time,no drama so far, mom tried to apologise but Lisa said she can still sense her burning heart, she doesn't mean it she just wants to be closer to Rae. I'm just glad we not letting any of that get between us, I've never felt this drawn to one person, each and everyday day I'm falling deep and deeper inlove with this one person. I don't even remember our last fight,we don't do that anymore,instead there's more laughter and peace. I'm now on way back home, after a long day at work with back to back meetings then I had to go see how far is Aidan in tracking whoever is taking our dealers out one by one, that side of the business is really crumbling and it's stressing me out..it's been a while now and we still don't know who's taking out our guys, our stuff(drugs) is also disappearing including the diamonds so we've stopped transporting them for now...this guy is obviously very good and way ahead of

us,he's planned this....we've had to cancel all our deals since they keep getting lost. I really don't know what's going on and I need to get to the bottom of this once and for all.... I know I should quit this life and I'm planning to but first I need to sort this out cause this person is obviously getting personal.

I notice a woman running across the road I hit the breaks as quick as I could before I hit her....she stops in shock and my car stops right in front of her touching her legs, she looks at the car for a while before she falls to the ground.

I make my way out of the car and go check on her, it the same girl I helped with her car months ago,and the one Lisa saw through her diamonds, I pick her up and put her on the back seat of the car then drive off, luckily there's not much cars around here so no one saw well not that I know of.

I speed off I get home, the gate opens, I just had to put my fingerprint for it to open...only my mine and Lisa's fingerprints are recognised,the rest have to call.

I park the car in front of the house then make my way in

Me:"Honey I'm home!"

Silence

Me:"Lisakhanya!"

"I'm coming!"

Me:"wow this girl is not used to romance"

She pops out from the lift and come to me running we hug she kisses me all over my face

Lisa:"you late"

Me:"it's better than sorry"

Lisa:"whatever...what did you get for me?"

I take off my watch

Me:"I got you a watch"

Lisa (excitedly):"yeyyi it's the exact same one you get me everyday"

Me:"yeah..I know how much you love it"

Lisa:"thanks love bug you so romantic"

Me:"they don't call me Romeo for nothing"

She laughs

Lisa:"they've never called you Romeo"

Me:"go with the flow woman"

Lisa:"Ohhhh...I just love my Romeo"

Me:"I love you too Juliet"

We laugh

Me:"oh yeah...Uhm I kinda bummed into someone on my way home"

Lisa:"who?"

Me:"wait,I'll be right back"

I make my way out to the car, I open the back and pick her up,she's still passed out, we make our way in, I pass Lisa and head to the lounge as she follows behind me, I know she's confused as hell

Lisa:"who's this?"

Me:"take a close look"

She looks at her carefully

She gasps

Lisa:" it's it's the girl!"

Me:"yeah I almost knocked her over with the car, I stopped right in front of her and she collapsed

due to shock"

Lisa:"she looks like a mess... I wonder if her father has kicked her out yet"

Me:"is it not obvious...look at her"

Lisa:"but Quinton...on the floor though? Why not put her on the couch"

Me:"on these very white expensive Egyptian comfy couches?"

She laughs

Lisa:"you so mean"

Me:"this matt is comfortable enough"

Lisa:"you won't see heaven"

I pull her closer

Me:"but I've already got heaven right here"

She blushes as her lips find mine

"Where am I?"

She pulls out, we look at her

Lisa:"hi...are you okay? My husband almost ran you over with his car and you passed out"

Her:"I'm fine...can I go now"

Me:"not so fast....what are you doing running across the road at night?"

Her:"I don't have to answer to you"

Me:"so much attitude for someone who doesn't know where she is"

Her:"please I don't want any trouble just let me go"

Lisa:"you were kicked out by your father who has been sexually abusing you and making you a hoe for a living, you lost your mom at a very young age,and you were left with this evil man who's been touching you from a very tender age... something went wrong a few days ago when you had to satisfy him, he tried hitting you but something stopped him and something pushed him,he fell then called you a witch then kicked you out...and now you have no place to stay"

She's looking at her shocked

Her:"have you been following me? Are you the person whose been stalking me all along?"

Lisa:"No I'm not stalking you, I've had a vision about you and I want to help you"

Her:"help me? Who sent you?"

Lisa:"God... I want to help you,so that you can live a better life"

Her:"how can I trust yall?"

Me:"look around you... would you rather be out there...or here?"

She looks around the house in awe,her eyes land on me,she looks t me for a while

Her:"do I know you from somewhere?"

Me:"the guy who fixed your car"

She chuckles

Her:"I remember you"

Lisa:"yeah...so you see, you in good hands"

Her:"you don't know that man...he will find me and kill me...he told everyone in our neighborhood that I'm a witch,if he finds me he'll take me and the people will burn me"

Lisa:"he won't hurt you, you safe now"

Me:"you need to tell us everything about your father, everything that can land him behind bars"

She looks down,she's a mess,she looks broken, I don't think it's legal to be this underweight

Lisa:"before you do that...first get into something comfortable...come with me"

I look at her

Lisa:"just wait here first, I need to talk with my husband"

She grabs my hand and pulls me toward the back door,she opens the sliding door we walk out

Me:"we can't let her stay here"

Lisa:"we have to, she needs alot of protection, she's broken Q, I need to help her heal,she's so young"

Me:"I know...but Lisa, the last time we helped someone and bought her into our home, she ruined things between us"

Lisa:"I know what happened,but this time we have to help someone who's really in need of our help"

Me:"oh"

Lisa:"I know you were just helping out Sydney but you had your feelings and past emotions controlling you...and that's why it were easy for her to come between us,that girl in there she's a stranger,a child whom I'm meant to help spiritually..and besides we married and stronger now, nothing can come between us"

She holds my hands

Me:"yeah I guess you right, let's just help her quick so she can go"

She laughs

Lisa:"the rush?"

Me:"I'm still enjoying our privacy, soon Kyle and Enzo will be invading as soon as they turn three, then there goes our privacy for another fifteen years before they move out to varsity"

Lisa:"and we'll still be left with their little brother and sister "

Me:"you mean brothers and sisters"

Lisa:"yey I told you only two after them"

Me:"we'll see about that...you see all those rooms in the second floor, I want them all filled up"

Lisa:"we not having ten more kids and I'm not having this silly argument with you right now"

She pulls my hand but I pull her back and she falls in my arms

Me:"kiss me"

She leans closer and we kiss, I squeeze her butt cheek,she moans and pulls out pushing my chest

Lisa:"the poor child is waiting"

Me:"let her wait"

I pull her and kiss her,she tries to pull out but I hold her tighter, she tickles me, I laugh quickly letting her go,she runs from me

Me:"I'm not done with you!"

She sticks out her tongue

Lisa:"catch me if you can!"

She runs to the door I run after her, I catch her as soon as she reaches the lounge, holding her from behind, she's giggling non stop

Lisa(giggling):"let me go Q!"

Me:"you said I should catch you if I can"

I kiss her neck while tickling her, she's moving her body all over trying to stop me

Lisa:"Quinton stoop!... please (giggling)"

Me:"first give me a proper kiss"

Lisa (laughing):"okay ok! I will...just stop!"

I stop but don't let her go as I turn her around to look at me, she gets closer and kisses me, she tries pulling out

Me:"mh mh"

I kiss her till I pull out

Lisa:"dude, we have a guest"

Me (whispers):"it's my house I can do what I want to"
She shakes her head pecks my lips then turns and goes towards the girl,who happens to have been watching us
Lisa:"I'm sorry about that"
Her(smiling):"it's okay"
She seems amused
I sit on the couch,she's now also sitting on the couch
Lisa:"he can get very childish at times...(whispers)..I feel like I married a ten year old"
They giggle
Me:"you gossip like a ten year old yourself..cause I heard that"
She laugh even louder
Lisa:"let me show you your room and the bathroom where you'll freshen up"
She leads her towards the lift
I crouch on the sofa and switch on the TV.
The monitor goes off
"Nweeehh nweehhh!"
That's definitely Rachelle with her squeaky voice
The intercom goes on
"Love bug please go get her"
Me:"aarrghh"
"Thank you..mncwaaaa"
Yeah there's an intercom,since most rooms are sound proofed except the babies, and instead of shouting you just press the button and talk through the intercom, it's in every room of the house,it will be useful with these kids so that I don't have to look all over the house when I need someone to come get a spanking in my room.
I get up and take the stairs to Thumbelina's room
"Nweeehh nweehhh nweeehh!"
Me:"Jeez I'm here I'm here"
She continues crying
I pick her up
Me:"heeeey princess Thumbelina,don't cry daddy's here now"
She stops and looks at me,she's so beautiful,she's looking more and more like her mom by the day, she's gotten a whole lot chubby and is no more the tiny baby.
Me:"why you crying yellow mellow..."
She smiles
Me:"talk to daddy..who's bothering you, hmmm?"
Rae:"ggdgudjvhfhsjskvgfjgghv"
Me:"it's Kyle?"
She waves her hands in the air as she attempts to hold my face but I move away,she's a scratcher this one
Me:"I'll spank that bully brother of yours..let me go now"
She giggles,I love it when she giggles,this girl is always serious,she's unlike the very playful energetic Kyle.
We get inside his room,I find him standing while holding on his cot...this one will be walking in no time, he's too forward.
Me:"wasup Kyle"
Kyle:"dada dada!!"

My heart melts... I can't get over it,I feel like I've made it in life, I'm a dada
Me:"don't you try make me weak with your baby talk....what did you do to Rae?"
Kyle:"dada! Daaaaa!!"
He pick his hand up stretching it towards me
Me:"I'm not picking you up until you apologise to your sister"
I look at Rae who is concentrated more on my shirt and pulling the buttons
I bring her face closer to Kyle
Me:"kiss Bhabha boy"
Kyle:"bhabhaaa"
Me:"yes Bhabha...kiss her"
I mover her face closer till their lips touch then move her away
Me:"that's a good boy"
Kyle:"bhaaabhaaaa"
Me:"yeeesss you kissed bhabhaaa"
He giggles and so does Rae...damn my kids are beautiful
I pick Kyle up and hold him on the other side of my waist while Rae is on the other side, I get in the lift and we head to the lounge
I put them on the floor to play as I watch some TV.
"Did you make them food?"
I turn to look at her
Me:"No"
Lisa:"why not?"
Me:"they never asked"
Lisa:"seriously?"
Me:"I'm sorry"
Lisa:"you want to wait for them to cry first before you make them food"
Me:"I thought they were sorted...I mean look at them...they look so happy,chubby and full"
Lisa:"can you get any more idiotic?"
Me:"has anyone told you how cute you look when you mad?"
Lisa:"that's all you know, acting foolish when I'm being serious"
Me:"but you really are.. I'm being serious"
Lisa:"No Quinton, you have to learn to take care of the kids... I won't always be here, they'll be a time when you really need to babysit and I'll be gone for weeks,you mean I'll come back and my babies are bones?"
I laugh and stop immediately as I notice her angry face
Me:"No"
Lisa:"Yes...cause you starving them right now already"
Me:"I'm sorry"
Lisa:"No Quinton, these are not even fully toddlers yet"
Me:"they not?"
She gives me the look
Me:"I mean, of cause they not, sorry"
Lisa:"Argh!"
She clicks her tongue and storms to the kitchen, damn I'm in trouble
I look at Kyle and Rae
Me:"now look what y'all have done...why didn't yall remind me to make y'all food?...who's tummies are these?"

I tickle their tummies they giggle

Me:"now mommy is mad at me..great, y'all better pray she forgives me or I'm giving y'all away for adoption"

Rae:"hgidbyags hsggfjdhjjsuaygrhdjks"

Me:"yeah that's not saving your cute ass from adoption"

I get up and head to the kitchen,I find her mixing some of that porridge looking stuff she usually makes for them

I hold her from behind

Me:"Bub"

Lisa:...

Me:"Liss"

She ignores me

Me:"I'm sorry mommy"

I kiss her neck

Me:"next time I'll make the kids food as soon as they wake up and make sure they full,I'll check their diapers and change them if needs be...I've learnt my lesson please talk to me I can't take it anymore.... I can't breath... I'm dying....it's been too long"

She chuckles a bit and turns to face me

Lisa:"it's only been a few minutes"

Me:"felt like a lifetime"

Lisa:"drama king"

Me:"I learn from the best drama queen"

Lisa:"next time it'll be worse"

Me:"I'll make sure there is no next time"

Lisa:"good"

Me:"am I forgiven?"

She kisses me unexpectedly a deep lustful kiss,she pushes me against the wall her leg makes its way up,I lift it up and the other one too,she moans moving her waist in circles my dick hardens immediately,I turn and pin her against the wall, she grinds me even harder totally taking control,we literally having sex with clothes on right now

Coughs

I put her down we both look towards the kitchen entrance

"I'm sorry, I wanted water.. I'll leave"

She walks away fast

We look at each other

Lisa:"shit"

Me:"oops"

I shrug

Lisa:"poor girl, she must think we some kinda sex addicts"

Me:"are we not?"

We laugh

Lisa:"speak for yourself. I hate too much sex"

Me:"says the woman who was grinding me like no body's business a few seconds ago...look at this"

I point at my very hard dick which has become very visible underneath my pants

Lisa:"mmmh....fudge nuggets, that looks yummy"

Me:"you want a quickie?"

Lisa:"No..my babies are hungry"
She says still staring at my dick
Me:"you should go feed them then"
Lisa:"mmh...that looks sooo good"
She crosses her legs,fuck,I love it when she's hungry for it
She blinks a few times
Lisa:"let me go before I rape you"
Me(sarcastically):"that would be a shame"
She takes one bowl
Lisa:"please bring Rae's bowl"
I take Rachelle's food and follow her to the lounge
We get there and the stripper Girl is playing with the kids,which reminds me... I don't know her name
Lisa:"we sorry about that...you can go get the glass of water"
Her:"it's fine,this is your house you shouldn't apologise"
Me:"yeah bub, you shouldn't"
She looks at me giving me that look I shrug my shoulders
I pick Rae up and start feeding her while Lisa feeds Kyle
Me:"so what's your name again?"
Her:"oh.. I'm Thandolwethu Sibiya...but y'all can call me Thando"
Me:"mmh okay"
Lisa:"I think you can now tell us about your father"
She sighs
Thando:"he's not my real father"
Lisa(sighs):"oh thank goodness.... I was wondering how can a father do that to his own daughter...I can never imagine"
Thando:"well, my mother had an affair with this man many years ago,I was still nine or ten if I remember properly,I'm not sure, mom used to call him infront of me and sometimes call him over when dad wasn't home, she told me never to tell dad that she lets her 'friend' visit when he's away... I came back from school once and I saw this man pointing a gun at my father, he said to him that his time was up, and that he'll take good care of his wife and child then... (sobs)...then he shot him, I was standing right there.... I saw him kill my father... I hated him, he turned and he saw me, I tried to run but I was too late, he caught me, he told me to never tell a soul or he'll do the same to me and my mom (sobs).
Lisa:"you don't have to continue"
She shakes her head
Thando:"I promised never to tell a soul...and a few months later he married my mom, a few years later they started having problems,he'd beat her up infront of me and come home drunk everyday...one night my mom and I tried sneaking out and escaping, but he caught us,he beat us up, he strangled my mom to death.again I witnessed my mother's death too, these eyes hold a lot of trauma....he made me help him clean up his mess the same way I helped him clean up my father...no one knows where my parents are,he made up a story, everyone thinks my father went away on a business trip and never came back and mom disappeared,no one bothered investigating,he had connections everywhere,I fear him...he's a ruthless monster..when I turned thirteen he started having his way with me, he said since my mom is no more, I'll be the one to take her place...and I became his sex slave, he told me I can't stay with him for free,I need to hustle so we started a business and I was the product"

She keeps quiet

Lisa is in tears holding sleeping Kyle, while Rae is also fast asleep on me

Lisa:"you've been through the worst"

Me:"how can one person be so evil"

Lisa:"I thought I've had it rough... I've been lying to myself, you are beyond repair"

Thando:"I hate... I hate him.... I hate God"

Lisa gets up and puts Kyle on the couch then gives her a tight hug, they cry in each other's arms... I wipe the two tear drops that managed to escape

Lisa:"everything is going to be okay...you safe now"

Me:"how old are you?"

Thando(crying):"seventeen"

Shit! She's even younger than Lisa and she's been through so much

I go put the kids to sleep leaving them to calm themselves down

I head to the basement, where we have what I call the Tech room,where we do hacking, tracing and a bunch of other stuff we need to get business done.

I call Clyde

"Hello"

Me:"Clyde..we have a problem"

" Talk"

Me:"there's a young girl here..she's been through alot....she needs our help"

"Say no more....I'll be right there"

He hangs up

I check the time it's half past ten at night

Looks like we not sleeping

I hate men who take advantage of women whether young or old..they disgust me ...I hate them with passion.... but I can never hate them as much as Clyde,I know he'll go the extra mile on this one.

This guy needs to be dealt with as in yesterday!

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 20

-
-
-
-
-
-
-

💎 LISA 💎

-
-

-
-
-

I give her a glass of water, and I also drink up mine, I hand her the box of tissues, we blow our noses

Me: "that man will get what he rightfully deserves....oh my gosh, do you want ice cream?"

She chuckles

Me: "I'm sorry, I'm just trying to calm you down"

Thando: "I would love ice cream"

Me (smiling): "coming right up....what flavor do you like?"

Thando: "any flavor you have"

Me: "we have a bunch, that's why I asked, maybe there's a specific flavour that you like"

Thando: "vanilla"

Me: "I like you already"

She laughs

I walk up to the kitchen and take two small buckets of vanilla icecream and two spoons, as I'm about to make my way to the lounge the gate notification goes off "A Clyde O'Brien wishes to be granted access"

Me: "let him in"

"Access granted"

I go back to the couch and give her her icecream

Thando: "thank you...were you talking to a robot?"

Me (laughs): "yeah...that's Cynthia, she guards the gate and the house for us"

Thando: "so much security"

Me: "yeah, we live in a dangerous world, we have to be extra cautious"

Thando: "you have a beautiful home"

Me: "thank you"

Thando: "you look so young though, how old are you...if you don't mind me asking"

Me: "I'm nineteen... doing my third year in Law"

She gasps

Thando: "you so young and you married with two kids"

Me: "I know right, I surprise myself at times...but then if God has plans for you, you have to live up to them"

She sighs and takes in a spoonful of icecream

Thando: "God huh... I guess he loves certain people"

Me: "don't say that, God loves all his creation"

Thando: "which means he didn't create me"

Me: "I understand your anger right now, but trust me God has great plans for you...that's why you're here, he's heard your cries and things will look up for you from now on....but

Thando, you need to work with him, he's the last person you should be hating"

Thando: "can we not talk about God right now"

The door bell goes off

Me: "that must be Clyde"

I get up and open the door for him

Clyde: "hey Lisa"

Me:"hey Clyde"

I make way for him he walks inside

Then turns back to look at me

Clyde:"Quinton called me"

Me:"oh he did"

"Yes I did"

Clyde turns and Quinton makes his way to him

They do their handshake

Quinton:"thank for coming at short notice"

Clyde:"sounded important"

I stand next to Clyde

Quinton:"it is...she's that way"

He points behind himself

Quinton:"she's a broken soul man...the bastard did a huge number on her"

Clyde:"tell me more"

Me:"this way"

I lead them to the lounge, Thando is concentrated on the icecream which is finished...that was quick, we all sit down she puts away the empty bucket on the table then sits back

Me:"Thando,this is my bro in law Clyde,he's going to help us get to the bottom of this,Clyde this is Thando,the girl whom Quinton almost knocked out with his car"

Thando:"nice to meet you Clyde"

She stretches her hand for handshake

He nods

Her smile fades as she moves her hand back and sits back, I don't even wanna say anything cause Clyde will never change this hardcore persona of his

Quinton:"so her stepfather used to abuse her and now she's....

Clyde:"wait wait..

We all look at him

Clyde:"start from the beginning, how do you know this girl,where did y'all meet and why do y'all trust her enough to let her in your home and help her?"

Quinton:"oh..well the first time I met her, she was stranded in the middle of nowhere when I was going to visit Aidan, I helped her out since the car she was using broke down"

Me:"then I had a vision about her from the diamonds, I saw her being violated by this man she called her father, something in me just told me I need to help her"

Quinton:"a few months went by and today when I was coming back from work, was driving full speed when I almost knocked her out but luckily the car stopped before any damage could be done"

Me:"she fainted from shock and Quinton bought her here with him"

Quinton:"she told us exactly what Lisa saw in her vision but went deeper on how it all started"

Me:"she's still young,she has her whole life ahead of her,we need to help her,she needs us"

He looks at me for a while

Clyde:"you two love helping people, that's a good thing,but the same people always hurt

y'all..what if she becomes too comfortable?"

Thando:"I won't.. I

Clyde:"I wasn't talking to you"

She remains quiet and looks down shyly

Me:"she won't"

Clyde:"you trust her?"

Me:"yes,I trust her"

I look at her she smiles I smile back

Clyde:"do you trust her?"

He asks Quinton

Quinton:....

Clyde:"do you?"

Quinton:"Clyde, dude it's not about me trusting her right now,it's about us helping her...so are you in or out?"

Clyde(sighs):"okay...tell me,what's your story?"

Thando:...

We all look at her as she remains quiet

Clyde:"I'm talking to you now"

She looks up at him

Thando:"oh!"

Thando starts again telling us about her past and the things this man has put her through

Clyde: "damn"

I wipe my tears, I feel much pain for her

Clyde:"how old are you?"

Thando:"seventeen"

He frowns

Clyde:"does this man have his own children?"

Thando:"no..he's never told us about kids"

Clyde:"you were the only child?"

Thando:"yes"

He nods looking at her with pity or is it anger? Can't really read this guy

Clyde:"you so young, that fucker must mentally sick"

Quinton:"that shouldn't even be an excuse for what he's done"

Me:"sick or not,he has to pay for his sins"

Thando:"he's a sick pervert that's what he is"

Clyde:"just give me his name and I'll take care of the rest"

Thando:"katleho Mthokozisi Ngalo"

Me:"you don't use his surname"

She shakes her head

Clyde:"could you write that down somewhere for me Lisa"

Me:"don't worry I'll remember it"

Clyde:"Quinton,let's get this guy to the warehouse"

Quinton:"let's get working"

Me:"Q"

Quinton:"bub"

Me:"can I have a word with you"

Quinton:"office"

He gets up and leads the way to the office,I get in and close the door behind me

I turn and he immediately attacks me with a kiss, I kiss him back with much enthusiasm and a bit of confusion

He pulls out breathing heavily

Me:"what was that about?"

Quinton:"just needed to release a bit of stress"

Me (smiling):"oh"

Quinton:"anyway,what is it you wanted to say?"

Me:"right.... about the warehouse"

Quinton:"I won't kill him"

Me:"but Clyde...."

Quinton:"we won't kill him bub,relax

.. we'll just teach him a lesson"

Me:"I don't want blood in your hands Q"

Quinton:"don't worry,after he's learnt his lesson we sending him behind bars for life"

Me (sighs):"okay"

Quinton:"but let me ask...if that man put you through what he put Thando through, would you be asking me not to kill him?"

Me:"if I was Thando,at that stage of my life where I hate God.....No, I would want to kill him with my own bare hands....but that's why she was sent to me to help her,and killing him won't do much justice,for her or anyone,God's punishment for him will be way more fulfilling than ours, and revenge is not the answer"

Quinton:"I hear you"

Me:"I know Clyde.... he doesn't show mercy"

Quinton:"I'll talk to him"

Me:"we just need him behind bars...the rest, we'll let God take care of the rest"

Quinton:"yes babe...but we'll make wish he was never born"

I nod

Me:"in whatever you do,play it safe"

Quinton:"that I will"

Me:"good... that's all I needed to say,we can head back to the others"

I turn to open the door we head back to the lounge with him behind me,I can feel his eyes on my butt

He squeezes it as we approach the lounge making me giggle

.

.

.

.

.

☹CLYDE☹

.

For some reason being with this girl felt very awkward when Lisa and Quinton left us together, I've observed her, she's way too tiny for her age, she's too young too, she didn't deserve everything she's been through. I resent men who take advantage of

women who can't defend themselves, I know I'm not a saint of a human in this world but I never torture or harm an innocent soul.

Thando:"so..you Clyde?"

I look at her then nod then look away

Thando:"you Quinton's older brother?"

I look at her and nod

Thando:"I see the handsomeness runs on the genes"

I look at her and she's smiling at me

Thando:"do you workout alot?"

This girl asks too many questions... I hate being questioned

Thando:"you don't talk much do you?"

I look at her

Me:"you talk alot don't you?"

Thando:"not really, I just don't like awkward silence"

Me:"well I don't like awkward conversations"

Thando:"it doesn't have to be awkward if you participate"

I chuckle shaking my head

Thando:"wow..he can smile..you should do it more often, your teeth are amazingly straight and white"

She comes and sits next to me,she turns my head to look at her, our eyes lock

Thando:"are those fake eyes lenses?"

Me:"no"

She looks deep into my eyes and I'm looking into hers thinking to myself, this little chick really got some guts... noone has looked at me straight in the eyes for that long or has even had the audacity to touch my face

Thando:"damn your eyes are sooooo coool, they so blue,wow dude you have beautiful eyes"

Me (half smiles):"thanks.... I guess"

Thando:"what colour are mine?"

Me:"you don't know the colour of your own eyes?"

She shakes her head

I bring my face closer to her,her breath hitches, now she looks a bit intimidated, I look into her eyes...they very dark brown

Me:"they dark brown"

Thando:"really? I thought they were black"

I move away a bit from her then shakes my head

There's total silence for a while

Thando(laughs):"you know what's funny?"

Do I ever know what's funny?

I look at her

Thando(chuckles):"for a moment there... I thought you were going to kiss me"

I chuckle then look away...is she hitting on me? Or she's just being a gullable teenager?

Thando:"are you also married? Or madly in love with someone?"

Out of all the questions this little chatter box has asked me,this is one I hate the most... I ignore her

Thando:"hello.... I asked you a question?"

I ignore her, I really hope she doesn't push it cause

She taps my shoulder

Thando:"Clyde?"

I look at her hand on my shoulder she quickly moves it

Thando:"is that a yes or no?"

I look at her

Me:"you should learn when to shut the fuck up"

She makes sad face and goes back to her seat

Thando:"I'm sorry"

She says looking down, was I too harsh? I hope I didn't hurt her feelings that much...Argh why do I even care, hurting feelings is what I do everyday, people should know when to back off specially if you don't even know me

Me:"it's okay"

The silence starts all over again, she becomes awfully quiet, I keep glancing at her and she's concentrated on the TV, she looks fine...well atleast she's not sad, she looks at me, I look at the TV

At long last Lisa and Quinton make their way back giggling like idiots, these two are really love struck idiots.

I never knew that a girl can change my bro this much, when it comes to girls him and I were the same person except he would stick around for a week or two before turning the girl off. I don't stick around at all. I really don't have time for that kinda drama in my life, I've already have enough with the work I do.

Quinton:"hey man we can get started at the basement"

Me:"finally"

I get up and we head to the lift down to the basement, we get there and he switches on the system

Quinton:"should we call Aidan?"

Me:"Nah the boy has alot going on for him with school stuff"

Quinton:"oh yeah you right, I heard him complain about that the other day"

Me:"so what was the motherfuckers name?"

Quinton:"Uhm... katleho Mthokozisi Ngalo something like that, wait let me call Lisa"

He presses the intercom button

Quinton:"what was his name?"

Lisa:"Katleho Mthokozisi Ngalo"

Quinton:"right thanks bub"

He lets go of the button and we get on with it, we hack everything that has to do with this man

Computer:"katleho Mthokozisi Ngalo is 45 of age was born in Soweto, his mother's boyfriend in which she was having an affair with killed his father, he witnessed this at a very young age of fifteen, he ran away from home and got involved with a gang of thugs, from then once lived his life behind the gun, targetting happily married families and using their children for his own wealth, he hasn't been sentenced to jail for his files and evidence against him always goes missing...he is greatly feared and the community wants him behind bars but noone has the courage to testify against him, he owns one of the largest human trafficking businesses in South Africa, he takes girls as young as five years old, he takes care of them training them until they thirteen and sells them to the

highest bidder, the police are no longer after him, the law has no turned a blind eye
Katlho Mthokozisi Ngalo has never been married, he has ten children from different
woman whom he supports secretly, he also has a great bond with his mother.....

I press pause

Quinton:"the bastard....this is not the only family he's done this to"

Me:"he supports his children...that's great"

Quinton:"how?"

Me:"which means he cares about them...we just have to find out more about these kids
and where they live"

Quinton:"ohh I see....you mean we should take them one by one"

Me:"yes keep them hostage, then while that is still driving him crazy, we take out his
best clients and make sure his business comes crumbling down"

Quinton:"and send all those girls back home"

Me:"we need to work in silence and invisible...."

Quinton:"until he's lost everything then send him to jail"

Me:"that'll be too easy...after he's lost everything, we send him pictures of his captured
children and some dead"

Quinton:"no man...we can't kill his..."

Me:"relax...they won't be real, but in pictures we'll make it look real"

Quinton:"his mother is also still alive...seems like he also loves her dearly"

Me:"we'll take her last,when he's at his lowest"

Quinton:"I think we also need help from Lisa"

Me:"how will she be of help?"

Quinton:"well she know how to control the diamonds now and they can take her
wherever she wants to go"

Me:" what the fuck? Like teleportation?"

He laughs

Quinton:"No man...like she makes them spin, then she says the household she wants to
see...they take her there spiritually and she can see what goes on, whether it's in the
future or the present even the past....that's how she saw Thando, she was there in spirit
and she's the one who stopped this guy from beating her up,he thought it was witchcraft
since he felt something push him but Thando didn't even touch him and that's why he
kicked her out"

Me:"damn..so how will she help us in this case?"

Quinton:"she can make him look like he's going crazy and loosing his mind...she can
visit him in spirit, and she can pick up stuff and to him it will look like they floating in the
air..she can just wonder around his house,pick up the remote and on the TV....

(laughs)...oh man..I can just imagine the terrified look in his face"

He laughs I join him as I think about it

Me:"man...that's a good idea"

Quinton:"I just hope Lisa will agree...she doesn't like using the diamonds,she only uses
them when they glow for themselves and want to show her something"

Me:"damn so y'all already knew all this was going to happen?"

Quinton:"yeah...but the diamonds show her what the devil has planned for us,so we can
be ahead of the devil and pray about it,and we already know how to deal with it...like
this Thando girl, a few weeks ago she had a vision that this is the Thando that will come

between us and will be the cause of our divorce"

Me:"that's why you don't trust her"

Quinton:"yeah"

Me:'but why did Lisa say she trusts her"

Quinton:"cause she believes in God..and she's certain that no matter what she tries,it won't work cause we already prayed about it"

Me:"and you believe in all that stuff?"

Quinton:" a part of me really does and a part of me is still confused as fuck"

Me:"I understand...if I were in your shoes,Lisa would've long left me, I admire your love for her, it's pretty strong...by the looks of things,it's stronger than yourself"

Quinton:"yeah...it's kinda scary how it just grows more and more each day, it's like everyday is like the very first time I fell in love with her"

Me:"so you don't find any chick interesting anymore?....at all?"

Quinton:" dude man to man.... I do find other chicks attractive and yes I look like any other nigars.. sometimes I find myself flirting with a girl, but never find the interest to approach her, until she approaches me, but I always reject...like the time I was with Brandon when I find out she was pregnant with another man's baby... I don't know how many times I got myself drunk and took a girl back to Brandon's place, thinking I'll just hit and run as back in my playing days...but the most weird things would happen"

Me(attentively):"what?"

Quinton:"I'd just pass out,I'd sit on the bed and watch her take off her clothes then I'd pass out...so the next time I tried not getting too drunk,so I became tipsy,and I took a cute hoe back to Brandon's place..this time I actually got to get naked too, was on top of her touching her here and there turning her on took off her panties,then out of the blue....guess what happened?"

Me:"what?"

Quinton:"I threw up on her face and she left"

We laugh

Me:"damn...so you never got to shag?"

Quinton:"mxm where? I gave up and just came back to my bub to work things out...and I thank God it never happened cause I would've regretted it anyway"

Me:"yeah"

Quinton:" when she told me she was praying for me the whole time I was gone...for a moment there I believed that,maybe it was God who stopped me from committing adultery...bit another part of me is like naaahh it was just luck or something...but everytime we pray, everything she saw through the diamonds still happens but happens in a different way, a better way, and we deal with our differences differently now"

Me:"wow.. I can't believe this is you talking...her God must be really powerful"

He shakes his head

Me:"I don't think I'll ever allow a woman to have so much power over me"

Quinton:"you think I just allowed Lisa to have so much power?"

Me:"yeah, you let her pussy hypnotize you"

Quinton:"you and Aidan... there's no hope for y'all.. atleast Aidan he might be changed by Yonela,if he's pride doesn't get the better out of him ...but you, you will die a lonely man"

Me:"a stressless lonely man"

Quinton:"anyway ..back to the matter at hand"

He presses play

Computer:"the oldest of his children is doing his last year....."

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

🌀 YONELA 🌀

.
.

Final exam paper is coming up soon and it's stressful, I decided to take Lisa's advice and start studying early,so right now I'm buried in my books but I'm really finding it hard to concentrate, I close my books and head to the kitchen to find myself a snack then sit in front of the blank TV screen, I really need a roommate, this flat is too big for me,and the rent is too much,or I should just move to a one bedroom flat.....

A call comes through my phone disturbing my thoughts

I look at it, it's Aidan, what does he want? I've been avoiding him for a while now,it's been months since we've talked and I'm doing really well without him

I ignore it till it stops ringing,this is the second time he's called me since I broke our no strings attached relationship

A text comes through, I open it

"I'm outside your door, please open"

I jump up on my feet

Me:"what the fuck!...what the hell is he doing here?"

Shit! This place is a mess... I'm a mess, there's papers and packets of chips all over... I look around and hold my head not knowing where to start... Eish! I run to the room and wear my gown since I'm half naked, I don't like getting dressed when I'm alone I walk around half naked and I love it,what is he doing here so late anyway

I leave everything as it is,if he has a problem he can go jump off a cliff

I open the door

Damn he looks like a hot mess

Aidan:"hey baby"

He's drunk

Me:"what do you want? Did you get lost or something?"

Aidan:"can I come in?"

I sigh then make way for him

He head to the lounge and throws himself on the couch

I close the door and go sit next to him

Aidan:"long time no see"

Me:"yeah well I've been busy"

Aidan:"new niggas?"

Me:"school work"

Aidan:"no new niggas"

Me:"that's non of your business"

Aidan:"come on you don't have to be bitter...you sound like a bitter ex girlfriend now...we never dated remember"

Me:"I know, that doesn't I should tell you my business"

Aidan:"why you acting like this?... I mean we were cool before we started screwing each other and we were cool the time we were screwing each other...and now that we no more screwing, you've become distant... I thought we were going to go back to normal and have the normal awesome friendship bond we had before the only difference is that we stop screwing.....but now,you acting strange and you don't talk to me anymore...why?"

I sigh

Me:"I've just been busy, school is hectic,that's all"

Aidan:"we've been friends for a long time now and school has never come between us, why now all of a sudden, school is so hectic that we can't hang out anymore?"

Silence

Aidan:"or the time you broke things off with the no strings you also meant our friendship?"

Me(sighs):"Aidan...things will become awkward now, and complicated"

Aidan:"nothing is awkward and complicated here, you the one who's making it that way... I mean we used to fuck so what? We agreed we have no feelings for each other and we were just playing...so it doesn't have to be complicated.....unless one of us caught feelings then maybe things could....."

He stops and looks at me

Aidan:"wait.... did you....did you happen to catch feelings?"

I look at him we maintain eye contact for a while

Me:"what?.."

He chuckles

Aidan:"no..of cause not, that would be really stupid of you cause you know the kind of person I am...and you know better than to do that..(laughs)...but seriously Nella why have you been so distant..."

He looks at me

Aidan:"cause I miss you so much, you've become one of the best friends I've had and it's not the same without you anymore... I miss talking to you and spending time with you, our silly jokes, making fun of the girls I pick out in parties I miss telling you about my ridiculous life, I even miss how you make fun of me... I miss our friendship yonela"

Me:"Aidan... I.."

Aidan:"please don't rob me of that... I promise I won't look at you or touch you in that sexual manner again, I was stupid for kissing you and seducing you.. I'm sorry if it made things awkward for you somehow or if I did something you didn't like along the way... please do forgive me"

Me:"you didn't do anything wrong Aidan"

Aidan:"then why have you been avoiding me?"

Me:"because I... I thought things would be awkward after the whole just having fun game...you know"

Aidan:"well you thought wrong cause I'm totally cool with it... I did say when you want us to stop you just say the word and everything will go back to normal"

Me:"but everything can't go back to normal"

Aidan:"yes it can"

Me:"No it can't"

Aidan:"yes it can... there's no feelings attached so we can go back to normal"

Me:"please leave"

Aidan:"why you being like this? Did I do something that hurt your feelings?"

Me:"I just don't wanna be friends anymore"

He remains quiet

Me:"now you know...can you please leave"

Aidan:"ouch"

He gets up

Aidan:"I'm not going to sit here and beg you to tell me what I did wrong or for you to be a part of my life....so whatever issues you have with me, you can keep them to yourself.... atleast I tried"

He walks to the door

Aidan:"I won't ever bother you again"

He opens the door and walks out

"Aidan wait!!"

He looks back at me... I should tell him how I feel, but this is Aidan, he'll definitely reject me, and it's so obvious he only cares for me as a friend

Aidan:"what?"

Me:"Uhm...never mind"

He gets out and closes the door, I sink on the couch and listen to my aching chest.

Things are better of this way, we both not ready for love..and I can't be his friend and just pretend I don't feel anything for him every single day, I can't be his friend and watch him getting serious with another girl in front of me, I can't be his friend so that he asks for advice from me one day on how to propose to the girl he'll one day fall in love with... I can't be anything with Aidan, it's best we just keep our distance..with time eventually these feelings will perish and maybe just maybe we'll be cool again, I just need time, I have been through this before and one thing I know about feelings is that they disappear with time.

I go back to my room and get on with studying

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 21

-
-
-
-

-

Two weeks later

-
-
-
-

👑 QUINTON 👑

-
-
-
-
-

Everything is going smoothly, his business is crumbling down as we have taken out his dealers and all the security of the place where he keeps the girls, we keeping the girls in a safe place for now so that when everything settles we can take those who still have homes homes and those who don't to a home and the older ones who don't have a home we'll offer them better jobs. We have all ten of his children already, they are kept in a safe house, we provide them with everything and they free to wonder around the house and make themselves feel at home, but they can't come out of the house as it is gaurded by armed men and cameras all over,we did Tue them up for the pictures and took pictures of them while they were sleeping then we Photoshopped them to make it look like they dead and some badly injured..Mr Ngalo is going crazy busy looking for his children,he can't even involve the police since no one knows he has kids,he can't turn to anyone for help for we've dealt with all the connections he possibly had... when we captured his mother he involved the police, he's breaking anwe enjoying watching him...the worst part was when Lisa did the magic with the diamonds,he totally lost it,then he went looking for Thando cause he thought she is behind all this since she is a witch. We got him captured and we beat him up and electrified him. Clyde showed no mercy on him, he also made Thando watch as we tortured him, she was happy, Lisa couldn't watch she begged me to stop him before he killed him... I did, although he was already as good as dead... we sent him to the hospital,Lisa insisted,we exposed him to the police and all the evidence and this time we made sure the evidence never went missing, he got arrested yesterday while in hospital recovering, he got a lawyer but I'm sure he's not as good as Troy...his trial will be starting in a week and I know for sure he'll be sentenced life in prison,There's a few people I know in there who'll make sure he doesn't enjoy himself in there. We now at the back lawn having a small get together celebration sort of thing for Thando who is now free from this beast and can walk the streets freely again, although she doesn't have a place to stay yet she asked to stay with us for a while until she finds her feet. She's still young so Lisa being her kind self allowed her to stay as long as she wants I'm chilling with the guys next to the braai area sipping on beers while the girl are sitting by the pool in their bikinis Aidan:"I still can't believe you guys never told me about something so big that y'all were working on" Me:"we didn't want to distract you from your studies" Aidan:"boohoo studies my foot,you know my intelligence is natural, nothing has ever distracted this Gee...man I can even study at a club with a bitch grinding on me" We laugh at him Brandon:"talk about savage"

Me:"please don't let him inspire you Brandon...we both know you not that strong"
They laugh
Brandon:"thank Goodness I'm long done with school"
Tsepo:"but you guys were really fast in sending him to jail"
Me:"the quicker the better right Clyde"
I look at him, he's mind is far away staring at the direction where the pool is
Me:"Clyde!"
He looks at me
Me:"where's your mind at? Are we boring you?"
Clyde:"kind of"
They all laugh
Me:"why don't you just go join the ladies in the pool then"
Clyde:"I'm cool...hey, I was thinking"
Me:"yeah?"
Clyde:"about Thando"
We all look at him amused
Clyde(chuckles):"not in that way"
Aidan:"enlighten us"
Clyde:"like...she's been through alot, she must be still haunted and traumatized by her past...
don't you think we should get her through therapy or something?"
Me:"that's a good idea actually... I think she'll need professional help, even though Lisa offered
to help her but she says she's quite reserved"
Clyde:"I know a good physiologist who's dealt with many cases like hers...maybe she could be
of help"
Me:"that'd be really cool of you"
Aidan:"is it just me or the beast is exposing a soft spot?"
Brandon:"oh it's not just you"
Tsepo:"I definitely sense some care of some sort in there"
Clyde:"I see people are signing up for death wishes?"
Us:"No/ not at all/ forget I said anything/ waaaaat soft spot my ass not you buddy"
He takes a sip of his beer
Brandon:"guys the meat is ready and the helpers have already set the table"
Me:"okay,you guys can make yourselves comfortable around the table while I go call on the
girls"
They all get up, I make my way towards the pool
Me:"ladies"
They all look at me
Me:"food is ready"
Thelma:"finally"
Yonela:"tell me about it"
I stretch out my hand to Lisa and help her stand up,her sexy body is all exposed so I get a towel
and wrap it around her
Lisa:"but I'm feeling hot"
Me:"I'll fan you"
Lisa:"I'll just take off the towel"
Me:"you just try me"
She laughs

Lisa:"come on...no one even has their eyes on me"
Me:"Lisa, leave that towel around your waist and let's go eat"
Thando(whispers):"so over protective"
Thelma:"I don't blame him, I mean look at that ass"
She spanks Lisa
I look at them behind us
Me:"keep your hands to yourself"
They giggle I walk right behind her
Lisa:"really now Q...they just girls"
Me:"I don't want them changing you"
She's walking too slow in front of me so I pick her like a bag of potatoes over my shoulder,she half screams
Lisa:"put me down!"
Me:"never!"
We get to the table and I gently put her down
Lisa:"finally!...mmh this looks delicious"
Me:"would you pray so we can eat already"
Brandon:"please!"
Yonela:"patience Mr food killer"
Lisa:"let close our eyes"
Everyone bows and close their eyes
Lisa:"Aidan, please pray for our food"
He opens his eyes and looks at me
Aidan:"but...why doesn't Quinton do it?"
Lisa:"Aidan"
He huffs and closes his eyes I close mine too
Aidan:"Uhm... God?..."
He remains quiet
I open one eye
Me:"are you waiting for him to answer or something?"
Aidan:"oh...Uhm..God.. please bless our food....okay?.....Amen"
Everyone:"Amen"
We all look at each other then burst into laughter
Aidan:"you see... I'm never praying again"
Lisa:"oh please don't mind them, you prayed very well Aidan, there's no prayer better than the other"
Me:"okay?"
We all laugh again
Lisa(laughing):"stop it Q"
Me:"I'll stop"
Brandon:"okay?"
We laugh out loud
Aidan:"mxm y'all suck"
Lisa:"that's enough guys.... okay"
We laugh once more
Me:"Ahh man..you should pray often"
Brandon:"O..."

Aidan(warnigly):"say okay once more..I swear"

Brandon:"jeez calm down...okay.."

We burst into laughter as we continue with light conversations over mouthwatering food

I feel Lisa's hand moving up and down my thigh, I look at her she smirks as she brings her hand further to Mr B

I move my face closer to her ear

Me(whispers):"what are trying to achieve?"

She moves to my ear

Lisa(whispers):"just checking up on my guy"

My dick is already hard

Lisa (whispers):"looks like he's still good"

Me (whispers):"I think it's time you take your injection"

Lisa(whispers):"but what about our guests?"

Me(whispers):"we can call the party off"

Lisa(whispers):"nooo injection will have to wait"

Me (whispers):"don't say I didn't try when you collapse because of lack of your vitamin D"

She giggles I kiss her cheek but she turns to look at me I peck her lips but she pulls my bottom lip

Me(whispers):"heeeey that's my move"

Lisa:"what's yours is mine, remember"

Me:"I love it"

Pull her bottom lip with my teeth she does the same to my lip

Thelma:"I'm not going to sit here as if I don't got my own hunk"

I look at her,she turns to kiss Tsep0

Thelma:"boy,you better do them lips like how she's being done"

We all laugh at her and Tsep0's confused face as he kisses her

My eyes catches up with Clyde as I realise he's staring at me, he moves them to the side indicating "we need to talk" I look at Lisa

Me:"bub"

She looks at me I bring her face closer as if I'll kiss her

Me:"I'm going to excuse myself for a few"

Lisa:"why?"

Me:"need to talk to Clyde"

Lisa:"okay love bug"

Me:"give me a kiss real quick"

She kisses me

Lisa:"check up on the kids please"

Me:"Argh they can take care of themselves"

She gives me a look I peck her

Me:"kidding,jeez don't punish me in bed later"(winks)

She laughs

Lisa:"too late, you'll get your punishment"

I pull a fist in excitement

Me:"aww that's too bad"

Clears throat

I look at Clyde, damn I even forgot about him

Lisa:"wow you even forgot you were excusing yourself"

Me:"all your fault"

I peck her and get up , I lead the way to the back door and we take a walk in the huge lawn

Me:"so what's bothering you?"

Clyde:"I just wanted to warn you"

Me:"about?"

I take out a cigarette and lit it up

Clyde:"remember what you told me...about Thando being the cause of your divorce?"

I look at him attentively

Me:"yeah"

Clyde:"you guys should try to tone it down a little"

Me:"tone what down?"

Clyde:"the lovey dovey shit, the whispering in each other's ear making Lisa giggle every now and then, playing and fooling around, acting like idiots and making stupid jokes that only the two of y'all get"

Me:"you mean I should stop loving my WIFE?"

Clyde:"not stop,but just don't show it too much"

Me:"I don't understand...what exactly is your point?"

Clyde (sighs):"I've seen the way she looks at y'all"

Me:"Thando?"

He nods

Clyde:"she looks at y'all with many emotions....she looks like she's sad yet happy all at the same time when she's staring at y'all being all over each other"

Me:"so? What's wrong with that?"

Clyde:"she's envy, she wants what y'all have for each other...what if she starts trying funny things thinking you'll also see her the way you see Lisa?"

I laugh

Me:"then she'd be stupid to even think that... it's not possible for me to see anyone else the way I see Lisa"

Clyde:"exactly, I'm just saying tone it down man, try not to be too romantic in front of her"

I sigh,well that's going to be hard cause the truth is I didn't even realize I'm too romantic publicly with Lisa, I'm just myself around her, and if being myself is too much loving then I don't know how to act less myself?

I look at him

Me:"I don't know man...I'll try to tone it down on the craziness"

Clyde:"good...also, you guys need to feed this girl... when will she go back to her normal weight?"

Me:"maybe she's just naturally skinny...we told her to make herself at home she's free to the kitchen and there's chiefs who cook she can order anything she wants"

Clyde:"you let allow her to think for herself? Dude, she's not used to this kind of life,she probably not eating right... y'all should try feeding her real African food like pap and beef stew or samp...you know, make sure she has some porridge every morning,you know something with life"

I laugh at him

Me:"is her weight really bothering you that much?"

Clyde:"the kid could use a few extra kgs"

I look at him for a while

Clyde:"don't stare at me...that's gay"

I chuckle

Me:"first it was professional help,then she's envy, now she's too tiny...you've really been paying attention to this girl haven't you?"

Clyde:"not really"

Me:"you have... I've never seen you so concerned in forever"

Clyde:"I'm not concerned"

I smile u think he might like this chick

Me:"you like her"

Clyde:"I don't"

Me:"you do...you so like her"

Clyde:"I don't like her,mxm, nevermind I said anything"

Me:"oh my gosh..tell me I'm dreaming ..Clyde actually likes a girl"

He laughs I laugh too,he stops immediately and gives me the deadliest look ever, I stop laughing

Clyde:"I don't fucken like Thando, what am I going to do with a skinny little girl who's ten years younger than me? Who was a hoe for a living, What am I a pervert?"

Me:"whhooooaaa...dude calm down, you don't like her, I get it"

"Yeah we get it"

I look behind him he also turns and there she is standing not so far away from us

Clyde:"Thando"

Thando:"Lisa said I should tell you not to forget to check on the babies Quinton"

Me:"oh..okay,thanks"

She looks at Clyde up and down looking hurt she turns and walks away

Me:"shit!"

Clyde:"fuck"

He turns to look at me

Clyde:"now look what you've done"

Me:"Me?"

Clyde:"mxm, moron"

He walks away

Me:"wow, yeah sure let's blame the innocent guy"

I roll my eyes and head back to the house to check on those two rascals

.

.

.

.

.

💔 THANDO 💔

.

.

.

.

.

I can't believe what Clyde said about me, I really thought the hardcore intimidating mean persona was just the outside, I thought in the inside he is this big soft loving teddy bear for the fact that he came immediately when he had to help a girl like me for the fact that he always asks me if am I okay today everytime after greeting me when he comes over... I guess I misjudged him, he's just as mean and arrogant in the inside too.

His words really pierced through my heart "who was a hoe for a living" he thinks I chose that

life? I enjoyed being a hoe and sleeping with more than ten different men I don't know everyday? Making money I don't even get to spend? He thinks I chose to be this skinny? I guess he's just like all of them, the people who are quick to judge.

My crush on him has totally disappeared.

Lisa:"Thando?"

I look up at her

Lisa:"are you alright?"

Me:"yeah why?"

Lisa:"you've been down since you came back from the guys"

I look at Clyde,he looks at me then looks away,he never shows any emotions besides anger and a straight face, even when he laughs, after he's done it's a straight face or if you lucky he gives you his killer side smile

Me:"I'm fine.... I think I had too much cool drink,my tummy feels bloated"

Lisa:"oh.. sorry, do you wanna lie down?"

Me:"no I'm fine"

Lisa:" okay then...tell me if anyone bothers you I'll sort them out"

I laugh

Brandon:"me too mommy?"

Lisa:"you too baby"

Aidan:"me three?"

Lisa:"yes you three my bubu"

Tsepo:"and me?"

Lisa:"and you too nana"

Yonela:"what about us?"

Lisa:"ayike.. kanti who is going to bother Thando if I protect all of y'all?"

They laugh.

I admire the circle of friends and family Lisa has,she's so young yet she has it all, she's told me everything she's been through before she got here and it wasn't easy but I wish I had gone through what she went through than what I went through.. she still got her mom who loves her dearly,she calls her almost everyday and she's supporting her in every motherly way,I wish I had that bond with my mom.

Quinton comes back carrying Kyle only,they look alike, he's such an awesome dad and husband

Quinton:"look who I found trying to get off his cot by himself"

We laugh

Lisa:"thank God you came in time, we were gone hear with loud screams I'd he fell"

Quinton:"who?..this guy? No..he was almost down actually, if I didn't care so much he was going to make it"

Lisa:"which means we should put a sponge next to his cot so that when he tries again and falls he falls on the sponge"

Aidan:"Nah y'all should let him fall on the floor... he'll be tough and stronger"

Lisa:"fool"

He shrugs

Aidan:"just saying, he has to start being tough at a tender age"

Quinton:"first do that to your child then maybe we'll follow your example if your child makes it to one year"

He plays with Kyle and makes Lisa kiss him,then Quinton kisses her

Quinton:"kiss mama's cheek,like this... mncwaaaa"

He kisses her cheek then makes Kyle try

Kyle:"mmaaaaaaaa"

Quinton:"not mmaaaaaaaa.....mncwaaa"

Kyle:"mmaaaaa"

Quinton:"mncwaaa"

Kyle:"mmaaaaa"

Quinton:"mnc..waaa"

Kyle:"mmaaaaa"

We all laugh

Quinton:"I give up"

We carry on with light conversations everyone laughing and having fun, I can't take my eyes off Lisa and Quinton, the way they look at each other, the way he's so childish and playful with her, their stupid jokes,the way he touches her with care, the way she speak to him with respect and love, the bond they have with their kids is priceless.

I wish someone could've shown me so much love, I wish someone could've cared for me as much as Quinton does for Lisa, besides all the materialistic things around them, it's like Lisa doesn't even care about them,she could live in a shack and still be very happy as long as she's with Quinton and her babies.

I'm ashamed to say I've almost slept with Quinton in the past...it was at the club when he came with his friend Brandon and other guys, they had drinks and we were dancing for them.. Quinton got really drunk and I was all over him, he asked to take me home and I was excited, it's not everyday a young handsome guy asks to take us home it's always the old men, so we went back to their apartment, we kissed and headed to the room, I took off my clothes but by the time I was done he was fast asleep and nothing happened,I just sat there beside him and admired his beauty kisses his lips then took a few notes from his wallet and headed back home.... I was tempted to steal his ring but I held myself, I could've got a fortune with that ring.

I wish I was Lisa, I want her life, I want everything she has, including Quinton....I love Lisa, I love her so much and I want to be her...not like her,but her.

One day, I will be her...but how?

.

.

.

💎 LISA 💎

.

.

.

.

Yonela:"Lisa"

I look at her

Yonela:"a word with you please"

Me:"excuse us please"

Quinton:"take Kyle with you"

Me:"ha unfair!"

Quinton:"I'm kidding, don't cry now"

Me:"mxm idiot"

I peck his lips and Kyle's, I can never get enough of their lips

I lead her to the house since I needed to get more drinks from the kitchen anyway

Me:"what's up?"

Yonela:"do you notice anything weird with that girl?"

Me:"you mean Thando?"

Yonela:"yeah"

Me:"No..she's perfectly fine, she's an angel...why?"

She shrugs

Yonela:"I don't know she's too quiet"

Me:"so? She's not used to y'all,she's not always this quiet"

Yonela:"mmh...you should be careful of people who stare alot but are quiet...they often thinking alot"

Me:"what's wrong with thinking alot?"

Yonela:"well it depends what you thinking about"

Me:"don't worry about Thando... she's harmless trust me"

Yonela:"okay..well if you trust her then I guess she's good"

Me:"yeah...so....you"

She squints her eyes at me

Yonela:"me what?"

Me:"you and you know....still not ignoring each other?"

Yonela:"we broke off our friendship so there's nothing to talk about"

Me:"how can y'all do that when you know that y'all friendship is connected to us...so you making it weird when we get together, we all getting along except the two of you"

Yonela:"Lisa... please,spare me...gone are the days of Aidan and Yonela"

Me:"but you guys...so much pride, please just tell him how you feel get it off your chest...and what happens next is totally up to him"

Yonela:"Lisa...it's not that easy"

Me:"I know...but Nella...try"

Yonela:"if he rejects me....I'll regret ever trying and I'll never be able to face him again"

Me:"if he rejects you... y'all both agree to carry on being friends and move on.... I know it's better said than done,but I've told you this before..you can't run away from your heart"

She sighs

Me:"tell him today... before y'all part ways...tell him....I'll be right behind you, I got your back,if he rejects you, my shoulder will be right here to cry on and my heart will be here to comfort you"

She smiles

Yonela:"okay.."

Me:"okay?"

Yonela:"yes....I'll tell him"

Me(excitedly):"Yes!! Y'all gonna be the craziest cutest couple ever!"

Yonela:"shhhhh"

I put my finger on my lips

Me:"sorry..."

Yonela:"we don't even know if he feels the same...and knowing Aidan this love thing is so not him...he told me himself that I'd be stupid to fall for him cause I know the kind of person he is"

Me:"mxm and you listened to him? Aidan is an idiot he doesn't know what he wants until he has it...trust me"

We laugh

Yonela:"if you say so....wish me luck"

Me:"you'll nail it...just give him those cute puppy eyes of yours that win my heart all the time since primary"

She laughs

Yonela:"they always worked with you"

Me:"that was your superpower to get me to do anything you wanted me to do"

Yonela:"well, let's hope it works on gangsters too"

Me:"oh please just cause he does all these dangerous things..Aidan is a baby"

She laughs

Yonela:"you do know he's a year older than you?"

Me:"whatever....but he knows I'm older"

Yonela:"let's go back to the others before Thelma comes looking for us"

Me:"say no more...that girl has drama though"

I take a bottle of wine and we head back to the others

.

.

.

🌀 YONELA 🌀

.

.

.

.

Everyone is now saying their goodbyes as its home time.

I hug and kiss my people

Me:"bye guys,had so much fun"

Lisa:"see you tomorrow"

Me:"school"

I huff and roll my eyes

Quinton:"education is the key to success young one"

I give him a bored face

Me:"just cause you done...mxm"

He laughs

I kiss Kyle

Kyle:"mmmaaaa"

I giggle

Me:"mmmaaaa baby"

I leave them and go towards Aidan who was about to get in his car

Me:"Aidan!"

He turns to look at me

Me:"I need a ride home.... please?"

He looks at me for a while,gives me a side smile then signals me to come with his hand

I hope over to the passenger seat and he speeds off

Me:"Sooo...how are you?"

Aidan:"I'm cool... you?"

Me:"I'm good"

Aidan:"you look good"

I'm still wearing my bikini,it's dry though cause we never swam we just put our legs

Me:"thanks..you look good too"

Aidan:"don't I always"

He does that stupid grin of his

Me:"no you don't always"

Aidan:"jealousy makes you nasty Nella"

Me:"arrogance makes you stupid Aidan"

Aidan:"mxm..fishmouth"

I hate that name

Me:"I told you to stop calling me that"

Aidan"you should actually live that name...many girls would die to be called fishmouth"

Me:"and why is that?"

Aidan:"cause haven't you noticed on social media,they always pouting in their pictures, trying to have a fish mouth...yet here you are with your adorably naturally pouted lips, not even trying hard to have a fishmouth"

Me:"I lips are not pouted"

He looks at me and laughs

Aidan:"they pouted right now ...you a natural, you have a fishmouth and there's absolutely nothing you can do about it"

Me:"mxm... I don't have a fishmouth"

Aidan:"don't sulk now.... okay you don't have a fish mouth...you just have a pouted mouth"

Me:"shut up"

He laugh, I turn up the volume of his radio and we sing along to the songs until we get to my place

He accompanies me to the door I open

Me:"wanna come in?"

He shakes his head

Aidan:"so does this mean we friends again?"

I shake my head no

He looks disappointed

Aidan:"oh.. okay"

He walks away to his car

Me:"Aidan!"

He looks at me

Me:"we can't ever be friends"

He shrugs

Aidan:"I get it"

He says looking down

Me:"because I want us to be more than that"

He looks up at me

Me:"over the past few months, I've developed feelings for you...and these feelings confusede alot, cause I didn't know what to do with them.....

He gets closer

Me:"when we were having the benefits of our friendship, I didn't want to ruin it for us...I know that you not the falling in love kinda guy....

He stands right infront of me

Me:"and I understand if you don't feel the same way...

He smashes his lips on mine,then pulls out

Aidan:"I feel the same way.... I love you"

Me:"you do?"

He nods

Aidan:"yes.. I do"

Me(mummers):"well that was easy"

he chuckles

then picks me up and we kiss as we make our way inside the house, ripping each other's clothes off!

Me:"I missed you cowboy"

Aidan:"gidiyaaaaa"

He makes that sound cowboys make when riding a horse as he throws his underwear on the floor and jumps on me making me laugh

Me:"yiiihhhaaaaa"

Aidan:"fuck thats so turning on..you'd make a good cowgirl"

He says as he smashes his lips on me and takes me to heaven

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 22

-
-
-
-
-

👑QUINTON👑

-
-
-
-
-

A few weeks later

-
-

It's finally December, festive season, the very first December holiday I'll get to spend with Lisa, now that we married we family so no going to visit in the Eastern Cape and leaving me behind, and it's also the first with my babies, I can't wait for Christmas,just two more weeks.

I'm driving to the house, it's still in the afternoon and I'm hungry,I don't really feel like take outs, Lisa's food she cooked last night is all I've been thinking about. I forgot to carry it as lunch.

I park the car in front of the house then head inside humming a song

I stop at my tracks as I notice Thando bent over on the floor wiping something, her butt is all exposed.

I close my eyes

Me:"Uhm...Thando...???"

I peek she turn to look at me

Thando:"oh hey Q...eish something spilt here and the stain doesn't want to come out"
She's still bent over as she tries to remove the stain
My eyes wonder around not knowing where to look
Me:"uhmm ..you should ask one of the helpers to to to handle it....please get up"
She gets up slowly, she's gained a bit of weight now...
Thando:"damn..now look,I'm all wet..(giggles)... clumsy me"
The shirt she's wearing is wet and is stuck on her exposing her titties
Thando:"hello?.."
I look away as I realise I'm starring, what the fuck is wrong with me..what the fuck is wrong with this girl!? Is she doing this on purpose
Me:"ahh...you should go change"
Her eyes drop and she covers her mouth shocked,I look down at myself and notice I'm hard...fuck! That wasn't supposed to happen, no.. I don't even see her that way... I leave her and head to the kitchen to warm up some food, I take it to the lounge.
I call Lisa as I enjoy my food
"Love bug"
Me:"bub"
"How are you?"
Me:"I'm good, enjoying the delicious work of your hands"
"You carried it as lunch?"
Me:"stupid me I forgot but I drove all the way back home for it"
She laughs
"It is your favourite after all....tell Thando she can dish up for herself too"
Me:"mnk....she knows her way around"
"What's up with you?"
Me:"when is she moving out again?"
"No Quinton, don't be like that..is she bothering you somehow?"
Me:"kind of.... I miss our privacy"
"Dude we have the whole third floor to ourselves, what kind of privacy do you need?"
She laughs a bit
Me:"I want the whole house to ourselves"
"We will....she's starting to believe in God a little, our sessions are improving actually...in no time she'll be ready to go live her life again,and next year she says she wants to go back to school and do her matric since she ended in grade eleven"
I sigh
Me:"I miss you"
"I miss you too, today is my last day at work,can you believe"
My heart rejoices as my face lits up
Me:"Really?"
"Yeap... I'm free for the whole holidays until next year"
Me:"I feel like doing the head vosho dance right now"
She giggles
"You'll also take off right?"
Me:"babe I don't need permission to not come to work for the whole holidays remember"
"Lucky you love bug...one day I'll be my own boss too"
Me:"that you will...babe,let me get back to work,I'll see you later"
"see you....wait. what is mah and the kids up to?"

Me:"I don't know, I haven't seen them I guess they taking their afternoon nap"
"Oh okay... please kiss them for me"
Me:"then wake them up so Thumbelina can cry for me when I have to go... I don't wanna go there"
She laughs
"She's daddy's girl that one...she doesn't cry when I leave her only Kyle does"
Me:"I guess he's a momma's boy"
"Yeah..love bug let me get working before Troy gets on my case, yoh, he's strict that one"
Me:"tell him to take it easy on you or he'll have to deal with me"
"Mxm bye Q"
Me:"I love you"
"Love you more"
I hang up
I go put my empty plate in the sink,grab my car keys on the counter and make my way to the door
"Leaving already?"
I look at her
Me:"yeah have to get back to work"
Thando:"oh... whoa look...
She gets closer to me
Thando:"you messed your shirt"
I look at my shirt and she's right, I messed myself with the food
Me:"shit"
Thando:"I can quickly go get you another one?"
Me:"No..I'll go"
I run up the stairs until I finally get to our room
I take off my shirt and look in the closet for another one and another pair of pants to match the shit I just picked out, I take off my pants, I head back to the room I find Thando making her way in
Me:"what do you fucken want on my room?"
Thando:"whoa...chill, you left your phone downstairs and it started ringing"
She throws my phone on the bed
Me:"thanks..you can get out now"
Thando:"wow...your bedroom is so beautiful"
It's her first time in here, we lock our room.....is it because she can't see I'm half naked?
Me:"thanks...out"
She looks at my body then heads out
This girl is trouble waiting to happen,she needs to leave,drama is the last thing I need in my life right now.
I dress up then head out, I get in the car and speed off

.
. .
.

💞THANDO💞

.
. .
.

I've been trying everything to get Quinton to notice me, but everyday I fail,he just doesn't see me in that way,I went as far as dressing up like Lisa,still he doesn't notice me....today when I heard his car pull over I came up with a plan to clean the floor and wet myself and it worked,he couldn't stop starring and his dick reacted too...at least he now can look at me in a different manner.... from now on it'll be easy to get his attention. Once he falls for me he'll leave Lisa for me and we'll be a happy family, he'll love me,he'll take care of me and do anything for me. Lisa's name will become poisen to his ears,he won't ever look back, he'll hate Lisa and he will listen to everything I tell him.

.....

Wait wait what am I doing? It's happening again,these evil thoughts, they always consume my mind when I'm alone.... when Lisa is around,non of these thoughts come into my mind,ever since the day of the braai with her friends, I had my first thoughts of wanting to be her...ever since then,when I'm alone,I'd think of ways to destroy this little family when I'm around Quinton lustful thoughts consume me..... But God knows that I wouldn't dream of hurting Lisa,she's helped me alot,they've both helped me, I love them and I want them to grow old together and continue helping people.

.....

"But think about it Thando...all this could be yours, Quinton will love you forever and protect you from all harm, he'll give you so much love,love that no one has ever given you"

Yes..love,that's all I want,I just want to be loved

"Quinton is the one for you, he'll worship the ground you walk in...you almost there, he'll fall for you eventually, today was a start, keep it up and in no time, he won't be able to hold himself anymore"

But..what should I do

"His wife will get held up at work, when he comes back, he'll find you in the lounge, do something sexy that will catch his eye...make sure you have a bottle of whiskey on the coffee table"

Mmmh okay,I'll do just that

Angelic voice:"don't do it Thando.....don't do it my child"

"He'll be all yours,you will never suffer again... y'all will leave happily ever after"

I hold my head...

Me:"stop...get out of my head...stop!!"

.

.

.

👑QUINTON👑

.

.

.

After a long day at work I finally get home I park the car in the garage and Lisa's car is not here yet... which means she must've got held up at work.

I get out and make my way up the lift I go straight to the bedroom, I freshen up and take a long warm shower.

I get out wipe and lotion myself I put on my sweatpants and a vest, I put my sleepers and go check up on the kids.

They both fast asleep and I guess Mah is also in her room asleep, it is quite late though it's half past nine.

I head down to the lounge,I'll watch TV as I wait for my wife to get home.
I get to the lounge my eyes widen, I find Thando doing some stretches,looks like yoga, she's wearing tights and sports bra
Couldn't she do this somewhere else?
I clear my throat
She looks up at me behind her
Thando:"oh..you back"
Me:"yeah... wanted to watch some TV"
Thando:"oh okay go ahead...don't mind me,I'm almost done"
I scratch my head and sit down,I switch on the TV, my eyes keep landing on her, I don't wanna lie,she looks sexy, the positions she's making, I'm starting to feel uneasy she's making me uncomfortable, I focus back on the TV, I try my best to focus but my eyes fail me as she changes positions,fuuck... she's flexible...no..no she needs to stop
I notice a bottle of whiskey on the table and I'm tempted to pour myself so I do so....
I galp my first glass in one go,I pour more and do the same, I keep doing that, I don't know how many times but my eyes are a bit heavy.
Thando gets up then bends over, her ass facing me,her pussy is too visible under those tights,my dick is hard
Me:"so...you do yoga often?"
She looks at me from inbetween her legs as she's bent over,she smiles
Thando:"yeah,it helps relax my body"
Me:"really? Looks like hard work though"
She chuckles
Thando:"not really...wanna try?"
Me:"nahh I still love my bones thank you"
She laughs and stands up to look at me
Thando:"it's not that hard silly....you just have to relax your mind and soul..come let me show you"
She helps me get up I stumble,she holds me into her arms, our faces are inches apart
Me(laughs):"whoaaa..oops...sorry"
Thando:"that's okay"
I stand properly
Thando:"sit down"
I sit in the floor she sits next to me
Thando:"we'll start with the easy positions"
We do a few positions I keep pouring myself some whiskey, I think in a bit too drunk...psshhh oh well..
Thando:"now,the most relaxing one"
Me(laughs):"non of these moves were relaxing...by the way"
She laughs
Thando:"that's cause you drunk...your mind is not a peace"
Me:"psshhh whatever (laughs)...my body will be in peaces if we continue like this"
We laugh
She goes in her knees and bends her upper body down as her ass sticks up,
Me(laughs):"you know what's funny?"
Thando:"what?"
Me:"I love fucking my wife in that position....she does it just like that"

She giggles

Thando:"well it is a good position...does she opens her legs like this?"

She parts her legs a bit,I bite my lip

I kneel behind her

Me:"nahh she opens then a bit wider than that...like this"

I part her legs further

Thando:"oh wow....that does allow more access for you"

Me(laughs):"yyeeap all about accesssssss (laughs)..then she lies on her chest like this"

I push her back for her chest to touch the floor...fuck, my dick is painful

Thando:"then what do you do once she's like this?"

Me:"I do this"

I hold her butt and pretending to be fucking her,poking her with dick from behind

She moans

Thando:"does she moan like that?"

Me:"yeah but she moans louder when I pick up the pace like that"

I groap on her harder

Thando:"Ohhh...damn, she must love that....maybe we should try it with clothes off?"

Me:"mmmh...fuck"

I ignore her as I continue rubbing myself on her

Thando (moans):"what do you say?"

We hear a the lift make a sound as it sounds like it moving, she helps me up to sit on the couch,she her wears a gown that was on the sofa and looks at the TV as if nothing happened, I take my glass of whiskey and drink up

"Hubby I'm home!!"

She makes her way to the lounge

Lisa:"hey you two"

Thando:"hey girl"

Lisa:"y'all still up so late guys"

She says taking off her heels and making herself comfortable next to me

Thando:"we were waiting up on you"

Lisa:"aawwww...you didn't have to"

She looks at me

Me(big smile):"heeyyy"

Lisa:"don't tell me you drunk?"

I measure an inch with my fingers

Me:"just a liiiittle bit"

She chuckles and looks at the table

Lisa:"whiskey Quinton? In the middle of the week? We agreed that weekdays you have lite beers not whiskey"

Me:"sorry bub...eish... temptation"

She shakes her head

Me:"kiss?"

We share a short kiss

Lisa:"never do this again"

Me(whispers):"neverrrrr"

She chuckles and looks at Thando

Lisa:"you allowed him to be like this Thando? I trusted you"

Thando:"I tried to stop him but you know your husband"

Lisa:"stubbornness...guys let's go sleep, I'm tired...had a loooooong say at work"

Me:"you late"

I feel my eyes keep closing, I think I'll pass out any minute

Lisa:"I'll explain tomorrow you way too drunk for me to talk anything serious with you"

Me:"I...am..not"

I sigh and close my eyes

I feel her pull me up, I get up and she holds me as we stumble towards the lift

Me (singing):"baby baby if you give it to me...I'll give it to you, I know how you want it...."

We get to the room she throws me on the bed

.
. .
. .
. .

💎LISA💎

.
. .
. .
. .

I tuck him in then go freshen up and change into my short PJs.

I get inside the covers and he's fast asleep. We didn't even pray, I hate it when Quinton gets drunk weekdays, he should only do this on weekends and I've told him we should try not to get drunk, once he gets tipsy he stops,that means he's had enough,we have kids now and we should tone it down on the drunkardness I don't want my kids picking up these bad habits or being confused on what's wrong with daddy, kids tend to observe alot.

I go down on my knees and pray, I pray to Lord my God to protect my family from the devil, I pray for him to continue fighting for us, I pray that he gets rid of Satan before he tries anything,
Me:" we doing so well so far,we happy and we thank God for that I pray that the devil does not ruin it for us,God please protect my marriage,I'm on my knees pleading for your presence oh lord...make your presence felt in this house God...in Jesus name...in Jesus name...in Jesus mighty name I pray, Amen"

I get in the covers and switch off the lamp...only the deem light on the wall are on...so it's not completely dark

I feel him wrap himself around me

"Bub"

Me:"mmh"

He remains quiet,oh God, not the stupid conversations again, I'm tired today I don't have energy to entertain his drunkness

Quinton:"you know I didn't mean to right?"

Me:"what are you talking about?"

Quinton:"Thando"

I turn to look at him,what is he mumbling about?

Me:"what are you saying love bug?"

He remains quiet and gets a hiccup

Quinton:"I came home in the afternoon...she was showing her ass wiping the floor"

I frown

Me:"continue..."

He really doesn't want to talk the alcohol has overpowered him...but something is forcing him to get this off his chest

Quinton:"I didn't mean to look..but I did and I got hard"

My heart sinks,what is he trying to tell me... I hope nothing happened

Me:"so what did you do?"

He remains quiet..he's really slow when he's drunk

Me:"Quinton?"

He's eyes are closed

Quinton:"her boobs..they were wet...her shirt... everything wet...everything exposed...so...so I ran away from her and went to eat"

I sigh

Quinton:"then I messed my shirt, I went to change.....shcame in when I was half naked"

My mouth opens in disbelief

Me:"what was she doing in our room? No one is allowed in our room,I thought we made those rules clear to everyone who helps in this house even Thando"

I don't believe what I'm hearing,Thando wouldn't do me like this, I mean, yeah, I was warned by the diamonds and the vision I had, but I really believed I could help her and make her believe in the word of God so that the devil doesn't use her to destroy my home.

Quinton:"then she was looking at my naked body like she....like she wanted it for her.. herself"

I shake my head,my heart is aching

Quinton:"then when I came back from work earlier on... I found her doing yoga in the lounge"

Me:"yoga? Since when does she do yoga?"

He laughs and shrugs

Quinton:"kiss me"

I kiss his forehead, I can't kiss his lips just as yet until he's told me everything

Quinton:"unfair...my lips want a kiss too"

Me:"fist finish telling what happened"

He sighs and buries his face on my breasts,I roll my eyes,he's being a baby

Quinton:"I sat down and tried to ignore her..but I couldn't...she was doing really sexy positions, sex positions... I saw the bottle of whiskey on the table so I drank thinking..... thinking it would take my mind off her,but it only made it worse....(sighs)... I watched her, she offered to teach me some yoga...she bent over in the dog style position,... I told her I love to fuck you in that position... then she asked me if do you also bend and open your legs.. she opened them a bit... I went behind her and opened them wider, everything was visible....(hiccups)... next thing I know I'm fucking her"

I gasp...my ears are deceiving me

Quinton:" but with clothes on.... I was groaping her"

That doesn't make me feel any better,I'm hurt, I'm beyond hurt

Quinton:"when we heard the lift we stopped and she wore her gown"

I feel tears threaten,my chest is painful

Quinton:"I'm sorry bub....she seduced me...and I fell for the temptation.... I'm glad you came in time...she asked me to do her with clothes off.... I'm glad you came back bub.... I don't know what got into me.... I'm sorry"

He has told me everything, the way he spoke so truthfully so honestly not leaving out a single thing even though he knows it will break my heart but he told it like it is

Quinton:"do you forgive me my love?"

I look at him his eyes are half open

Me:"go to sleep, we'll talk about it tomorrow"

Quinton:"can we cuddle?"

Me:"yeah..we can cuddle"

I turn my back on him he holds me and I fall asleep between his arms like a little baby.

Me:"Quinton,come see, the diamonds are trying to show me something"

He comes to the room from the bathroom,it's gonna be his first time seeing the diamonds showing the future

He sits next to me they start spinning and the glow from my eyes connects with them then they show our house, it looks like we watching TV

Quinton:"wooww"

.....

I get home after a long week on a business trip,it's been a year now and Thando has been acting weird...she's starting to dress like me, she wears clothes that expose her body alot,sexy clothes, I don't like it one bit...what if Quinton starts looking at her with a different eye...but I don't want to address it, I don't want it to seem like I'm accusing her of anything.

I open the door of our bedroom

Me:"love bug...you fast asleep?"

I get closer to the bed, the covers move and Thando gets up

I drop my bag in the floor

Me:"Thando?"

She looks at me terrified

Me:"what are you doing in my bed?"

Quinton wakes up, he looks at Thando

Quinton:"what the hell? Thando!?"

He looks at me

Quinton:"Lisa?... wait,what's going on?"

Me:"you tell me...what the hell is going on,behind my back,in my bed,in my house?!"

Thando:"Lisa... I can explain"

Quinton:"would you hurry up and do.. how the hell did you land up on my bed cause last night I thought I went to bed alone"

Me:"again Quinton? You doing the same thing to me again? How many times do I have to go through this? You know this sight from the past still haunts me,yet here you are,once again with another woman in our bed and here I am in the same spot I was two years ago...why? Why do you love hurting me like this? Why?"

He looks at me hurt

Quinton:"Lisa... I swear in my father's grave.... I have no idea that's going on here"

Thando:"okay okay... Lisa I'll confess everything... Quinton don't try deny please....ever since you've been gone I've been sleeping here.. Quinton told me he loves me and that he'll leave you for me...but he's scared,he's scared that you won't make it easy on him and let him go...he scared you'll take the kids from him"

My lips tremble looking at both these naked people on my bed

Me:"well...he doesn't have to worry...he can go..I'll gladly prepare the divorce papers for him...and well, he can forget about the kids,I'll be raising them....have a nice life with your hoe Quinton... I'm done fighting for you,this is officially the end of us...the end, I'd be damned if I'd ever let you back,you can go die"

I storm off not shedding a single tear

I smile to myself

Me:"goodbye Quinton,we had our share at love, we shared some really good times and bad, we've had our ups and downs,we tried to involve God.... I guess it was never meant for us to be.... looks like the real devil here was neither Thando or the people who've tried to come between us....the real devil here was the love we had for each other....the love has done more damage than good....look at everything we've been through all in the name of Love.....Love aka Satan, think about it...if we stop loving each other, nothing will ever hurt us again, nothing will ever ruin our happiness...we just have to get rid of Love..Love was never made for you and I.... I guess now it's time we go our separate ways....but no matter what, we'll always remember this, we tried although we failed so many times,at least we tried love bug...at least we tried"

I leave the letter on his desk in his office, I take my bags and my babies, off we drive .

My car stops in front of a very familiar gate, the gate opens

We get out of the car and go knock at the door it opens

Me:"hey...can we crash with you, just for a few weeks"

"You know you always welcome..

Come in"

Me:"thanks Troy"

So this is how we'll separate

The diamonds fall,we look at each other and we both in tears

He shakes his head

Quinton:"this can't be true"

Me:"I don't wanna loose you Q"

Quinton&!:"she needs to go!"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert23

-
-
-
-
-
-

💎 LISA 💎

-
-
-
-
-
-

I get up as I find myself fuming with anger

Quinton:"Lisa....calm down"

I start pacing

Me:"that bitch!"

Quinton:"she's really crossed the line"

Me:"after everything I've done for her! Everything we've done for her, putting your life at risk for her, I treated her like my little sister! Little did I know the wickedness going on beneath that innocent face!"

Quinton:"I want her out of my house this instant Lisa"

Me:"Out is where she's going"

I storm out of the room and take the stairs straight to her room, I budge inside

Me:"you ungrateful little prick!!"

I pull the blankets and she's not there

Me:"where's that brat!"

I look in the bathroom she's not there, I check the closet all her clothes are gone....

Quinton:"Lisa!"

I turn to be met by a panicking Quinton

Me:"she's gone?"

Quinton:"Where's Rae!?"

Me:"what do you mean where's Rae?"

Quinton:"I mean she's not in her room"

Me:"where's Mah?"

She budes in

Mah:"I looked everywhere"

My heartbeat increases in fear Quinton runs out the room

I run after him

Me:"She took my baby!"

Quinton:"the bitch messed with the wrong family!!"

I pass Kyle's room and he's sleeping peacefully, I run out and follow Quinton down the stairs

Me:"I'm coming with you!"

Quinton:"stay here Lisa..."

Me:"she's my baby too, I'm coming"

He gets in the car I hop on too

He speeds off right after exiting the gates.

I'm sweating,I'm furious.. I want my baby, I feel like crying but my anger is way too much to let me

Me:"anything happens to my baby.... I swear I'll kill her"

Quinton:"that's if I don't do it first"

Me:"where we going to start?"

Quinton:"mom's place"

Why didn't I think of that

Me:"do you think she's been working with your mother?"

He shrugs

Quinton:"if there's anyone I suspect first it's her"

I sigh and close my eyes... God, please protect my baby,she's innocent, please don't let them hurt my one and only baby girl,my sunshine,my pride and joy,in Jesus name.....Amen .

After a while we park outside Quinton's home,he enters the codes and we drove in, we bust up in the house and start looking everywhere

Quinton:"where is she! Stella!!"

He shouts his mom's name

"What is all the screaming about?"

She comes down the stairs

Quinton:"where's my baby?"

Q's mom:"what baby? What are you talking about?"

Quinton:"the fucken baby!! Where's my child?...Thando!"

He shouts for Thando

Q's mom:"Thando?... Lisa, what is your husband rumbling about"

Me:"Rachelle is missing"

Quinton:"she's not missing...Thando took her, and I know you behind all this...so where's my baby!?"

Q's mom:"that's sad news.... I..."

Quinton grabs her by her shirt

Quinton (clenched teeth):"I swear,if I find out you have anything to do with this, I'll kill you with my own bare hands"

He pushes her roughly causing her to fall on the floor he walks away wondering around the house

I look at her on the floor she's in pain

Q's mom:"please help me up"

I look at her up and down

Me:"mxm"

Quinton:"they not here,let's go"

I follow him out

We've now been driving for more than an hour looking all over

Me:"that's it... I'm calling the police!"

I take my phone but he snatches it from me

Quinton:"we'll find her...let's not involve the police,when I find her, there's no telling what I'm going to do"

Me:"Quinton! It been almost an hour, my baby is nowhere to be seen....this is no time to be revengeful... I want my damn baby!"

His phone rings he picks up

Quinton:"Clyde?"

..

Quinton:"we on our way"

He does a quick U turn making me hold on tight to my seat as he speeds like a maniac,damn this car is fast, Quinton is not slowing down and is overtaking cars as if he's in a movie

We get back to our house,we drive through the gates.

Me:"what are we doing back here?"

Quinton:"he found them"

I sigh in relief and we run inside the house, we find them sitting on the chairs around the dinner table,she's looking down, and Clyde is starring at her, his gun is on top of the table

Me:"where's Enzo?"

Clyde:"upstairs, I gave Mah to calm her down since she was crying like crazy"

I run upstairs to her room, I find Mah dressing her up

Me:"Ahh my baby!!"

I walk up to her and pick her up immediately and hold her tightly hugging her, I bring her face to mine and kiss her all over,she giggles and screams happily

Mah:"I just gave her a bath"

Me:"ohh my Rae Rae, mommy was sooooo worried and soo scared.. I thought I lost you forever"

Rae:"aahhhh hdbsdgdhshjfbnjsh"

Me:"she didn't hurt you baby?"

Rae:"hsjdgehjdjhkkjdhh"

I look all over her she lays her head on my chest burying her face on my breasts, I go sit down on the couch in her room and take out my boob,she sucks on it for dear life ,I feel tear threatening

Me:"don't worry baby, mommy will never let anyone take you away from me again..okay"

She smiles looking at me while playing with my shirt and sucking

Mah:"I'm so sorry about what happened"

Me:"it's not your fault Mah, don't be sorry"

Mah:"why did she take her anyways?"

I shrug

Me:"who knows... I'm just glad my baby is still breathing"

Shes already fast asleep

Me:"she's even tired, I wonder at what time did that bitch wake my baby up, wondering around with her in the blistering cold"

My anger arises once again I go put Rae to bed

Me:"Mah...you can go home for today"

She nods then comes and embraces me,why did she do that,now I'm in tears

Mah:"if it wasn't for your prayers, worse would've happened...keep praying Nana"

Me:"I will,thanks"

We break the hug and she walks out, I storm out and head downstairs, I find them still seated there, Quinton is sitting at the far end of the table starring at her with so much resentment, it quiet

I sit next to her

I look at her for a while without saying anything, she looks up at me

Thando:"Lisa... I.. I'm sorry..."

My hand flies across her face she holds her cheek, she looks up at me I slap her other cheek

She bursts into tears

Thando(crying):"I'm sorry!!"

I slap her again, I grab her by her shirt and make her stand up

Me:"hit me!"

She shakes her head

Me:"what? You scared of people on your own age group? You'd rather take a baby?...hit me dammit!"

I slap her she stumbles

Me:"I take you inside my home"

I slap her

Me:"I feed you my food!"

I slap her she falls on the floor

Me:"I buy you clothes!!"

I pull her by her hair making her stand up

Me:"I put the man who destroyed you behind bars, risking my man's life, risking the father of my kid's life..to do some dangerous shit so that we get you out of the shit you were in... I prayed for you everyday,there is nothing I wouldn't have done for you... I treated you as my own blood

sister, I was willing to pay for your school fees and send you back to school so you can become something better in life.... but what do you do?....you go and seduce my husband!?"

She looks at me astonished

Me:"yeah,I know,he told me,what? You think he'd keep it a secret and actually fuck you behind my back?"

I slap her really hard she screams,my long nails aren't doing any justice to her face

Me:"you ungrateful bitch!! All this time I'm laughing with you,you had your filthy eyes on my husband...you dirty dirty hoe!! That's all you are,that's all you'll ever be!"

I push her on the floor and get on top of her

Me:"now this is for my baby"

I punch her tummy she groans out loud,I punch her multiple times as anger has totally took over my body, I feel hands pulling me away from her

Me:"let me go!!"

I scream kicking trying to fight them

Me(screaming):"let me go!! I'm gonna kill her!! Let me go!! I wanna kill her! She wants to hurt my baby!! She wants to harm my baby!! She wanna destroy my marriage! I'm gonna kill heerrrrr!!!"

I burst into tears, screaming my lungs out, Quinton embraces me I cry on his chest

Quinton:"sshhhhh...that's enough bub....shhhhhh, it's over now, our baby is safe... I'm not going anywhere,no one is going to separate us,ever"

I hold him tighter

.

.

.

👑 QUINTON 👑

.

.

.

.

It was my very first time seeing Lisa fight,or this angry showing no sympathy at all.

She finally calms down

Me:"do you wanna go rest?"

Lisa:"No I'm fine"

I look at Clyde who's chilling by the chair

Me:"Clyde, help her up"

He goes and helps Thando stand up then help her sit on the chair, I help Lisa up, I wipe her tears, she wipes them too

I look at her in the eyes

Me(whispers):"stop crying now"

Lisa:"I stopped"

She sniffs

Me:"I'll get you water"

She nods with hiccups

I cup her face

Me:"no one is going to hurt our princess...not while I'm still breathing"

She nods

Me:"now calm yourself down"

Lisa:"I'm calm"

I bring her face closer and kiss her lips

I pull out after a while

I leave her and go pour a glass of water for her, I get to the table and give her, she drinks up, she's now sitting next to me far away from Thando, only Clyde is next to her. I really wanted to beat her up but something greater than me stopped me.

Clyde: "don't y'all have questions for her?"

He breaks the silence. Not that I don't know what to say to her, but I just don't feel like talking to her.

Lisa: "why?"

She asks looking at Thando her voice is filled with disappointment, she really loved Thando.

Lisa (softly): "why are you doing all this?... (whispers)... why?"

Thando looks up at her then looks back down

"Why dammit!"

She shouts banging the table, we all startle, including Clyde... I guess we didn't expect that Thando breaks down.

Thando: "I don't know.... I don't know..."

Me: "are you working with my mother? Did she send you to steal the baby?"

She shrugs

Thando: "it's the voice.... the deep scary voice inside my head.. it's always there, selling me dreams, persuading me, painting images in my mind.. it started the day of the braai when we were celebrating the defeat of my monster stepdad, I started having thoughts, I envied your lives, the voice told me that I can also have it all, that I can also be loved and not only live but own this luxurious house, it told me to seduce Quinton, he'll end up loving me and leave Lisa for me, I didn't want to listen I didn't listen but I'd end up doing everything he tells me anyway.... last night it warned me to run away cause you already know everything, it told me to take Rae with me and give her to Quinton's mom, so I did, but Clyde caught me on the way since I was walking and Rachele was crying out loud catching everyone's attention"

Me: "you fucken expect us to believe you possessed? Just cause we believe in God doesn't mean you should make a fool out of us... you were not controlled, you fucken knew exactly what you were doing"

Thando: "I swear.... it's only when Lisa is around the wicked thoughts and voices would vanish and I wouldn't see Quinton in that way.... I only admired y'all, I never wanted to destroy y'all... please you have to believe me"

Me: "it's a little too late now... you can go back to whatever hole you crawled out from, we don't need you here"

Lisa: "voices?"

I look at Lisa... oh hell no, I know she's not about to believe this made up story

Lisa: "the voice tells you what to do in order to have everything I have?"

Thando nods

Lisa: "it made you believe you could be me?"

She nods

Lisa: "it also told you to take Rae to Quinton's mom?"

She nods

Lisa sighs then looks at me

Lisa: "your father really doesn't want to rest in peace"

Me: "you believe her?"

Lisa: "it makes sense Quinton, her kidnapping Rae and taking her to your mom.... remember

what I told you? About your mom"

I nod

Me:"I guess it makes sense...so what are we going to do?"

Lisa:"my part of helping her is done.... I just want her out of my house"

Me:"you read my mind"

Lisa:"pack your bags and go Thando, I've tried"

Thando:"please... I have no where to go"

Me:"well you should've thought of that before you entertained that evil voice in your head instead of telling Lisa about it sooner for her to help you"

Thando:"Lisa... please... I'm sorry"

Lisa gets up and walks towards her

Lisa:"I loved you Thando... I really did.. I'm really angry and disappointed in you"

Thando(crying):"I didn't mean to hurt you... please forgive me"

She closes her eyes and takes a breath then walks away towards the lift and goes in it

Me:"pack up, your time here is done...Clyde will drive you and drop you off anywhere you need to go, I don't ever want to see your face so make sure you choose your destination wisely"

I click my tongue and walk away, I take the lift and head up to our room

I find her on the bed with Rae next to her sleeping peacefully and Kyle ontop of her playing.

I get on the bed and watch my princess Thumbelina asleep I kiss her softly multiple times on her tiny lips

I look at Kyle who's playing with his mommy's face

Me:"hey there big boy"

Kyle:"mama"

Me:"you playing with mama"

Kyle:"Bhabha"

Me:"and bhabha"

He smiles widely he moves his face towards sleeping Rae,Lisa hold him and guides him to not wake her up

Kyle:"mmmaaaa"

He kisses Rae we laugh at him he giggles as he keeps kissing Rae

Lisa:"ncwaaooo my cuddle muffins loves his sister"

Me:"I have no doubt he'll be an over protective brother"

He crawls up to me I help him jump over Rae and lay him on me,he kisses my lips

Kyle: mmmmaaaa"

I laugh he giggles, Lisa moves Kyle from me and puts him next to Rae giving him his toy, then she comes and lies ontop of me

Me(laugh):"jealous much?"

Lisa:"I just want you to hold me"

I kiss her forehead,she tilts her head up and we share a passionate kiss, I hold her tighter against me

Lisa:"I love you Quinton"

Me:"I love you"

Lisa:"never again are we allowing anyone to stay with us"

Me:"I guess noone out there is grateful for anything...it's such a shame we have such helpful hands"

Lisa:"from now on we help from a distance"

I feel little feet climbing on me, I look over Lisa's back and he's on top of Lisa's back, he rests on

her back with his tummy like how Lisa is on me

We burst into laughter

Me:"wow really now Kyle? Can't I have mommy to myself just for once without you intruding?"

He remains quiet as he holds on to his mom's back

Lisa:"this is the best feeling ever"

I wrap my arms around both of them,my heart is beaming with joy, I fucken love them so damn much

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

☹ CLYDE ☹

.
. .
. .
. .

We've been driving for long while now and she hasn't told me where I'm taking her

Me:"look here,this ain't no Uber,so it's either I leave you right here in the middle of no where or you tell me where you fucken going?"

I feel her eyes on me

Thando:"I have no where to go"

Me:"do I look like I care? Just tell me where to drop you off already,this is petrol being used not ocean water"

She remains quiet.

What she has done in my brother's home really disgusts me, Lisa really showed her hell, but I sense there's something not right with her, when I found her,she looked lost,there's something different about her,she's not the same girl from the first time I saw her, I don't know if it's just me but there's something not up with her,and when she mentioned voices,it proved me right,she's mental

I stop the car

Me:"your destination ends here"

She looks out the window

Thando:"but I don't know this place? There's no houses here"

Me:"yeah well, you decided to waste your limited petrol driving me in circles, so now your destination ends here"

She folds her arms

Thando:"I'm not getting out...we in the middle of nowhere,it's dark"

Me:"you did say you had nowhere to go... so... welcome to nowhere....get out of my car please"

She looks at me

Thando:"please,I beg you, don't leave me here"

Me:"get out"

Thando:"no"

Me:"out"

Thando:"no"

I get out and open the door for her

Me:"out"

Thando:"I'm not getting out here....okay okay, I'll tell you where you can drop me off... please don't leave me here... please"

I look at her for a while

Thando:"please"

I bang the door closed then hop back to the driver seat

Me:"where to?"

Thando:"Soweto"

Me:"who do you know there?"

Thando:"my grandmother,she passed away but her house is still there,mom and dad used to always go there during the holidays even though she long passed away....I just hope it's still in one peace"

I look at her,this is one messed up soul

I start the car and drive, she keeps sniffing,I guess she's crying, I look for a tissue,I think I have some here,I'm kind of a neat and clean freak so they say, I just like a clean place that's all

I give her tissue

Thando:"thanks"

She blows her nose, I open the gate and I drive in, I park my car in the garage.

I look at her and she's looking around confused

Thando:"what's this? Where are we?"

Me:"my place...get your bags and follow me inside"

I get out she also gets out and takes her bags then follows me inside, we get in I lock the door, I turn and look at her

Me:"make yourself comfortable,there's plenty bedrooms you can choose any you like, except mine"

Thando:...

Me:"find a bathroom take a bath and take care of your face"

She looks at me for a while then a smile creeps on her face,she then does something very weird...she attacks me with a hug, I don't know whether to hold her or what? So I just push her off me gently

Me:"don't get too happy, I was not about to drive all the way to Soweto,as I told you that car uses petrol not water....you not going to live here for free...the sooner you get a job the sooner you buy me petrol the sooner you get out of here"

I leave her and head upstairs to my room

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 24

-
-

-
-
-

Two weeks later

-
-



Dashing through the snow
In a one horse open sleigh
O'er the fields we go
Laughing all the way
Bells on bob tails ring Making spirits bright
What fun it is to laugh and sing
A sleighing song tonight
Oh, jingle bells, jingle bells
Jingle all the way
Oh, what fun it is to ride
In a one horse open sleigh
Jingle bells, jingle bells
Jingle all the way
Oh, what fun it is to ride
In a one horse open sleigh
A day or two ago
I thought I'd take a ride
And soon Miss Fanny Bright Was seated by my side
The horse was lean and lank Misfortune seemed his lot
We got into a drifted bank
And then we got upsot
Oh, jingle bells, jingle bells
Jingle all the way
Oh, what fun it is to ride In a one horse open sleigh
Jingle bells, jingle bells
Jingle all the way
Oh, what fun it is to ride
In a one horse open sleigh yeah..



💚 THANDO 💚



I've been staying with Clyde for two weeks now and he made me attend therapy, I don't hear the voice anymore, I make sure I pray every day, I've also been going to church and doing everything Lisa has been advising me about when I was living with them but at that time I had my own evil agendas... I pray to God that she some day finds it in her

heart to forgive me and know that the truth is I really loved her and I blame myself for being too vulnerable for the devil to use me to destroy such a good thing going.

I don't go out much cause no one must know that Clyde took me in and by no one I mean the O'Briens being Quinton and Lisa. Clyde told me I'll move out once I have my shittyness together,his words. He said he'll get me a job but everytime I ask he ignores me or says he hadn't found anything yet.

Tonight is Christmas Eve and I ordered a Christmas tree and decorations online,since I'm not allowed to go out, I gave Clyde a list of things we need in the house,the least I do is clean and cook for him, I do the laundry and he doesn't mind, I've come to notice that he's a neat freak,he hates a dirty environment,there's air fresheners around his house so it always smells good. He's not back from work yet,and I'm almost done preparing dinner, today I went all out since it's Christmas Eve, I used his recipe book, I was shocked to find that he like he loves to cook and he makes a mean meal,but he's only cooked twice since I've been here,I do most of that now.

I set out the table properly and everything is in place... I hope he won't have a problem with the Christmas tree, he never shows interests in many things and he gets pissed off easily,a big part of him still hates me for what I did to his Bro and Sister in law. I don't blame him,I hope that some day everyone forgives me.

I didn't decorate the tree yet,I called people to do the lights outside the house,so that at night the little Christmas lights go on, I also asked them to put around the trimmed trees, I've already tried them and it's beautiful. I've switched them off so that I switch them on when Clyde gets back. I used the money he gave me to do some shopping of things I need online like cosmetics and clothes,it was a ridiculously huge amount of money he gave me and a card,he opened an account for me...R100 000 what kind of clothes and cosmetics was he talking about!? Then he said I should tell him if I'm short, I don't think he understands anything about prices tags or shopping in all ,but anyway it came in handy for this day.

I hear his car pull over, so I get up and go switch on the lights, I can just imagine the confused look on his face.

I don't know what to do with myself, should I stand up or sit down? So I just go to the kitchen and pour myself a glass of water and drink

H gets in then looks around,he looks at the dinner table then at the lounge,and the lights along the fence of the staircase. His eyes finally land on me and as always he his forehead is creases.

Clyde:"Thando"

Me:"Yes"

Clyde:"why does my house look like cartoons?"

I laugh but stop as I notice his seriousness

Me:"happy Christmas Eve Clyde,I thought I'd do something special for you...for Christmas spirit, what do you think?"

He shakes his head and chuckles then heads up stairs...ouch, I guess he doesn't like it. Well. That stung.

I sit by the table alone

"Marry Christmas mommy!! Marry Christmas daddy!!!"

I shout jumping on top of the bed waking them up

Dad:"whoa...it's Christmas already?"

Me:"yeesss wake up time!!"

Mom:"hey what's all the noise about"

Me:"it's Christmas silly.. follow me!"

I pull them out of bed,they reluctantly get up

Dad:"okay okay jeez, slow down sweety"

They follow behind me

Me:"hurry hurry"

Mom:"we are baby"

We get to the Christmas tree, I show them the presents around the tree, I was the first to see them since when I went to bed they were not there

Me:"loook daddy..Santa bought the presents last night when we were all asleep"

Mom(gasps):"Ohhh wow, looks like someone has been a good girl this year"

Me:"yeeeyi"

Dad:"let's open them up and see what he got for you"

I open them up and I got a bunch of nice things like clothes and toys,some were from mom and dad and some said from Santa.

Me:"thank you so much mom and dad!"

Dad:"merry Christmas my Angel"

Me:"I also got you something"

Mom:"really!?"

I nod and give them their boxes

They gasp at the same time

Mom:"this is the most beautiful drawing I've ever seen and earnings...Awww baby"

Me:"that's you daddy and me"

She hugs me and kisses me all over my face

Me:"thank you so much my love"

Dad(takes out his):"a wallet?... wow"

I used my tuck money I saved up to buy for them, they know I've been saving since I was giving them the money to keep it for me safe.

He picks me up and throws me up making me giggle

Dad:"I love you Angel... always remember that okay?"

I nod

Mom:"and mommy loves you too"

Me:"I love you mom I love you dad...can we eat now!"

They laugh at me, we spend the whole day laughing and having fun as a family and later on my cousins came and we enjoyed dinner around the table telling funny stories

That was my last Christmas with both my parents, I wipe my tears. That was the last year of my happiness, cause the next year mom and dad started having problems as the monster came into our lives. I wish I can turn back time. Just to hold them and feel loved again.

I put my hand together and close my eyes

Me:"Dear God,if you listening, please tell mom and daddy, I love them, and I miss them so much, I wish they were here with me...(sobs).... I have noone father, I've become a trouble child,noone wants me....(sobs)...merry Christmas mommy...merry Christmas

daddy"

I open my eyes, I blow off the candles on the table

"Whoa... I just realized, I'm starving"

I look up at him coming down the stairs

Clyde:"I hope the food is not that cold yet... I was freshening up"

I smile and find myself laughing a bit

Me:"No not at all, please,make yourself comfortable"

Clyde:"looks delicious"

Me:"I hope it is,God knows I've been trying to cook better than you"

He chuckles and goes back to straight face

We sit down, he was about to take in a fork full

Me:"wait"

He looks at me

Me:"it's Christmas Eve, the least we can do is pray before we eat"

He sighs and closes his eyes

Me:"we thank the Lord for this meal, my the good Lord bless our food in Jesus name
Amen"

Clyde:"Amen"

We dig in and eat in silence.

It's my first time eating with his in the same room, ever since I've been here he eats in his room, we never talk much unless we talking about things we need in the house. I told myself that he hates me... I mean he did once say, he doesn't like me because I was was hoe for a living, so I guess I understand.

He finishes his food while I'm still eating

Clyde:"your food was delicious"

Me(talking to myself):"What's that? Did I hear correctly? I think the voices in my head are back again? Did Cyde keithen O'Brien just give out a compliment?"

He chuckles

Clyde:"nevermind I said anything"

Me(laughs):"thank you Clyde"

Clyde:"whatever"

Me:"No.. I mean, thank you...for everything, even risking your trust with your brother...Thank you"

He gives me a side smile... whooaa its been a while since I've seen one of those

Clyde:" you welcome"

I smile and look down at my food

Clyde:"are you going to finish that?"

I look at him and shake my head

He takes my plate and digs in, I burst into laughter

Me:"someone was hungry"

He helps me clear the table after we were done and we had desert. I'm now washing the dishes

"Need help with that?"

I look at him standing against the counter

Me:"yes please"

He comes towards me

Me:"you'll just wipe and pack them"

He groans

Clyde:"I'd rather wash and rinse"

I giggle then let him wash them as I wipe and pack

Clyde:"so....tell me, what do you want to be when you grow up?"

I laugh I feel like a small child

Me:"I wanted to be a doctor"

He looks at me with his lips curved down giving me the "hmmmm I see" look, I laugh at him

Clyde:"so I see you are the intelligent type at school?"

Me:"I guess you can say that.. but it's not because of that"

Clyde:"then why? Being a doctor is a lot of hard work"

Me:"I want to save people's lives"

Clyde:"ohh..why?"

Me:"just.... when my parents died, I felt so helpless, so useless,all I could do was watch, I wished I could've done something, something to saves their lives,but all I did was watch...(sighs)...so I don't want to ever feel like that again, I don't want people to die without atleast being helped first....so yeah, that's why I wanna be a doctor"

He's looking at me with a that frown again

Clyde:"you know even doctors can't save everyone"

I nod

Me:"I know...but it's best to try and fail then fail to try right?"

A tear escapes my eye

Clyde:"you'd make a great doctor someday"

Me:"who me? Mxm... I blew my chances with someone who was going to help me fulfil that... now,all those dreams will always remain just that.... dreams"

Clyde:"nahh, you give up too easily, you still young, you will have many chances"

Me(sighs):"if you say so"

We continue talking about other stuff

Me:"there's one more thing I need help with before we go to bed"

I pull his hand towards the lounge, I also don't know where I get the courage to even touch this scary intimidating handsome man.

Me:"this is a Christmas tree"

Clyde:"I know what a Christmas tree is"

I laugh

Me:"of cause..Uhm in that box there's the decorations...can you help me decorate it?"

He looks at it for a while

He shakes his head

Clyde:"I don't do Christmas trees"

Me:"come on.... please"

He looks at me

Me:"pleeaase..for Christmas spirits sake?"

He looks up shaking his head

Clyde:"whatever"

Me:"yeeyii!!"

I hug him,he clears his throat, I let him go ..there I go, touching this dangerous guy,I

swear he'll kill me one of these days

Me:"let's get on with it"

We take out the stuff and start putting them around the tree, we make the popcorn chain too, he too serious and concentrated on what he's doing and he's kinda struggling

Clyde:"Argh this is impossible!"

I laugh

Me:"relax, don't rush it...and it doesn't have to be perfect, you see"

I show him mine. He does it better

Me:"that's it...Now cheer up Mr Robocop"

I throw popcorn on his face and laugh,he looks at me with an angry expression, shit, now I regret it

Me:"I'm sorry"

He throws popcorn on me too and it hits my eyes

Me:"ahhh ouuuch"

Clyde:"shit.. I'm sorry.. I....

I throw more on him,he throws on me, we laugh until the popcorn was all over the floor

Clyde:"great..look at the mess you caused"

Me:"you were part of it too"

He laughs...yes, he actually laughs, I tell him how I used to decorate the tree with my parents every Christmas Eve and in the morning I'd find a bunch of presents under the tree

Me:"you know what my father used to do?"

Clyde:"what?"

Me:"he used to come into my room in midnight and wish me merry Christmas.. even on my birthday...that was the most special thing ever"

Clyde:"that was sweet of him"

Me:"yeah"

Silence

Me:"how was your Christmas growing up?"

Clyde:"my Christmas? (Chuckles) well, before dad introduced us to the other world... Christmas was pretty fun, we'd come together as a family and do all that thanks giving shit and gifts and all that"

Me:"y'all don't spend Christmas together anymore?"

Clyde:"we do..but it's not the same, we hardly make time for each other anymore, everything changed when dad passed away, mom just became this bitter woman,and everything was just distant...but our brother bond is something that can never be broken, we've been through alot together, even though sometimes we don't keep in touch but we always there for each other"

Me:"I've seen the love y'all share...what about your sister?"

Clyde:"Candra...she's more of a momma's girl"

Me:"ohh I see... if I had siblings and parents I'd make sure we never drift apart...life is too short, one minute they here,you angry at them the next they gone and you end up apologising to a tombstone"

A tear escapes, I feel his hand on my face,he wipes away my tear

I look at him in the eyes as he looks back at mine

Clyde:"don't cry....it's Christmas Eve remember, where's your Christmas spirit?"

I smile, at least he now believes in Christmas... I think
I hold his hand which is on my cheek ,he quickly lets me go
Clyde:"let's finish up so we can clean up this mess"

I laugh

Me:"yeah, so tell me about your childhood you know just the good memories"

He chuckles and starts talking about how he grew up and the mischievous things they used to get up to when they were young, I can't stop laughing. They way Clyde explains funny things but doesn't laugh makes me laugh even more,until he ends up laughing, I even have tears from all this laughter.

We finish up

Clyde:"goodnight Thando"

Me:"goodnight Clyde"

We switch off the lights and leave the Christmas decorations ones one,we head to our separate rooms

...

My phone goes off its a phone call

I pick up, who's calling me in the middle of the night?

Me:"hello?"

"Merry Christmas Thando"

I check the time it's midnight

Me:"Clyde,it's in the middle of the night"

"I know... merry Christmas"

Me:"merry Christmas"

He drops the call

.....

Me:"you know what my father used to do?"

Clyde:"what?"

Me:"he used to come into my room in midnight and wish me merry Christmas.. even on my birthday...that was the most special thing ever"

Clyde:"that was sweet of him"

Me:"yeah"

.....

I laugh to myself,as I realise what he just did, I always knew he's not as cruel as he acts

Me:"Oh Clyde, you crazy...in your own way....that was sweet of him"

🌲🌲🌲🌲🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲🌲🌲🌲🌲

💎LISA💎

🌲🌲🌲🌲🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲



[Chorus 1]

So this is Christmas
And what have you done
Another year over
And a new one just begun
And so this is Christmas
I hope you have fun
The near and the dear ones
The old and the young

[Chorus 2]

A very merry Christmas
And a happy New Year
Let's hope it's a good one
Without any fear

[Verse 1]

And so this is Christmas
For weak and for strong
For rich and the poor ones
The war is so long
And so happy Christmas
For black and for white
For yellow and red ones
Let's stop all the fight

[Chorus 2]

A very merry Christmas
And a happy New Year
Let's hope it's a good one
Without any fear

[Chorus 1]

So this is Christmas
And what have we done?
Another year over
And a new one just begun
And so happy Christmas
We hope you have fun
The near and the dear ones
The old and the young

[Chorus 2]

A very merry Christmas
And a happy New Year

Let's hope it's a good one
Without any fear
[Outro]
And so this is Christmas
And what have we done?
Another year over
And a new one just begun-- Celine Dion.



I feel the bed bouncing, and tiny hands playing with my face, I open my eyes and find Rae sucking my cheek and Kyle sitting on my tummy, I look up at Quinton who's jumping on the bed making us bounce, the kids are giggling

Me: "stop it Q!"

Quinton: "this is fun, come join me"

Me: "you too old to be jumping on the bed Quinton"

Quinton: "but it's fun... I'm not too old to have fun... come on"

He pulls my hand making me stand on the bed, I look at my babies and they staring at us as if we crazy as we start jumping

Me: "hey, this is fun!"

Quinton: "I told you"

Kyle and Rae can't stop laughing

Kyle tries to stand up but the bed is bouncing so he keeps falling and Rae would throw herself back and laugh at him as Kyle kept trying to stand but keeps falling and giggling

We laugh at them

Quinton jumps off the bed I jump on his back, he takes Kyle and Rae and he carries us to the lift

Me: "whoa love bug you so strong"

Quinton: "I have to so I can flex for you"

I giggle as I feel his strong arms

The lift goes down, until we reach the lounge

Quinton: "Merry Christmas!!!"

I get off him looking around

Me: "woow"

Everything is decorated so beautifully in a Christmas theme

Me: "this is beautiful Quinton, last night we only did the tree though... where did all this come from?"

There's also those big candy socks around the walls

Quinton: "I think Santa might've had something to do with this"

I scream, Kyle also joins me

Me: "Santa was here!!"

Quinton: "yeah... let's go see what he left for is under the tree"

Me (gasps and whisper): "the treeeee"

He laughs at me

And we all her to the tree and sit next to it. Rae sits between Q's legs while Kyle sits between mine.

Well we bought each other gifts and wrapped them, but we don't know what we got each other, we also bought for the kids, but Quinton doesn't know what I bought for them I also don't know what he bought for me, I guess he put them nicely around the tree this morning as "Santa"

Quinton: "okay I'll take one box at a time and call out who's it is, then we wait for you to open... understood?"

Me: "yes dada"

Quinton: "understood kids!"

They remain quiet

Quinton: "Kyle"

He looks up at him

Quinton: "say yes dada"

Kyle: "dada"

Quinton: "yes dada"

Kyle: "yehhh dada"

Quinton: "that's good enough"

He looks at Rae

Quinton: "say yes dada"

Rae(screamz): "aahhhhhhh aaahhhhhh!!"

Me(laughs): "whhooooaaa"

Quinton: "that's the spirit Thumbelina!...I see only Rae has the Christmas spirit here"

Me: "just call out the gifts already!!"

He laughs

Quinton: "okay, first gift goes to.."

He reads the name

Quinton: "ohh princess Thumbelina!..from mommy...there you go baby"

He gives Rae the box

Me: "open up Rae"

She hits the box, we burst into laughter

Quinton: "I'll help you with that"

He helps her open and she tears the rest of the paper on her own, he opens the box for her, Kyle attempts to go see but I hold him back... Quinton takes it out

Quinton: "ohh wow it's earrings"

I had her go Peirce her ears yesterday, it's best to do her now before she can walk she would've ran away this one

Me: "they so pretty, let's try them on"

I get up and go towards her I put them on her

Me: "ncwaaooo my baby is the hottest of all time"

She giggles Kyle brings his hand to her ear but I stop him before he pulls them, that would be a disaster

Quinton: "woow look who upgraded from Thumbelina to Cinderella"

Me: "chessaa Rae Rae, mantombazane!"(you go Rae! Girl!)

They giggle Kyle grabs the empty box also looking inside, his face changes, he wants to cry

Me:"wait Kyle....your turn is coming cuddles"
We sit back at our spot opposite Quinton and Rae
Quinton:"okay, next present,from dada... goes to.....the cuddles of the muffinnns!!!
Yeeaahhh!"
Kyle giggles clapping his hands, he stands up, he can stand and walk while holding on
things though
Quinton:"come get it kiddo"
He moves his leg
Wait wait did he just!? He moves his other leg
Me:"oh my gosshhh where's the video camera!!! Quinton!!"
Quinton:"in the office"
I run to his office, I take it from the table and run back,I on it and record him
Quinton:"you almost there...come take your present"
He walk faster then falls on Quinton's chest he holds him
Me:"you did baby!! You just took your very first steps!!"
We clap for him,Rae also claps screaming, I feel tears prickle,oh man,my little boy is
growing upwait a minute, this mean I'm getting OLD!! Oh no! No no no no!!
Quinton:"let's open for you baby"
He opens his gift
Quinton:"what is this? Is a Super man suit!!!! Wuuuhh!
Me:"wuuuhhh yeeaaaaaaa....my baby gona be a herooooo"
They giggle as he sits down and play with his suit
Me:"we'll dress him up once he's tool a bath"
Quinton:"the next box goes tooo...whoa! Damn this girl is loved, Rae again...from dada!"
I carry on recoding as they open the box
He takes out the most fluffiest and sparkling beautiful dress
Me:"Ohhh wooow....it's a princess dress"
Quinton:"wait...that not all?"
He takes out cute heels, baby heels though they not that high
Me:"aawww....these match her earrings...damn my baby is gonna slaaaaayyy"
She grabs the dress and play with it pulling it
Quinton:"whoa don't ruin it now"
He takes it away from her,and also takes Kyle's suit from him as he was putting it in his
mouth...these kids though.
Me:"next box!"
Quinton:"next box...from bub, to love bug..mmhh I wonder...such a small box though"
He sulks I laugh
He shakes it
Quinton:"it's even light"
Me:"bring it here, I want us to open that one last"
Quinton:"ayi take it"
Me:"heee you know the saying dynamites come in small packages"
Quinton:"you got me jewelry?"
Me:"mxm...leave it alone we'll open it last...next box please"
He takes another box,it's not small but it's not that big either
Quinton:"and this one goes to... mommy, from daddy"

I grab it

Me:"Finally!!"

He holds the camera I too everything fast with much excitement

I open the box, I look inside for a while

I look up at Quinton he has a stupid grin on his face holding his laughter

Me:"what's this?"

He shrugs

I take it out its an elf costume

Me:"what the fu....hell!?"

I open it up it's a sexy elf costume, I look at the box and take out its head mask with pointy ears and hat, I take out the pointy shoes too

Me:"are you kidding me?"

He bursts into laughter,I hold in my laughter

Me:"tell me you joking?"

He can't stop laughing

Me:"an elf costume, really Quinton?..and what's up with you with these costumes for us... I understand the kids but me too?"

Quinton:"I asked you nicely what do you want for Christmas and you said anything....so, there's your anything...it will suit you bub"

He laughs even harder,the kids end up laughing at him too

Me:"mxm"

He wipes his tears from laughter

Quinton:"ohh God...okay, next!... from daddy to mommy"

Me:"this one better not be a costume or I swear I'll strangle you!"

He laughs at me

I open it with less excitement from the first time, it's even a small box,I take whatever's inside out, it's a name tag

Me:"Teddy....(I look at him)....wait, this is a dog's name tag that they put around the neck!?"

He nods, I gasp

Me:"where is he!?"

He gets us and goes to the back door, he comes back from outside holding a very cute fluffy puppy

Me:"aawww...a puppy love bug"

I take it from him

Me:"a golden retriever puppy...it's Soooo cute"

Quinton:"let's just do that"

He puts the name tag around its neck

Me:"Teddy... welcome to the family boy"

I kiss it, I we sit back down with the kids I bring it towards Rae she cries

I quickly move it from her

Me:"he don't bit baby... he's your friend'

She clings on to her dad I move it towards Kyle he also fears it

Me:"come on Kyle,you see (I kiss the dog)...he's a Bhabha"

Kyle:"Bhabha"

Me:"yeah.... touch"

I move it to him he screams I laugh at him as I put him down and he runs around sniffing all over
Me:"I love it love bug"
We continue opening more gifts, I bought him a watch and he loves it and plenty other stuff
Me:"now for the last present.... the one we saved for last"
He rolls his eyes
Quinton:"it's it a neckless?"
Me:"maybe....open it"
He shakes his head opening it with a bored expression
He takes it out
Quinton:"keys?"
I nod
Quinton:"what are they for?"
Me:"I don't know... look at them"
He looks at them carefully
Quinton:"no way!"
Me:"yes way!"
Quinton:"no way no way!!"
Me:"yes way yes way!"
Quinton:"what the actual fuck!"
Me:"aren't you going to go check it out?"
He jumps up I pick up the kids and we follow behind him as we head outside
Quinton:"Whooooooooaaaaaaa...whhaaaaattt!!"
He walks up to it and takes out the big ribbon around it
Quinton:"a motorbike Lisakhanya!!"
Me:"yeah!"
Quinton:"are you kidding me right now!"
He gets on it and starts it
Quinton (laughing):"hhahaaaa.... shit, this is so cool!"
Me:"I know right!"
Kyle stretches his arms wanting to go to his dad while Rae is kicking and hitting me while screaming like crazy
He comes to me and attacks me with a hug,we group hug
Quinton:"this is the best gift of all time.. thanks bub"
Me:"you welcome"
Quinton:"but it looks pretty costly....how did you manage?"
Me:"I do work remember? I saved up and with the money you put in every month every month..I was able to get this beauty"
Quinton:"I've always talked about buying a motorbike"
Me:"I know, yet you still haven't bought it,but you busy buying me houses and cars and jets, forgetting that theres no harm in spoiling yourself too.....so I thought I should just buy it for you already!"
Quinton:"this is a dream come true, I love you even more for this"
He kisses me,he deepens the kiss more and more, I feel tiny hands trying to separate us, I moan a laugh in his mouth

We pull out as Rae was starting to get irritated making crying sounds

Quinton:"these kids are so jealous though..I can't even kiss my wife in peace"

He takes Rae, who is now happy again

Kyle brings his lips to mine and kisses me

Me:"mncwaa..love you the most prince"

He giggles

Me:"Do you wanna test ride it?"

Quinton:"hell yeah!"

He gives me back Rae then starts it he revs it making a noise ,I scream in excitement for,he winks and blows a kiss,he's feeling himself...he drives it around the huge yard, the kids and I are screaming like crazy. He finally parks it properly then we all head back inside

Quinton:"that was crazy!"

Me:"I know right... I so want one too"

Quinton:"that could be arranged"

Me:"No...I'll buy it myself thank you"

Helper:"breakfast is ready ma'am"

Me:"let's go eat guys"

Quinton:"now you talking my language"

We go to the dinner table take the food and go eat by the lounge,we first feed the kids their food,I give Kyle his bottle and Rae her boob, sometimes she drinks from the bottle,that's when I'm not around since I work and study.

We finish up and go freshen up

We invited our family and friends to come spend Christmas lunch with us

So the helpers and I have alot of work to do before I send them home to their families, I was going to send them back a few days ago but some are really desperate for work and the extra pay. We have five helpers in the house who take turns and one garden guy who takes care of the lawn.

We put the kids in their playroom as we now dressing up

Quinton:"bub..please wear that gift I got you today"

Me:"you crazy I'm not wearing that"

Quinton:"please"

Me:"No"

He sulks and sits on the bed I look at him through the mirror as I'm doing my face,he looks really down, I go sit next to him,I'm not dressed yet just underwear and so is he

Me:"what's the matter?"

Quinton:"you don't like my gift"

Me:"I do like it...but Quinton, we will have guest over I can't wear that costume"

Quinton:"what if I also wear one...will you wear yours?"

I look at him

Me:"let's see yours first"

He smiles and goes inside the closet,he closes it and takes his time in there

Me:"I'm waiting"

He comes out wearing a Santa Clause costume, I burst laughter

Me:"Santa!"

Quinton:"Ho Ho Ho merrrrrry Christmas!"

Hia costume is so fat, with the beard,white gloves,glasses and the hat

Me:"I finally meet Santa face to face"

I go closer to him

Me:"now tell me...why you never came everytime I made a wish in Christmas Eve to see you.... but you never showed up"

Quinton:"Uhm...which means you've been a naughty naughty giirrl"

He laughs naughtily

Me (bored):"I was five"

Quinton:"oh.. ... I'm getting old hey, and these elf's can be very clumsy loosing some of my letters....but don't worry about it...this year I came to visit you personally"

Me(excited):"that's my dream come true!"

I hug him

Quinton (laughing):"hohohohohoho!"

Me:'let me get my elf on"

Quinton:"you do that"

I take the costume from the bed and go in the closet, I put everything on.

I look at myself in the mirror, this costume is actually cute and sexy, I love it! Special the pointy shoes , I giggle looking at myself in the mirror

"Come out already!!"

Me:"I'm coming!"

"When? Next Christmas!?"

I laugh and make my way out he looks at me ready to laugh but ends up gasping

Quinton:"fuuuuck! You look hot"

I turn around for him

Me:"well thank you Mr Clause"

Quinton:"No bub you can't wear this"

Me:"why not...I love it"

Quinton:"it's too sexy, take it off"

Me:"you mad...you were forcing me to wear this making me feel bad for not liking your gift....oh no baby... I'm so elfing today"

He comes closer

Quinton:"ho ho no!"

I laugh he wraps his arms around me

Quinton:"have I told you how hot you look with short hair?"

Me:"only about a hundred times"

Quinton:"well,it's fucking sexy"

Oh yeah I cut my hair two days ago,I was getting tired of Rae and Kyle pulling my hair all the time and combing every morning, Quinton couldn't stop complimenting

Quinton:"tonight you'll be Santa's slave"

Me:"isn't that my job anyway?"

Quinton:"oh hoooo yeah"

He kisses me I pull out and spit out the beard that went in my mouth

He laughs

Me:"heee I wonder what are people going to say coming here and we dressed like this"

Quinton:"we the hosts so it must be visible"

Me:"oh well and it's our house even if we walk around naked they can't judge us right?"

Quinton:"that's the spirit"

We high five and kiss.

We head downstairs the kids are also dressed in their new clothes,Kyle as superman and Enzokuhle as a Princess she even has a small crown . We took a bunch of pictures and Quinton has been videoing us since

I'm busy with the pots when I feel Kyle hugging my legs

I look down at him and see Rae crawling towards me too

Me:"what's wrong cuddle muffins?"

Kyle:"dada"

He looks sad as he wants to cry I look at Quinton who's still holding the camera

Me:"you see...you scaring the babies"

Quinton:"rraahh"

He scared them Rae screamz and klye bursts into tears

He laughs at them

Me:"Quinton!! Stop it!...it okay my lubkins it's just daddy"

I pick Kyle up and shush him

Quinton:"wow they not scared of you but they scared of me?"

Me:"look at your beard and that giant tummy...who wouldn't be scared of you....now take these kids,I'm busy"

I give them to him

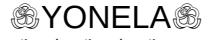
Quinton:"but they don't way me?"

Me:"take off the mask for now"

He groan as he takes it out and takes the kids,they happy again

Quinton:"party poopers"

He says as they walk out the kitchen, I laugh to myself and carry on preparing.



Its two o'clock in the morning and I'm on the road, well, I was at home in the Eastern Cape eMthatha for the holidays, Aidan didn't want me to go,but I had to,I always go home for holidays and spend Christmas there...he begged me not to go but I ended up going and I told him I'll see him before new year's Eve,but I just couldn't, we've been texting and Skyping everyday talking about what we would do if I was there with him on Christmas,then there's Lisa,she came with me to Mthatha with Quinton and the kids to visit her mom but they left early, now she's been telling me how she wants all of us to be at their home for lunch and the special games they have set up... I just couldn't take it

anymore, I asked mom to leave and she was cool with it, so now I'm driving to Joburg, I didn't tell anyone I'm coming so it'll be a surprise, I want to get there as early as possible.

I call Aidan

"Cowgirl"

Me:"merry Christmas cowboy"

He shuffles, I'm sure I just woke him up

"Its two o'clock in the morning"

Me:"and it's Christmas"

"Merry Christmas babe"

Me:"why you so down...what happened to Christmas spirit?"

"What's there to get spirited about if you not even by my side"

Me:"aawww, I wish I was there too"

"That's it, today I'm driving down, I need to see you"

Me:"No no you can't do that"

"Why not... I miss you"

Me:"I miss you too but whoa...you can't come down today"

"Why?"

Me:"Uhm I'll be busy...and you know there will be family and stuff,I won't be able to make time to meet up with you"

"You'll make a plan"

Me:"No babe... patience,it's only a few days left.."

"Mmh fine"

Me:"I'll make it worth it"

He chuckles

"I know you will.... I want to kiss you"

Me:"then what are you waiting for"

"I'm tired of kissing my phone Nella, I want your lips"

Me:"did you get me a present, cause I want my gift when I get back"

"I got you a whole bunch of things...you should've seen me shopping for a gift for you... every cute thing just reminded me of you so I just bought everything"

I laugh

Me:"can't wait to see them...I got you something too"

"What is it?"

Me:"it's a surprise"

"Argh I hate those"

Me:"really?"

"Yeah, I hate surprises"

Me:"well I'm sure you'll love this one"

"Yeah whatever"

Me:"let me let you get back to sleep neh"

"I love you"

Me:"I love you too"

I hang up and continue driving, I borrowed my big bro's car.

I remember I once had a car,but it was a bribe from the Johnsons when they wanted me to stalk Lisa.

Six hours later

I get to the garage the petrol light was on so I fill up the tank, I go to the liquor store next to the garage to buy some wine, since we'll be going to Lisa's place I can't come empty handed. I already got some cool stuff for my babies too Kyle and Rae, I can never get enough of their cuteness.

I get in the liquor and look around for something good, I get two bottles of wine and two of champagne, Quinton's favorite bottle of whiskey Jameson.

I go pay buy the till, I get out, my eyes wonder around and I can't believe eyes next to my car, my heartbeat accelerates in fear

Me(whispers): "Mncedisi?"

I'm not sure if that him I can only see the side and I notice his favourite green binnie...it can't be him

He finishes talking to the person who's filling up my tank then walks away I quickly walk towards the guy filling my tank

Me: "was that Mncedisi?"

He looks at me confused

Me: "Liam? Johnson?"

He shakes his head

Guy: "No it wasn't, that was Themba, my friend"

I look at him suspiciously

I put the things in the car and run to the direction he went in, I see him crossing the road, I follow after him, I just wanna see his face, he walks faster and faster, I think he noticed me, I bump into someone causing them to spill his coffee on me

Me: "Ahh oh no I'm so sorry"

Person: "it's okay"

He walks away, I look forward and I've lost him, I sigh, I look up and notice him again I run to him

Me: "excuse me!"

I tap him

Me: "Mncedisi!"

He looks at me, it's not him

Him: "excuse me?"

Me: "oh sorry, never mind, I thought you were someone else"

I walk away, I look back at the person...hey that's not the person I was chasing he doesn't have a green binnie, only the jacket.

I guess I was just similarising whoever I saw with Mncedisi....mxm, why would he be here anyway, the O'Brien bothers took care of him and they said he'll never be bothering us again. Which means he's dead, even though they didn't put it in exact words but the way they said they took care of him...it sounded like they killed him also Lisa says they killed him.

I laugh to myself... I laugh at my craziness.

I pay the guy and drive to Aidan's apartment. I open the gate, this guy is the only one who lives in an average apartment while his brothers live in mansions, but he has a car to die for.

I go knock at the door.

"Who's it!?"

I keep quiet,the door opens and I'm pointed with a gun
Me(scared):"sur...prise?"
He puts his arms over his head as he looks at me in disbelief
Aidan:"Yonela!!! Yonela fucken Griffins!"
Me:"in flesh baby"
He drops his gun on the floor and attacks me with a hug we kiss with my legs wrapped around his waist
Me:"surprise"
Aidan:"what a surprise indeed"
Me:"even though you almost shot me"
Aidan:"sorry about that....baby...when did you get here? How did you even get here so quick?"
Me:"borrowed my brother's car"
Aidan:"fuck...this is the best Christmas gift ever"
He smashes his lips on mine and we kiss again
Me:"I couldn't survive another day without you"
Aidan:"I was seriously going to drive down today for real"
He kisses me again I pull out
Me:"still don't like surprises?"
Aidan:"I love surprises... I love you"
He kisses me and leads us to the room he throws me on the bed and takes off my clothes, I pull out
Me:"slow down cowboy, we'll save that for later.... freshen up,we going to Lisa's place"
He groan
Aidan:"but you just got here....(kisses my neck).... I need you"
I'm a river down there but he'll have to be patient
I push him
Me:"come, I also need to freshen up...and I want to see my gifts"
He chuckles and pecks me
Aidan:"fine... let me undress you then"
He takes off my clothes I take off his and he chases me to the bathroom, we take the bathtub
He puts bubble on his chin
Aidan:"you know I once saw Quinton doing this for Lisa"
Me:"what were you doing in their bathroom while they were bathing?"
Aidan (laughs):"funny story actually... I was passing by their room when I heard Lisa screaming Santa! OMG it's Santa Clause...(laughs)...so I thought she was really seeing Santa so I ran in their room they weren't there, I busted up in their bathroom and there they were cuddling in a bunch of bubbles while Quinton had bubbles in his chin.... I guess he was pretending to be Santa"
I burst into laughter
Me:"what did they say to you?"
Aidan:"Lisa shouted at me ...(mocking Lisa)....get out Aidan! Boooyyy you better get your ass out of here!!"
I'm in stitches
Aidan:"so I ran out as soon then came back again since they looked so cuteness and

snapped a picture of them, Quinton stood up threatening to kill me but I ran out"
Me(laughing):"you too crazy Aidan"
We laugh and finish up, he shows me all my gifts and it's a bunch of cute stuff including the biggest teddy I've ever seen in my life.
We now on our way to the O'Briens household.
We get there and a sexy looking elf opens for us
Aidan:"daaaamn... Lisa is that you?"
Me:"shiiit girl, you so sexy"
Lisa:"thank you guys.. Quinton's Christmas gift"
Aidan:"who's baby is that parked outside"
He points at the motorbike
Lisa:"that's his gift from me"
Me:"woow and he bought you an elf costume? What a wimp!"
She laughs
Lisa:"come in y'all"
We get inside the inside deco is even cooler than the outside
Aidan:"y'all really got the Christmas spirit don't y'all"
Lisa:"there's plenty of it in this house trust me"
Me:"I can see"
We go chill by the lounge where we find Santa Clause seated on the couch
Me:"Quinton...is that you?"
Quinton:"ho ho ho welcome boys and girls merry Christmas"
We laugh at him as I remember the story Aidan told me
Me:"I see... being Santa is in your genes"
Aidan:"talk about spirit....dude,what kind of drug is Lisa feeding you?"
He laughs and they do their hand shake, Quinton bumps him with his big belly and Aidan stumbles almost falling
Aidan:"watch where you bump that belly"
He laughs then comes to hug me
Me:"merry Christmas"
Quinton:"merry Christmas...how's my baby brother treating you?"
Me(blushes):"very well"
Quinton:"that's good,tell me if one of his hoes come bothering you"
Me:"I will"
Quinton:"good so I can kick his ass"
Adian(fakes laugh):"there's no need for that..hehehe...cause non of that will happen"
Quinton:"you better hope so"
Aidan scratches his head as he fakes laughs I laugh at him
Me:"I see we have Santa and his Elf...how cute!...(looks at Aidan)...why didn't you get us costumes?"
Aidan:"Eishhh...next time sweets"
He looks at Quinton
Aidan:"you see all these cute stuff you do for Lisa....you got us competing with you man..slow down bruh,some of us are sucker for romance"
Quinton:"my bad...it's not my fault I took grandad's romantic genes..haha"
He laughs sticking his tongue out

Me:"your grandad is romantic?"

Aidan:"was..he passed away years ago, along with grandma a few years after him"

Me:"sorry... I didn't know"

Quinton:"don't be....okay guys, we'll be eating outside since its a sunny day"

The gate intercom goes off

Lisa:"that must be the others...I'll get it"

She goes to talk to the robot thingy as we head outside.

A few minutes later the very loud Thelma and her man Tsepo, Brandon with a sexy chick, I'm guessing is his girlfriend, wow she's a beauty, it's our first time seeing her we always see pictures, then the Solo guy Troy, wait..he came with a lady,but she looks too young for him...then Bella and her husband Lloyd and their daughter,then Candra with her date, mmmh I guess alot of introductions are going to be done. Everyone sits around the table while Lisa and I are busy up and down trying to get a few things to the table and putting the gifts away nicely. She goes put Bella's child in the play room with Kyle and Rae as one helper is watching them.

We now in the kitchen getting bottle of champagne

Lisa:"I wonder if Clyde is still coming"

Me:"I'm sure he's on his way"

Lisa:"he's been really scarce these past two weeks... I'm worried about him"

Me(laughs):"you worried about Clyde? That big buff tough guy with tattoos all over his body?...naahh he's fine trust me"

She laughs

Lisa:"I guess so, it's just I feel like he's been trying to avoid us.. or maybe he's been busy"

Me:"you know the kind of business they do he's probably been busy"

Lisa:"yeah..let's go to the others I'm curious to know the two new girls"

We giggle

Me:"especially miss flawless highness there with Brandon"

Lisa:"she is hot isn't she"

Me:"too much...better keep our grips on our men"

We laugh

Lisa:"I see Thelma is already clinging on Tsepo"

Me(laughing):"she didn't even want to come help us"

Lisa (laughing):"I'm trusting she's keeping an eye on our guys too"

We laugh out loud as we head out to the back and sit down everyone next to their partners

Lisa:"can we first pray"

We all bow our head , I hear Aidan whisper

Aidan (whispering):"please don't pick me"

I laugh silently

Lisa:"Heavenly father..."

He sighs in relief

Lisa:"we thank you for this wonderful day,for blessing us with the warmth of family and friends as we celebrate the birth of Our King....The king of Israel, The king of righteousness, Gods one and only son, The sinners saviour....(Chuckles)...let me stop before I start preaching, Lord please bless our food in Jesus name Amen"

Everyone:"Amen"

Cutlery start clicking as everyone is dishing up since it's self service

Lisa:"So guys... I'm quite certain we don't all know each other here?"

That's her asking for intros

Brandon clears his throat and rubs his hands, we laugh

Brandon:"wellll... everyone,this is Roxanne, my bae,my sweetheart,my lover.....(looks at her)....baby, this is everyone"

We laugh

Brandon:"kidding...well first start with the owner of this place, my second family, my brother from another mom, Quinton and his sexy wife Lisa"

Roxanne:"nice to meet y'all...heard so much about you guys"

Quinton:"only good things we hope"

Roxanne:"only good"

Whuuuu the accent!! She's not African definitely Not!

He continued introducing her to all of us

We look at Troy

He also clears his throat as he swallowes and rubs his hands together like how Brandon did,we laugh

Troy:"guess it my turn"

Lisa:"yeap"

Troy:"well... everyone meet Gabrielle....my little sister,she came to visit me for the holidays"

He then tells her our names

We look at Candra

Candra:"okay guys this is David my boyfriend"

Quinton:"boyfriend neh"

O-oh the over protective brother

Lisa:"Quinton...not now"

Quinton:"mmmh"

after introductions everyone is eating and having light conversations, with Brandon Aidan and Quinton cracking jokes the most... even Lloyd,I didn't know he was so funny..and Bella is just a sweet soul.



I'm in my study busy with my work when Thando budges inside

Me:"we don't knock anymore?"

Thando:"sorry"

Me:"get out"

She gets out, I hear a soft knock

Me:"I'm busy..stay out"

Thando:"I'm bored...can't we do something fun atleast? It's Christmas for heaven's sake"

Me:"I have better things to do Thando...you disturbing me"

I hate being disturbed

She gets in

Me:"are you asking me to kill you?"

Thando:"that's if boredom doesn't do it first"

I look at her...This child is testing me

This is what I hate with laughing with some people,they mistaken you for friends

Me:"I'm not your buddy Thando,don't fuck with me"

She looks down

Thando:"sorry... I thought we could watch movies... I saw good Christmas movies on net....

Me:"I don't fucken care about no fucken movie!...you want a movie so bad go watch it and leave me the fuck out of it....God dammit is it because you can't see I'm fucking busy!?"

She looks at me shocked

Me:"Get The Fuck OUT!!"

He jumps and runs out as fast as possible

Me:"Nxa"

I continue with my work, a call comes through my phone,I check it, it's Lisa, I ignore it, this is the fifth time she's calling...my phone rings again,I check ,it's Quinton. I sigh. I ignore it.

I've been keeping my distance from them, the last thing I want is them hating me for letting Thando stay with me, I just couldn't leave her in the streets like that after everything she's been through because of a grown ass pervert who robbed her of her future and happiness, despite what she's done to Quinton and Lisa, she's still a child who's been through hell, who's also desperate for love as the only love she ever got was from her parents who died cold bloodedly in front of her at a very young age, I hate men who abuse women,I think when it comes to that,that could be what makes me weak..that doesn't mean I'm weak, I'm neither a softy too...but hey I am human after all. Looks like Thando's stay here be longer than I thought, I mean look at her, she's so young,she's supposed to be still staying with her parents and being taken care of..if I let her go, she's too naive, she'll fall into the wrong hands and get hurt all over again. Why the fuck do I even care!? Shit I've been asking myself the same question over and over again these past few weeks everyday and I still don't have no answer.

I get out of the office, I need a smoke, I go outside and have a smoke, I get in and find her curled up on the couch watching a movie. I sit on the couch next to the one she's sitting on

Me:"what you watching?"

She looks at me then back at the TV

I guess she's mad at me, why do I suddenly feel bad for shouting at her? She shouldn't be mad she should be apologising for disturbing me

Me:"I'm sorry"

No I'm not, what did I say that for?

Me:"I hate people who budge in without knocking first, don't do that again...okay?"

She nods

Thando:"Home Alone"

Me:'huh?"

Thando:"I'm watching Home Alone"

I look at the TV

Me:"ohh"

I sit back

Thando:"you watching with?"

I sigh

Me:"yeah sure...why not"

She gets up vanishes to the kitchen then comes back with a bowl of popcorn

Thando:"come sit next to me"

I sit next to her and she eats the popcorn, she pushes the bowl me indicating for me to take

I look at her

Thando:"eat"

Me:"Nah I'm good"

Thando:"come on....it's good,I swear"

I shake my head

She puts one in my mouth

This girl never ceases to amaze me

I think she's the only person besides Quinton who's not scared of me, and that scares the shit out of me

Thando:"how's it?"

Me:"it's good"

She smiles

Thando:"told you"

We carry on eating

Thando:"so you not going anywhere today?"

Me:"No"

Thando:"why? I thought Lisa was hosting a Christmas lunch today?"

Me:"that doesn't mean I'm forced to go"

Thando:"you can't avoid them forever, just go...it's Christmas, if you don't show up, Quinton will be disappointed at you, you his big brother I'm sure everyone is wondering....you don't want them to start getting worried and coming here uninvited then finding me here,now do you?"

Me:"No...you right"

Thando:"yeah...go"

Me:"but,what about you? You just going to stay here alone?"

Thando:"I'll be fine... I'm used to spending Christmas alone anyway"

My phone rings it's Quinton

Thando:"pick it up"

I pick up

Me:"yes"

Quinton:"dude,where are you?"

Me:"my house"

Quinton:"what??.... aren't you coming? I thought I told you about the lunch today and the games with friends and family?"

Me:"I got caught up with work...I'll be right there"

Quinton:"hurry man.. damn,we was worried about you"

I hang up and look at her

Thando:"go have fun with your family....I'll just stay here and watch movies"

This girl is too in my feelings, I don't like feeling like this, I hate it, I thought all my feelings died when I was thirteen when my father made me kill a family just to introduce me to manhood and the family business, but this girl is waking them up again.

Me:"I don't have to go...you know"

Thando:"you do... please go Clyde, geez you want me to throw you out of your own house?"

Me:"you coming with me"

Thando:"what!? No! You crazy? Quinton will kill me"

I sigh

Me:"he won't...not while I'm there, I can't hide you forever...if he hates me then be it...come on, you never spending Christmas alone again"

Thando:"but...."

I pull her hand and we drive to their place, we go through the gates, I park outside

Me:"you ready?"

Thando:"for death? Yeah"

I pull her out of her seat and we head to the door,we press the buzzer, Lisa open the door

Lisa:"Hey Cly..... Thando?"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 25

-
-
-
-
-

💞THANDO💞

-
-
-

-
-
-



Lisa:"what is she doing here?"

I'm standing behind Clyde hoping she doesn't give me one of her face threatening slaps

Clyde:"hey Lisa... merry Christmas"

Lisa:" Clyde?"

Clyde:"she's here with me"

She looks at him perplexed

Clyde:"can we come in?"

Lisa:"I'm never letting the devil step foot in my house again....you can come in Clyde,but she can't"

Me:"it's fine,I'll call an Uber"

Clyde:"you not going anywhere without me.... can we come in or not Lisa?"

Lisa:"she's supposed to be far away Clyde,why did you bring her here?"

Clyde:"she had nowhere to go"

Lisa:"bullshit..so what do you care? Noone owes her anything,if we didn't help her after her father chased her out, what would she have done? She's old enough she can take care of herself"

Clyde:"step father.....I knew I shouldn't have come here, bye"

He turn and walks away leaving me standing there,shes looking at me so coldly,if given the chance she'd stab me right away without thinking twice

"Are you coming!?"

I startle and run towards the car, he starts the car

"Clyde!! Hey!"

He looks out the window and it's Quinton coming towards the car

Quinton:"hey man why....."

His eyes land on me

Quinton:"what the fuck?"

Clyde:"I can explain"

He looks at me then looks at Clyde for a while

Quinton:"inside"

He walks away, Clyde gets out, I sink into the seat

"Thando!"

I look at him

Clyde:"get your ass out my car"

I get out and follow him inside,he shouldn't have bought me here,it was a bad bad idea,we just spoiled Christmas for everyone,they even have costumes,how sweet,I hate Clyde for bringing me here!

We sit in the couches by the sitting room which is next to the lounge, the difference is that the sitting room doesn't have TV and is a chilling place.

I sit next to Clyde while Lisa and Quinton sit opposite us. If looks could kill, I'd be long dead cause Lisa is throwing daggers with her eyes.

I'm ashamed to even look at her so I'm looking at the beautiful floor.

There's noise of laughter coming from outside it must be their friends

Quinton:"start talking... didn't I say I never want to see her again?"

Clyde:"she had nowhere to go"

Quinton:"you think I don't know that?"

Clyde:"she has noone,all family relatives have turned their backs"

Quinton:"we all know her story Clyde... I want to know what the fuck is she doing in my house and why are you here with her and why am I seeing her when I told you clearly that you should dump her far far away from here"

He remains quiet, I don't think he can really explain why he took me in and helped me,cause I've tried asking many times but he'd shut me out, I mean it's so obvious that he hates me,the way he ignores me or shouts at me, it's only yesterday night when I saw a side I never knew existed,but the today it was like nothing ever happened,he was cold and rude as usual. I really don't know what's up with him,and the fact that he doesn't show emotions confuses me even more, So I'm just as anxious as Quinton to know why didn't he dump me anywhere like he was asked to?

Quinton:"Clyde please answer me before I loose my cool"

Clyde:"I took her in, just until she gets a proper job then she can take care of herself"

I look up at their expression, Quinton looks furious and Lisa,well she looks the same she's still starring at me, I look down, I don't think she's moved her eyes from me since we got in here and her look is piercing through my face

Quinton:"she's staying with you? Wow...so that's why you've been distant lately, I ask you to do one thing, the easiest thing ever and you fail to do it? Or what you enjoyed the fact that she almost ruined my marriage? Do you know what this bitch is capable of!? Or you want to see it with your own two eyes once we divorce and our home crumbles down because of her?! You think what she did seducing me was all she was going to do, do you have any idea what would've happened if we forgave her and let her continue staying with us?! What the fuck is wrong with you Clyde!? Since when do you give a fuck about a bitch, especially a homewrecking bitch like her!...

"Enough!!!"

It goes silent

Clyde:"yes, I helped Thando, I took her in cause she had nowhere else to go,it was dark and I couldn't leave her in the streets, now... I know I didn't go through all that trouble helping her from her abusive step dad, kidnapping his children and his wife, putting him through torture, fighting with the most dangerous men in the game,for this Thando girl just for all of it to go to waste and let her suffer out there again,land in the wrong hands again and go through what she went through all over again...now I know for sure I did not risk my life for nothing, the least I can do is make sure when she goes out there again she's living a better life than the one we saved her from.....Lisa Quinton...now despite everything she has done or the worse things would've done to y'all, you guys have to admit, you also did things the wrong way, y'all knew what she was capable of before even letting her stay in your home, but what did y'all do? Y'all continued letting her stay in the same roof as you, even though your diamonds warned you of the consequences and the visions you had Lisa,instead of moving her out from your home and still helping her from a distance you were too naive and too blinded by your good heart avoiding all the warnings...you finally get what you knew was gonna happen and you get all mad and blaming her, calling her a devil and playing innocent victim, after beating her up like no body's business.... now I'm not one to believe in spiritual stuff but when she told you she hears voices in her head, you, Quinton and I all saw that she was telling the truth,but you chose to ignore it, I don't know much about God but Lisa I think you must've had a misunderstanding with your God on how to help this girl without letting the devil destroy your home,he gave you a gift to see what

the devil will do before he does it but you were still too blind to prevent it....(sighs).... She's still a kid, who should still be under parental supervision, but she doesn't have that...and you guys have it all, so forgive her for being tempted by the voices in her head to have what you have.... He pauses I've been staring at him this whole time, I don't know what's happening inside my heart but it's never happened before, and my tummy feels weird.

I look at Lisa, who now has a calm expression, and Quinton is just looking at Clyde with a bit of a frown on his forehead.

Clyde: "and that's why I took her in...it's Christmas, look around y'all, you guys have everything you need, a warm home, friends and family filling your whole house with happiness and laughter...two beautiful kids and unconditional love from each other....yet she has no one, the last Christmas she had with people who loved her was seven years ago, she lost those people and she's been spending Christmas alone...now I couldn't care less about that....

Ouch, that stung.

Clyde: "I'm not into my feelings, but you two...you two should know better, you are Christians and you know what Christmas is about, so I came here with Thando, not because I want to bring problems for you but because she wanted to come ask for forgiveness... I don't know much about Christmas season but I think if I remember properly Quinton, grams used to tell us it's a time of Thanksgiving, love, family and forgiveness....right Lisa?"

She nods, Clyde looks at me indicating that I should talk

I clear my throat

Me: "errh...uhhm"

I close my eyes and sigh, this is going to be hard cause I don't even know how to address them, I'm ashamed to even look at them.

Me: "I've been going for therapy and I also....I've been attending church, I've been doing everything you taught me Lisa.... I talk to God as if I'm talking to my friend and it helps, the evil voice in my head is gone.... I'm not telling you this so that you can be proud of me or anything, but I just wanna thank you.....thank you for helping me believe in God, the depressing thoughts in my mind are slowly but surely replaced by positivity.. although I'm not fully there yet, thank you for everything y'all have done for me, I deeply appreciate it"

I look up at them, Lisa's eyes are filled with disappointment, and Quinton is looking down

I go down on my knees

Me: "could you both please find it in your hearts to forgive me... wrecking your home was never my intention and I'm not blaming the devil or anyone, but all I'm asking for is that you please forgive me"

Silence

"Lisa, everyone is waiting.....ohh sorry"

Thelma runs back out, Lisa gets up and walks away, going to the others. Ouch. I guess I won't be forgiven anytime soon, or ever. I look at Quinton, he shrugs his shoulders.

Clyde: "get up...we leaving"

He pulls me to stand up

Quinton: "Clyde"

He looks back at him but he doesn't say anything

Clyde: "you know what's funny?... (chuckles)...is that y'all were able to forgive

Mncedisi, Sydney and mom people who've actually managed to separate you, but you fail to forgive someone who didn't even dent your relationship"

He walks away I follow behind him, we get in the car.

Me: "Clyde?"

He looks at me,he's mad

Me:"please don't fight with your brother because of me, I don't wanna be the reason for your bond being broken"

He sighs and starts the car, we stay by the gate waiting for it to open.

Clyde:"why's the stupid gate not opening!?"

Me:"Uhm you didn't press the button"

He clicks his tongue and presses the button,it opens and we speed of until we reach the other gate,it opens then we drove out.

Lisa really hates me, the love she once had for me has totally disappeared. I don't think even Christmas can make her forgive me, great,now I've turned brothers against each other. My step monster was right, I am a cursed witch. Not even God can cleanse me.



👑QUINTON👑



I go back to everyone else at the back

Lisa:"oh Santa is here, let's open up presents!"

Aidan:"yeah! Hey where's Clyde? I thought you were talking to him?"

I look at Lisa

Lisa:"he had something important to take care of.. .now, Presents!"

They already set out the presents on the floor and a chair for me to sit in

Lisa:"now,Santa will call out the presents then you get to take a picture before opening you present"

Brandon:"let's just get one thing straight?"

Lisa:"yeah?"

Brandon:"I'm not sitting on his lap"

We burst into laughter

Me:"come on buddy...Santa don't bite"

Brandon:"Nah dude that's just weird"

Lloyd:"not to mention gay"

Brandon:"you feel me"

Lloyd:"and my wife is definitely not sitting on his lap"

Everyone laughs

Me:"come on guys,I know I'm one dashing hot Santa but... I love my wife, so I promise no funny business"

Lisa:"gosh! You all so dirty minded"

We laugh

I sit on the chair and my elf gives me the first box

Me:"and the first gift goes to... Aidan, from Lloyd"
Aidan comes up to me
Tsepo is holding the camera
Me:"come sit on Santa's lap"
Aidan:"finally!...I get to take a pic with Santa"
He sits on my lap and wraps his arms around me
Me:"oo-kay...weirdo....say merry Christmaaas"
Tsepo snaps a picture as we say that at once
Me:"ho ho ho...open your gift"
He opens it
Aidan:"really? What am I going to do with a dummy and diapers?"
Everyone bursts into laughter
Lloyd:"now that you in a serious relationship,I'm expecting a son soon"
Aidan:"why you such in a rush...my baby and I are still young, we still exploring"
He looks at yonela who's blushing like crazy
Aidan:"right baby?"
Nella:"yes cowboy"
We all laugh
Me:"get off my lap cowboy!"
Everyone gets a turn to come take a picture and open their gifts,they really bought some crazy funny gifts for each other, Aidan got Troy a sex toy that's a pussy, saying it will keep him busy till the day he decides to get laid. Lol...that killed us with laughter, and him being the cool guy he is he actually had no problem with it even said atleast now he'll have something exciting to do on weekends...not forgetting to close his little sister's ears when he said that.
Me:"bub..it's your turn"
It's a very big box, everyone got more than one gift but she only has one box
Lisa:"haaa, guys, you mean this is the only gift I get?"
Me:"wow they so mean"
Lisa:"like this is seriously the last one! Yoh, I think I want to be alone....if y'all all could just see the exit"
Everyone bursts into laughter
I read the little card as she is sitting on my lap
Me:"okay this is fromYonela, Thelma,Bella,Aidan, Brandon, Lloyd,Troy and Tsepo"
Lisa:"oh wow, from all of y'all in one box, No wonder it's so big"
She shows a big smile
Me&Lisa:"merrrrrry Christmas!!"
Tsepo snaps a picture
Me:"wait another one"
I pull he face closer and kiss her lips, he snaps a picture,she tries to pull out but I don't let her,I'm still enjoying her sweet lips she moans
"Cut it out already!"
That's Brandon
But I don't let her
Lloyd:"yeah cut it before we all turn to kiss our partners and that would be unfair for some of us..... I won't say any names, don't worry Troy"
I pull out as we all burst into laughter
Troy (laughing):"fuck you dawg"

Me:"Troy you need to get your dick a pussy man"
Troy:"but that's what I got for Christmas...thanks to Aidan"
We laugh out loud again
Aidan(laughing):"shame Troy the jokes are all on you today"
Yonela(laughing):"Clyde is not even here to shift the focus a bit"
Lisa:"I've been preaching the same thing to you Troy...but you don't listen"
Troy:"leave me alone guys...(waves the toy in the air)...this will do for now"
We laugh at him,I think I'm going to have hiccups I've been laughing way too hard
Me:"okay bub...open up"
Lisa:"oh yeah!"
She raffles up the box and opens it,I peep whoooa
She takes them out
Lisa:"a bunch of lingerie! Guys! And kinky toys?"
Everyone laughs making those "mmmh" and "uuuhhhh" sounds
Me:"damn, those are sexy, they'll be even sexier on you bub"
She smirks
Thelma:"since you guys didn't get to have a bachelor and bachelorette party before you got married, we decided we do it far y'all today ... without having to hire some random bitch or nigar to entertain y'all...."
Yonela:"but instead... y'all be each other's stripper... Lisa you will put on some of that lingerie and strip for your man,then Quinton will do the same for you"
Lisa:"what!?"
Quinton:"ohh yeaahh bring it on elfy"
The girls pull Lisa to the house and the guyslead me to the house,we all head to the Bar room....we turn on some music and Brandon is our bartender. I took off the Santa Clause costume and I'm wearing shorts and a Tee. We now waiting on the girls who've been gone for a while now while we having drinks
Me:"hey brandz, mix me some of that vodka"
Brandon:"coming right up"
He does his tricks throwing the bottle up and juggling them, we used to work in the same club back in varsity, I remember Lisa and I lived with money I made from the club.
we cheer for him and he gives me my drink
Me:"what's taking those girls so long?"
Lloyd:"you know ladies when they trying to get sexy,they take centuries"
Tsepo:"tell me about, Thelma is the worst..she'd get me all heated up we go up to the room she disappears to the bathroom for half an hour, till my buddy goes down waiting for her...but damn when she comes out with the sexy number, the wait is worth it"
We laugh
Brandon:"tell me about it...when we have to go out especially...I'd finished five whole hard levels of candy crush..think about it guys...FIVE Hard levels of CANDY CRUSH..damn"
Aidan:"yoh five dude that takes hours to finish those levels"
Me:"but I'm sure it's worth...she's one fine sassy brunette"
Lloyd:"duuudee where did you get her?? She's freaken hot, the accent!?"
Troy:"yeah what's up with that? Where she from"
Brandon:"easy boys she's mine....she's Australian, her father owns a company that my company was pitching for, she came to the pitch and I was the one doing the presentation.....she was flirting with me throughout the whole presentation, so after I asked for

her digits and we hit it off, but this long distance is killing me"
Me: "she only comes to visit?"
Brandon: "yeap and I see her on business trips"
Aidan: "I'm sure the sex is crazy after such a long time"
We laugh
Tsepo: "she got a fiinne body"
Me: "the aaassssss"
We burst into laughter
Brandon: "sick guys keep your eyes to your own"
Me: "I'm kidding man.....don't tell Lisa I said anything! Or I kill all of y'all"
We laugh out loud
"What's so funny"
We look at the entrance and the girls come in except Lisa
Aidan: "nothing"
Roxanne: "and they say only girls gossip"
Lloyd: "we were just talking about sports and cars, you know guy stuff"
We all laugh
Bella: "you know I know when you lying right?"
We burst into laughter
Lloyd: "eish, this gift of yours though"
Bella: "infact you all lying...you were gossiping about us"
Me: "how did you know!?"
The guys all looks at me...shit I just sold us out
Me: "I mean..how would you know that, cause we did nothing of such"
Bella: "actually I didn't know but you just fell for the trap"
Thelma: "busted!"
Aidan: "and you say I'm the idiot?"
Me: "mxm...where's my personal stripper?"
The lights go off
Me: "what happened to the lights?"
A voice speaks
"Are you ready to be mindblown!"
The girls push me and make me sit on a chair, I'm in front of the stage, yep I made sure this place has everything a club has, the spotlight goes on and the pole goes up
...
Love in a thousand different flavours
Wish I can taste them all tonight
No I ain't got no dinner plans
I swear that to all, y'all my type
All you girls in here if you feeling thirsty, come on take a sip, 'cause you know what I'm serving'
ooh
...
The spot light shines on her
Guys: "daaaaaammmmmnn"
She catwalks towards the pole
Fuck she looks sexy, I feel like going up and hiding her from these drooling nigars.
She holds the pole and start moving her waist sexily down down then up again... shit I'm hard,

her hips moving side to side
She comes towards me,with that sexy smirk on her cute face
I smile and bite my lip
'Shimmy shimmy yay shimmy yay shimmy yay (drank)
Swalla-la-la-la (drank)
Swalla-la-la-la (swalla-la-la-la)
Shimmy shimmy yay shimmy yay
Shimmy yay (drank)
Swalla-la-la-la (drank)
Swalla-la-la-la (swalla-la-la-la)
My freaky freaky girl....
She's grinding and twerking on me like crazy,I'm touching her all over,this is way way better
than any strip club I've ever been to. I feel like ripping that sexy lingerie off and having her right
now,but these nigars have seen way too much already.
Aidan:"go Lisa!!"
I look at him and Yonela hits the back of his head
Aidan:"ouch..sorry babe"
Brandon:"shake what your mama gave you!"
I also stripped for her, the girls are screaming like crazy you'd swear I'm the only guy in this
room and they not standing next their men
The guys are booing me
Lloyd:"put a shirt on already!"
Brandon:"they literally fucking infront of us"
Aidan:"boooo"
After a while the music stops I kiss her, I'm hard as rock from all this and the kiss is getting
kinda heated,she pulls out
Lisa:"let me go get dressed"
Me:" please do...just dress on top of it cause you stripping for me again later,in private"
I wink she giggles and runa out only Thelma and Yonela follow her this time as the rest of us
But the girls are having their own conversation by the bar stools and the guys we sitted by the
couches
Lloyd:"damn your wife can move those curves"
Brandon:"dude you lucky to have all of that every single day"
Me:"what we're yall starring at? You were supposed to have your eyes closed"
Tsepo:"to think there was a time when I almost had all that"
Me:"you better shut it if you don't wanna get your ass kicked"
They laugh at me
Me:"well... I guess Troy, that was your last supper"
He laughs
Troy:"actually it was"
Aidan:"No way!...you mean you never got laid after Lisa?"
He shakes his head
Troy:"can we not talk about that.... again, Quinton, I'm sorry about...
Me:"naahh man, that's water under the bridge"
Brandon:"man your girl got us all hard and bothered"
We laugh
Me:"fuck y'all....hey, David"

David:"yeah"
Me:"you've been awfully quiet...you alright?"
David:"yeah I'm cool man"
Me:"so when did you start dating my sister??"
David:"it's been three years now"
Us:"what!?"
David:"yeah...it's been three full years,this coming year will be our fourth"
Aidan:"how come we only knowing about you now?"
David:"we were both not ready to introduce ourselves to our families"
Me:"shit.....three years is a long time"
Aidan:"so what are your intentions with our sis?"
Brandon:"oh no guys,you not about to integrate this poor dude right now"
Lisa gets back and the girls come to us
Aidan:"uuhh guys I have a cool game we can play"
Brandon:"truth or dare?"
Aidan:"I was going to say spin the bottle but we can still play both games the same way.... we'll spin the bottle and whoever the bottle points at gets to truth or dare someone"
Thelma:"sounds fun!"
Brandon:"yeah but I suggest those who are faint hearted not play"
Everyone:"I'm game/me too/so in this"
Yonela:"if you can't handle the dare or the truth you drink five shots"
Tsepo:"let's do this"
They spin the bottle it lands Candra
Candra:"mmh...Troy! Truth or dare?"
Troy:"oh dear God....Uhm truth"
Candra:"do you love Lisa?"
We all look at him, Lisa looks at me
I look at both of them as he struggles to answer
Aidan:"come on Troy, yes or no"
He looks at Lisa
Troy:"the truth?"
Candra:"yes"
Troy:"yes....yes I love her"
It goes quiet as some make the "uuhh...Yoohh" sounds
I clench my teeth as I feel my blood boil,but keep my cool
Candra:"okay! Let me spin"
She spins the bottle
It lands on Thelma
Thelma:"truth or dare Yonela"
Yonela:"dare"
Thelma:"I dare you to smooch Roxanne for fifteen seconds"
Roxanne:"mmmh I like"
We watch attentively
They start kissing like really kisses even playing with their tongues and it looks sexy,the guys watch in awe, yonela squeezes her ass
Aidan:"Fifteen... stop!"
They stop and Aidan does not look happy...ohh yeah, Yonela once played for the same team.

This game is not going to end well.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

🌲🌲🌲🌲🌲🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲

☹️CLYDE😊

🌲

🌲

🌲

🌲

I ended up driving to the mall instead, I told Thando to buy herself anything she wants, and she's been in and out about a thousand shops, I was starting to get irritated, I regret bringing her here, she's too hyper. I saw how what happened earlier at Lisa's house hurt her feelings so I thought bringing her here would make her feel better, and looks like it did

Thando: "you want me to choke?"

She's eating as we now at spur

Me: "why?"

Thando: "you starring at me"

I look away, I didn't realize

Me: "sorry"

Thando: "that's okay..."

She's gained alot of wait all in the right places. She now has a full lovely face, thick waist but flat tummy and curvey hips. Her ass is a bit bigger too, not that I've been checking...just saying.

Thando: "thanks for today Clyde"

Me: "don't mention it"

Thando: "no I want to...this is the best Christmas ever"

Me: "really? Even after what happened?"

She shakes her head

Thando: "even after that...they still hurt, it must not be easy knowing someone you really liked is the person who will destroy everything you've worked so hard for"

Clyde: "they just being arrogant assholes.... they've been through the worst but they still forgave and moved on, that's why Lisa can use her powers now...now that they have to forgive you it's not easy"

Thando: "I'm sure it took a lot of time for her to finally forgive those people....it's only been two weeks, let's give them more time, maybe they'll come around"

Me:

Thando: "let's go home"

Me: "you sure? You don't want to watch another movie?"

Thando: "No.. we've already watched two and ice skating.... I'm tired, and I want to try on my new clothes"

Me(smiles):"let's go then"

I settle the bill and we head out, I always get stares from people when I go out to places like this and it's mostly from women, some flirt and ask for numbers... but today, felt like I was given nasty stares by women.

I really don't give a fuck. Thando is a really funny kid, she talks alot and speaks bluntly she only thinks about what she's said after she's said it, I tried my best not to entertain her childishness but...she's impossible to ignore, she's always all up on my face.

It's like my threats don't move her...she knows how to handle me. I don't think I like that. She needs to stop.

We now driving back to the house and she's making a noise singing along to my favourite Tupac rap songs. I won't say I'm not surprised, she knows every word, I couldn't help but join her, I usually sing along when I'm driving alone. I love Tupac and Eminem.

Thando(singing):"now back at the time I never thought I'd see her face"

Me:"ain't no woman alive that can take my mama's place"

Thando:"suspended from school, scared to go home, I was a fool with the big boys breaking all the rules"

Me:"shed tears with my baby sister over the years we were poor than all the other kids"

Thando:"and even though I act craazy I gotta thank the Lord that you made me"

Me:"there are no words that can express how I feel..never kept a secret always stayed real"

Thando:"and I appreciate how you raised me and all that extra love that you gave me"

Me:"I wish I can take the pain away but if you could make it through night it's a brighter day"

Thando:"everything will be alright if you hold on"

Me:"it's a struggle everyday you gotta roll on"

Thando:"there's no way I could pay you back"

Me:"but my plan is to show you that I understand"

Thando&I:"you're appreciated"

I turn down the volume

Me:"wow...how do you sing Tupac's lyrics so well child"

Thando(laughs):"I love his music...it's so motivational, and I can relate to some of it"

Me:"touché.... I feel you, he's really a fallen legend when it comes to rap, these rappers nowadays all they know is pussy money and Gucci"

She laughs

Thando:"yeah... Eminem is my second favourite, his songs touch my soul"

I look at her in disbelief then back at the road

Me:"tell me you kidding"

Thando:"I'm serious...do you have his music?"

Me:"I have all of his albums"

Thando:"that's cool, I love the song 'stan' "

Me:"I love that song... I love that part where he's like....""Shut up bitch, I'm trynna talk! Hey Slim, that's my girlfriend screamin in the trunk, but I didn't slit her throat, I just tied her up! See? I ain't like you!

Cause if she suffocates, she'll suffer more, then she'll die too!"

She laughs

Thando:"or that part where he's like...'You ruined it now, I hope you can't sleep and you dream about it!

And when you dream, I hope you can't sleep and you scream about it!

I hope your conscience eats at you and you can't breathe without me!"

I laugh

Me:"you really know your music hey...it's my first time seeing a girl so into rap"

Thando:"then you haven't been around,there's many girls like me out there who know rap is life"

I look at her,she looks back at me,I look back at the road and we get home.

We head inside and get comfortable

Thando:"goodnight"

Me:"aren't you going to fit your clothes?"

Thando:"I will...you wanna see me?"

I nod

Me:"I want to see if I didn't waste my money"

She giggles and heads up stairs to her room as I sit by the dinning room chairs waiting for her,

she comes down wearing a beautiful red body hugging dress

It really looks good on her

Thando:"hello!.."

I look up at her

Thando:"money wasted or worth it?"

Me:"wroth it"

She puts on that big amazing smile on her face

Thando:"really!?"

Me:"yeah...show me more"

She jumps excitedly

Thando:"alright!"

She runs upstairs and keeps coming down to show me until it was time for us to go to bed

Thando(yawns):"goodnight Clyde..and thank you for the best day ever"

Me:"that's how Christmas is supposed to be like...right?"

Thando:"yeah, you've made up for all the other miserable holidays...for once I didn't think about my parents and that evil man"

Me:"I'm glad I could help....merry Christmas"

Thando:"merry Christmas"

She attacks me with a hug, I hold her back she moves her head from my shoulder and looks at me, I look into her eyes,she has beautiful eyes

She pecks my lips

I look at her perplexed

Thando:"Sorry! Oh God... I'm so sorry... goodnight"

She runs upstairs leaving me dumbfounded.

What the hell just happened?

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 26

-
-
-

-
-
-

💎 LISA 💎

-
-
-
-
-

It's now the thirty first of December, we decided we'll spend the day and evening with friends but later we'll come home and celebrate New year with our kids as a family just the four of us.

He looks so peaceful,his lips are pouted as usual his forehead a bit creased.

I run my hands through his hair,I move my face closer to his and peck his lips,I suck his lower lip, I put my tongue in his mouth and start smooching him

"Mmmh"

He moans and kisses me back

I pull out

Me:"wakey wakey sleepy head"

Quinton:"five more hours"

I giggle

Me:"your breakfast will be cold by then"

Quinton:"I'll warm it up"

Me:"I made soft porridge"

He gets up

Quinton:"porridge?...did somebody say porridge?"

I laugh it's been a while since I made it and he loves it

Me:"let's go downstairs,I'll dish up for you"

Quinton:"let's go"

We get up and head to the bathroom first he brushes his teeth,I already did that,so I help him brush his,yes I'm brushing his teeth

Me:"open wider"

He opens wide and i brush, I make him drink water,he spits out

Me:"say hhhaaa"

Quinton:"hhhaaa"

I smell his breath and it's good

Me:"perfect"

Quinton:"kiss?"

I kiss him he picks me up and walks to the bathroom as the kiss gets heated ,he throws me on the bed

Me (whispers):"Quinton"

Quinton:"I need you"

He pushes down my shorts before I know it I feel him entering me I gasp and breath out a moan. We have a glorious session.

He wipes me and himself then we dress up,we head to the life, i press the second floor so we can check up on the kids if they awake, Quinton keeps kissing and tickling me

until we reach the floor and get out giggling.
I stop as I notice Kyle's crawling towards us
Me:"and where do you think you going?"
Quinton:"and who the hell opened for you?"
He smiles and stands on his feet as he take the last few steps to us, I pick him up immediately as he reaches us.
Me:"hey you sneaky baby you"
He lays his his on my chest I hug him back
Quinton:"oh God...you such a mama's boy, I hope all this will change as soon as you become a teenager"
Me:"ayibo why?... he'll still be my baby boy"
He shakes his head
Quinton:"let me go check on my princess"
I follow him as we get to Rae's room she's awake playing with the toys hanging above her bed, she keeps smiling since they make music when she hits them
Quinton:"princess Thumbelina"
She giggles as she notices us watching over her
Quinton:"wanna come to daddy?"
She lifts her hands up as she wants to be picked up,he picks her up and kisses her all over biting her tummy playfully making her laugh
Quinton:"daddy is gonna eat you cause you so damn deliciousssss"
He bites her again Kyle also giggles
Quinton:"Imma bite you too Kyle... come here"
He tries to take him but he hides burying his face on my breasts
Quinton tickles him,he holds on tight on me
Me:"leave my baby alone!!"
I run out the room with him
Quinton:"I'm gonna get you Kyle"
We run to the lift and quickly close it
I breathe out and look at him
Me:"phew that was close! He'll never get you now"
He giggles and lays his head on me,aawww my baby is obsessed with me though just as I am with him..Love it!! I kiss him on his lips multiple times he can't stop laughing,the lift stops as we step out I jump frightened as Quinton and Rae are standing right in front of us
Me:"jeeeezz y'all almost gave us a heart attack! Don't sneak up on us like that"
They laugh
Quinton:"heeeey Kylie daddy wants a bitey"
I run but Quinton holds me around my waist he bites Kyle all over making him scream out loud in laughter
We laugh and head to the lounge, I put Kyle down he attempts to cry but I quickly give him his toys to distract him and it works, I leave him playing with Rae and his dada as I head to the kitchen, I check on my porridge as I left the stove on low so it doesn't get cold until we dish up.. I dish up for us,we sit on the couch and eat there.
Quinton:"I feel like staying home the whole day today"
Me:"oh? What about the braai and friends?"

Quinton:"it's just a feeling,we can still go I don't mind"

Me:"We can stay home, I don't mind"

Quinton:"naah you were so excited about today this whole week with the plans you made with our friends specially you Yonela and Thelma,let's not ruin it because of a random feeling, I want you to enjoy today"

Me:"love bug...if you feel like staying at home for the whole day today,then we staying cause I don't mind"

Quinton:"what about Yonela and Thelma, they'll kill you...you know how dramatic they are"

Me:"well I'm not married to them now am I?"

He looks at me

Me:"and please don't ever call your feelings 'some random feeling' because I care alot about those feelings,and I made you my husband because of those feelings, if there's anything I'd want more than anything is to spend the whole day with you guys,my husband and kids"

He smiles

Quinton:"mmmh my wife and kids,my label has its own TV show"

He sticks his tongue out at me

I laugh

Me:"mxm... I should ask one of the American movie producers to get one of the best comedy actresses to act in "my husband and kids" "

Quinton:"really? And who can be so funny, that the show would be better than my wife and kids?"

I think for a while

Me:"Tichina Arnold...damnn that woman is funny, she'd be perfect!"

Quinton:"and who's Tichina Arnold again?"

Me:"Tichina Arnold the African American actress...Uhm do you remember 'everybody hates Chris'?"

He nods

Quinton:"everybody haaaattes Chriiiiiis...yeah I remember that,soo funny,Chris Rock is still one of my favourite comedians"

Me:"do you remember Chris's mom?"

Quinton:"uhh yeah that loud lady, she always shouts at Chris even though it wasn't even his fault"

I laugh

Me:"yeah! That's Tichina Arnold....you gotta love her..she'd rock my husband and kids"

He laughs

Quinton:"or we should just makes our own TV show and call it my husband and kids"

I gasp

Me:"that would be aaaaaawwwesooome!!"

Quinton:"oh no... there's just one problem"

Me:"what?"

Quinton:"you can't act"

I laugh covering my face

Me:"I can too"

Quinton:"you can not"

Me:"I can too!"

Quinton:"you can not"

Me:"I can too"

Kyle:"too too toooo!"

Me:"Yes tell him Kyle, I can too"

Kyle:"toooo"

We laugh and I can't help but pick him up and kiss his adorable face

Me:"even Kyle knows"

Quinton:"mxxm he's just saying cause he wants your milky boobs"

Kyle sometimes sucks my boobs too, but not all the time,only when he sees Rae then he becomes jealous and wants me to also give him

Me:"you the one that sucks at acting"

Quinton:"I do not"

Me:"you do too"

Quinton:"I do not"

Me:"you do too"

Quinton:"What makes you say that?"

Lisa:"cause you can't even pretend to hate me"

Quinton:"I can.... I hate you"

Me:"really?"

I stand up then go crouch in front of him and look him in the eyes

Me:"look at me for twenty seconds without smiling"

Quinton:"easy peasy"

We stare at each other as I slowly countdown, I move my face really close to him and stare at his lips...

He smiles

Quinton:"unfair, you tricked me,why you came so close?"

Me:"you can't act.... period!"

Quinton:"fine,I can't but that's only when it comes to you...now can I have a kiss, that stare down really got me craving your lips"

I giggle and we kiss

Kyle:"mmaaaaa mama"

I also kiss Kyle,this child is jealous of me

Rae:"hhsgsbfdkxk"

I pick her up and kiss her too

Quinton:"daddy gets a kiss...eveerrrybody has to get one too"

Me:"so we spending the day with our cuddles and poonkie?"

Quinton:"yes, we can take them out somewhere they can play fun games"

Me:"mmmhhh the whole day and evening until new year's countdown with my husband and kids....sounds way better than booze and braai with friends"

He smiles widely

Quinton:"now you understand what I'm saying....as you know I'm videoing every special moments of them with us as they grow up so that once they go off to varsity and they start thinking they all grown up as if they never wore diapers,we remind them of how stupid and tiny they used to be"

Me:"I can just imagine their embarrassed faces...so we'll show them when they turn

eighteen"

Quinton:"yeap"

Me:"oh my I'll be thirty seven years old"

Quinton:"Shit! I'll be forty three"

Me:"yohh love.. we'll be old"

Quinton:"and look them"

I look at them,they look up at us and smile,Rae throws one of her toys at me

Quinton:"they growing up so fast"

Me:"tell me about, specially Rae....one wouldn't believe she was a premature tiny baby a few months ago"

He laughs

Quinton:"yeah,but no matter how big she thinks she'll be she'll always be daddy's Thumbelina"

Me:"I'm very sure she won't like it as soon as she turns twelve,just you wait and see"

We laugh, after feeding the kids, Quinton took bathe and dressed Kyle while I bath Rae they were splashing the water all over,by the time we finished bathing them we were soaking wet.

They now clean and playing and Quinton and I are now taking a bath,I'm resting my back on him in the tub as he plays with my body rubbing his hands up and down my tummy and playing with the boobs of cause .

I had to call our friends and cancel,well not exactly cancel since they'll still be meeting up but just to let them know of our absence.they didn't take it well,but we'll make it up to them on the first during the day it'll still be new year right.

Quinton:"bub"

Me:"love bug"

Quinton:"when will we talk about it?"

Me:"about what?"

Quinton:"there's so many things we have to talk about and you know it"

I sigh

Me:"can we wait for new year first?"

Quinton:"no we can't, I want us to start the new year on a clean slate"

Me:"let's get dressed first"

Quinton:"okay"

I turn to look at him I kiss his lips then get up we rinse our bodies and get out, we lotion and dress up.

We go sit down by the lounge in the second floor though,its way bigger than the one downstairs but it doesn't have a TV it's just for chilling.

Quinton:"we'll first start with Troy"

I knew this bothered him,I saw the way his mood changed when we meet playing spin the bottle on Christmas, although he pretended to be cool.

Me:"what about him?"

Quinton:"don't play dumb now Lisa, we not fighting here we just talking,okay?"

I nod and sigh

Quinton:"now you do realise that,that nigger loves you"

Me:"he doesn't"

Quinton:"he said it himself Lisa, a guy wouldn't just lie about his feelings like that,

especially if he knows that the chick married and her husband is right here"

Me:"he doesn't mean it"

Quinton:"bub, let's not make each other stupid please"

I look up at him, but I can't maintain contact I look back down

Me:"Quinton, Troy loved his wife..and I was the first girl he got attracted to after her, I look like her apparently and I remind him so much of her...so you see,he doesn't love me,he just loves his wife through me, but it will fade as time goes"

Quinton:"I don't feel comfortable with you working there anymore"

I look up at him

Me:"but Q, I need that job,it's helping me alot,in terms of school and I'm gathering so much research there about Law and the experie..."

Quinton:"I know I know....theres many firms I'm sure you can find another one"

Me:"and leave one of the best law firms in South Africa? Which law firm will take a student? Do you know how hard it is to get a job out there, I'm talking about people with degrees and experience, and you want me to throw away such an opportunity?"

Quinton:"open your eyes Lisa....you only got that job because you slept with him and...."

I slap his chest hard he chuckles and looks up at me

Me:"I got that job because I deserve it, I got that job because I qualify for it, I got that job because God saw me through, I got that job because I have potential, now, I'm not going to let you, or anyone else make me believe I had to hoe to get to the top, cause if it wasn't for my academic record I wouldn't be in that firm...so don't you for a second think that I'm some cheap hoe who depends on a pussy to become successful, do you understand me?"

He just looks at me

I told my arms and look away from him

Quinton:"do you love him too?"

Me:....

Quinton:"do you love him Lisa?"

I look at him

Me:"No, I love you Quinton"

Quinton:"if he ever tries something with you and I find out about it, Lisakhanya, I'll commit the biggest sin ever, you hear me?"

Me:"Quinton, on that altar, didn't I vow to be faithful to you, till death?"

Quinton:"you did"

Me:"please, trust me then"

Quinton:"I trust you Lisa, it's Troy that I don't trust"

Me:"as long as you trust me, I can never let him try anything funny"

He sighs

Quinton:"I'm sorry"

Me:"for?"

Quinton:"for what I said, that you had to sleep with him for you to be where you are"

Me:"it's fine, forgiven"

Quinton:"I'm just so jealous of you bub, I don't want any man even looking at you or laughing with you"

Me:"I know how you feel, cause I feel the same for you...but I trust you so much that I can let my guard down a bit, but after what happened, I can't let it down anymore....oh

and speaking of my guard, I saw the way you were looking at Roxanne when she was kissing Yonela"

Quinton:"what?"

Me:"don't what me,I'm not a dummy , all of you guys were looking at them with so much excitement"

Quinton:"that is not true at all bub (chuckles). I was actually disgusted,how can two girls kiss so deep like that"

He makes a disgusted face I laugh cause his pretending

Me:"I'm watching you boy... like a hawk"

I point at his eyes

Quinton:"okay,now that's out of the way...let me kiss"

I move closer and we share a kiss

Quinton:"next point...Clyde"

Me:...

Quinton:"Lisa, I don't know about you,but I miss my bro"

Me:"I miss him too so much with his weird self"

Quinton:"looks like he really likes this Thando girl though"

Me:"yeah he does"

Quinton:"so what are we going to do? I need him and we need to get to the bottom of whoever is threatening our business,looks like this person is out for blood too"

Me:"Quinton,Clyde chose to distance himself so what must we do?"

Quinton:"I think it's time we forgive Thando"

I look at him

Quinton:"I know she hurt you deeply,but Lisa, you know and I know that Clyde was right, you knew what she was capable of but you ignored it"

Me:"yeah sure I knew, but she had a choice Quinton, she chose to listen to the devil,no matter how many times I preached the word of God to her"

Quinton:"Liss, now remember, you have to maintain a pure heart, you can't afford to keep such anger and hatred towards someone, you need to forgive so that your gift continues guiding us...who knows maybe it can show us who is behind everything that's happening with the business"

I sigh

Me:"so just cause of this pure heart of mine, I'm not allowed to get angry, I'm not allowed to get mad and dislike someone who tried to take away what's mine? I'm not allowed to show emotions like any other human, I just just laugh and smile with someone who tried to harm my child?"

Quinton:"I know bub, it's not easy, but come on love, we managed to solve it before it got worse, let's do ourselves a favor and forgive and move on, happily, remember what you always told me, about forgiveness, it's not for the other person but it's to set yourself free from the past and for your own peace"

I look at him

Me:....

Quinton:"it's time you practice what you preach"

Me:"it's not that easy"

Quinton:"I know,it wasn't easy forgiving all those people who wronged us in the past,but we did and look how happy we became afterwards, we even got married and got

blessed with two beautiful kids"

Me:...

Quinton:"let's call them up"

He takes his phone then shows me Clyde's number

Quinton:"let's call them up bub"

I take a deep breathe.

Me:"call them"

He presses the call button then puts it on speaker

"Hello?"

We look at each other

Quinton:"hey Clyde, how are you?"

"I'm good, yourself?"

Quinton:"I'm good...you on speaker,look we were wondering if we could pass by your place later on today?"

"I have plans"

Quinton:"we won't be long Clyde, please"

"I'll be home by five"

Quinton:"perfect, see you then"

"Sure"

Quinton:"b..."

He hangs up

Quinton:"bye...damn"

He looks at me

Me:"he's fallen for her real bad"

Quinton:"if this attitude is all because of Thando, then he's definitely whipped, he's never acted this way, ever all because of a girl"

Me:"let's get going"

We get up take the kids and we head to the mall and to the funfair and played games, my babies are really enjoying themselves.

.

.

.

.

☹CLYDE☹

.

.

.

I just got back home, I had to sort out a few things, I have other businesses on the side besides the family business, and they not good either.

After parking my car I make my way inside. I look around and Thando is not at sight,she must be in her room.

Me(shouts):"Thando!"

"Yess!!"

Me:"get down here"

Thando:"I'm in the shower!!"

Me:"oh!...well hurry I need a word with you"

Thando:"I'll be down in a sec!!"

I throw myself on the couch and close my eyes

"I'm here"

That was quick, I open my eyes and she's not dressed just a tiny towel around her body, showing almost her whole leg,her afro is wet and curly. Shit!

Me:"why aren't you dressed?"

Thando:"you told me to hurry so I thought I'd come hear what you have to say before I carry on"

I look at her for a while,you'd swear she was never skinny as hell,now she's so thick and well fed, everything is in order.

Thando:"hello! Clyde!"

She waves her hands at my face

Clyde:"oh Uhm...Get dressed quickly Quinton and Lisa will be here in an hour"

Her eyes pop out

Thando:"Quinton and Lisa? For what?"

Me:"I don't know, just go fix yourself quickly"

She sits down I move my legs from the couch and sit up as she sits next to me, the towel goes even more up, revealing a bit of her butt cheek, I feel my guy harden...this can't be happening, this is a child,I can't be looking at her this way

Thando:"I can't face them again, the last time, I regretted it, please just tell them in not here,I moved out"

I look at her

Me:"Thando, I'm not going to hide you, you can't hide from them forever, you'll have to face them sooner or later,you can't let your life revolve around them"

Thando:"they'll just think I'm here to use you,cause I'm not even working you provide everything, they'll think I've turned you against them to use you for my own selfish ways...and I don't understand why haven't you still got a job for me? You've been asking for my grade eleven results and my important documents, we even went to fetch them where I used to stay...but still nothing?"

Me(sighs):"I have my reasons you don't worry about that I'll get you a job"

Thando:"do you think they coming here for me? Or you?"

I shrug

Me:"I don't know,they never said"

She sighs looking down

Me:"go get dressed Thando... before they get here"

She gets up her butt cheeks are still visible as she walks all the way upstairs until she disappears into her room,my eyes finally come back to me.

I can't afford to be sexually attracted to a meer teenage girl,so you better get you act together dick. I get up and head to the kitchen,my guy is still up,I drink water. I need to cool down.

I get my laptop out and go through a few things.

"I'm done, so what do you want to eat for supper later?"

I close the laptop and look up at her

Me:"well since it's new year's eve,why don't we just braai I'll make pap you can make salad and there plenty of snacks and different cool drinks"

She smiles

Thando:"okay, sounds great, I guess I don't have to start now"

Me:"yeah"

We sit in silence as she presses her phone, things have been really awkward ever since she kissed me, she's no more that bubbly talkative girl, she keeps her distance, I offered to sit with her one of the days for dinner but she just said she'll eat in her room. It's like...it's like she's treating me the way I treated her. I decided to cook yesterday I set the table and stuff as she always does but she took her food and went upstairs, I have to admit it felt 'ouch' I don't even know why I'm offended, I did make it clear to her that we not buddies...well,she never listened to me when I said that before,but now,now she's just different. I don't think I like this side of her.

Me:"so have you taken a walk around here? Make friends?"

She ignores me as she continues typing whatever she's typing she keeps giggling a bit

Me:"Thando!"

She looks up at me

Thando:"huh?"

Me:"did you hear what I said?"

Thando:"oh sorry, please repeat that"

Me:"you always smiling at that phone lately, what's so interesting in there?"

Thando:"nothing"

I raise my brow

Me:"then why you smiling and giggling?"

Thando:"just thinking"

Me:"mmmh"

She looks back at her phone

Me:"do you want fireworks for later?"

She shakes her head no, what's up with her? The Thando I knew would've been excited to hear me ask that,well atleast the Thando I thought I knew.

I grab her phone

Thando:"heeeey bring that back!"

She tries to take it but I stand up and hold it up,she's shorter than me so she can't reach

Thando:"bring back my phone!!"

Me:"I bought it,so I have the right to check it"

Thando:"No!"

She keeps jumping to get it I keep moving away from her she holds me as she tries to jump on me,I can't help it, I laugh, she looks so helpless and defeated

Me:"I want to see who's keeping you so busy"

I open it,but it has a lock pattern

Me:"why's there a lock?"

Thando:"for nosey people like you...now bring my phone"

Me:"Nah I'm confiscating it"

Thando:"you can't do e I'm not a baby"

She tries to get I move back holding it high she jumps on me I trip ontop of the couch and land on my back she fell ontop of me,she tries getting it I keep moving it to my other hand then I wrap my arms around her as I move it to the other hand

She hits my chest

Thando:"Clyde!! Bring it back!"

Me(laughing):"No...infact I will hold on to it until you learn your manners"

She huffs and sits up still on me,she told her arms and sulks

Thando:"I'm not a little baby, you should stop treating me like one"

Me:"you behave like one"

She should get off me now,she's sitting on my dick and it's starting to feel her warmth

Thando:"mxm,what am I going to do now without a phone"

Me:"you can start by getting off me"

She gets off me, I sit up,I can't believe I'm already so hard, when last did I get laid? I need to get myself a bitch and stop having silly erections from a kid.

Me:"I'll be keeping this with me"

Thando:"Argh! You so mean!"

Me(smirks):"I know"

The gate phone rings, I get up and go answer it

"Hey Clyde its us"

I check the time,it's six

I let them in then leave the door unlocked as I go sit back on the couch

Thando:"I'll be in my room" she gets up but I quickly stand in front of her

Me:"sit down"

She tries to go past me I hold her arms,she looks at me in the eyes I return the glare

Me:"sit down"

She sighs and sits down I also sit

There's a knock at the door

Me:"come in!"

The door opens and I hear them coming towards the lounge with their kids talking baby language

Quinton:"good evening guys"

Me:"evening"

Lisa:"hey Clyde"

Me:"Lisa"

Lisa:"hey Thando"

Thando:"h hey"

They put the kids on the floor to play, look like they had fun as they have stickers on their faces

Quinton:"so...how you've been"

Clyde:"let's skip the small talk and get to the point please"

He sighs

Quinton:"okay,well, me and Lisa talked and we came to a decision"

Clyde:"yeah? And what decision is that?"

Lisa:"Thando... I forgive you"

I look at Thando as she looks up at Lisa in total shock

Lisa:"despite the way you hurt me,they way you betrayed me... I forgive you and I want us to continue being friends"

She gasps as tears fall from her eyes

Thando:"Lisa.... thank you,thank you for giving me a second chance"

She gets up and so does Lisa, they hug and break down in each other's arms

Thando:"I didn't mean to hurt you Lisa"

Lisa:"I know.... I'm sorry I couldn't forgive you sooner"

Thando:"thank you for everything... I love you"

Lisa:"I love you too"

A smile creeps on my face

They break the hug Thando looks at Quinton

Thando:"I'm sorry"

He shakes his head

Quinton:"I forgive you"

He gets up and clicks thumbs with her and they hug.

Me:"well I'm glad you came for good news"

Quinton:"yeah man,now we can all start on a clean slate for the new year, we leaving everything that happened behind"

Me:"sounds awesome"

Lisa:"and we missed you, Quinton needs your help everything is getting worse with business and our family is at risk"

Me:"I know I've also been working on this guy too, my guys will get back to me one of the days,it looks like they found out something"

Quinton:"really!?!..that's great,now we can deal with whoever these people are"

Me:"we will...soon"

Lisa:"that's good news.."

Quinton:"we have to get going.... we'll see y'all tomorrow? We getting together as friends and fam...you game?"

Me:"yeah I'm game"

We fist pump and shoulder hug

We accompany them out

We get back inside

Thando:"wow I didn't expect that"

Me:"me too"

Thando:"let's start with the cooking"

Me:"I'll go set up the fire a coal"

I go to the back and set up the stuff while I waited for the fire I went to the kitchen and helped Thando spice the meat. Looks like she's back to normal again,the bubbly girl with a whole lotta questions

It's late now and we enjoying the food

Me:"I got one last present for you, before the year ends"

She looks at me excited

Thando:"what is it?"

I go take her gift and give it to her, it's a wrapped envelope

Thando:"I wonder"

She opens it then take out the papers inside,she reads them....After a while

She screams out loud giving me a fright

Thando:"CLYYYDE!!!... YOU GOT ME A SCHOOL!"

Me:"yeap, you going back to high school and finish your matric"

She screams again as she lifts me up to stand and squeezes me in a big hug, I hold her back tighter, I feel wetness on my chest as her face is buried on it with her arms around

my waist while mine are around her neck she sniffs
Me:"hey don't cry"
Thando:"this is too much Clyde...Thank you soooo much"
I move her head from my chest she looks up at me
Me:"you deserve it"
Thando(whispers):"how am I ever going to repay you"
Me(whispers):"you don't have to"
We gaze into each other's eyes,her face is getting closer,I as stands on her toes I move
my head down to meet her half way, our noses touch and our foreheads
Thando:"another chance at achieving my dreams....are you kidding me"
Me:"I....
She smashes her lips on mine ,I kiss her back, I pick her up cause she's too short, I
lead us upstairs, I've been holding myself for too long,I'm having her tonight

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

CONTINUATION

-
-
-
-
-
-

☹️CLYDE 😊

-
-
-
-
-
-

I throw her on my bed we already half naked, I stand up as I go up to the draws

Thando:"what are you doing?"

Me:"don't you move from that spot, I'm getting a rubber"

I look for them,shit they not in here,it's been a while I check the draw next to the bed and I find them, I look at her,she's staring at my guy,she looks worried, I get that look alot towards my guy. I open the packet I give her the rubber.

Me:"put it on for me"

She takes it biting her lip,she tries putting it on,she finishes and it's a bit tight, I'm too hard it's not even funny.

It's actually painful.

I get on top of her, she closes her legs

Me:"what are you doing?"

She looks at me as though she's scared

Me:"open up Thando"

Thando:"I can't"

Me:"don't fuck with me Thando,what's the matter?"

Thando:"you so big"

Me:"I'll try be gentle,now open up girl"

I open her legs wide, I insert her, slowly, Ohhh fuck, it's so warm.

Thando:"aahhhh...aahh Clyde!"

She's not too tight and she's not loose either, she's just right. I increase the pace,she moans louder, we going real wild and she's screaming my name, I kiss her lips to feel her moans on my lips, I lay my head on her and slow down

Me:"your pussy is appetizing"

She nods as she can't keep her mouth closed,her eyes are have flipped

"Mmmmh"

I adjust myself and lift her one leg over my shoulder I fuck her as she's sleeping with her side, damn,she has a good pussy,or has it been a while? I want to feel her though, without the rubber.

Me:"get on your knees"

She gets on her knees I bang her hard from behind

"Aahhhhhhh Clyde!!! Stooooop!!!"

Me:"stop?"

She shakes her head

Thando:"don't stop baby"

I pull her up and I sit on the bed, I let her sit on top of me and ride me with her back facing me as I get the view off her round fine butt.

She moves in circles up and down my dick

Me:"Fuck! Thando! I'm.. I'm cumin!"

Thando:"I'm close too"

She cums, I release too,she gets up off me

I dispose the condom,then head for the shower, I turn to look at her

Me:"come....let's take a shower"

She smiles and walks up to me I pick her up we kiss all the way to the shower,she keeps seducing me dropping the soap and picking it up. we get naughty in the shower too.

Me:"you naughty girl! You want some more of this don't you?"

She shakes her head as she rubs the soap with bubble sexily on her body

Me:"I'll show you what I do to naughty girls like you"

I bang her hard

Thando(screaming and moaning):"I'm soooooorrrry!!!"

I pick up the pace she's holding on the wall and I'm hitting it from behind

Me:"what you sorry for kid?"

Thando(breathless moans):"I'm so Soorry"

I pull her hair till her back is against me,I whisper next to her ear

Me:"what you sorry for?"

I'm still moving in her as my other hand grips her boob while the other is rubbing her pussy

Thando:"for being a naughty girl"

Me:"will you be naughty again?"

She shakes her head no

Me:"I don't think you've learnt your lesson yet"

I turn her around and pick her up then pin her against the wall, I push myself deep inside of her

Me:"shit Thando,(whispers) what are you doing to my dick?"

She moans louder

I can't get enough.

.
. .
. .
. .

🌀YONELA🌀

.
. .
. .

We at the lodge that we all booked as friends, everyone is here except Quinton and Lisa, they couldn't make it,they wanted to spend the day and evening with the kids, I understand them,they married and have kids,do family is their first priority now. Lisa already is speaking mother language, like when we go shopping, almost everything reminds her of her kids or her husband, I wish my love with Aidan could grow to be just as beautiful as Q & L...they inspire almost all of us, specially me, knowing where they come from,they have grown alot. By the looks of things,it's not gonna be easy being with Aidan, he's too friendly with these bitches out here,and they be throwing themselves at him. The fact that he's funny is worse, funny and cute,bad combination.

"Babe"

I look at him

Aidan:"where's your mind at"

He holds me from behind as I was standing on the balcony

Me:"I'm here babes"

Aidan:" why you up here alone"

Me:"just loving the view,it's so beautiful"

Aidan:"but not more than you"

He kisses my neck,I moan

Me:"Aidan"

Aidan:"I want you"

His hands slide under my shirt up to my boobs as he squeezes them gently

"Mmmh, Aidan"

He slides them down beneath my panty his fingers play with my honey pot,I can feel his hard self on my butt pressing against me

I turn and wrap my arms around me and we kiss properly

I push him as he walks backwards until we fall on the bed, I take off his pants while he take off his shirt, I kiss him all the way down to his big man, I suck on my lolipop,he groans like crazy, I suck harder pushing him deep inside till I gag

Aidan (groaning):"move babe,I'm cumin"

I get up and he releases

I take off my clothes and sit on top of him,he slides himself inside,we moan at the same time as

I start moving, next thing I know he's on top and fucking me like crazy, making me scream out his name.

He releases inside of me after a while but he continues until I release too, he collapses next to me

Aidan: "what's the time?"

I look next to me on my phone which was on the table

Me: "it 23:53"

Aidan: "damn... let's get to the others"

We wipe and fix ourselves then head down to the others who were just having beers and playing loud music while laughing and having a good time

Me: "guys we almost there"

Brandon: "yeeaahhh we gonna make it in together guys!"

Everyone: "whuuuhh yeeaahh!!"

Aidan: "get the fire works ready"

Roxanne: "and where's that champagne!"

She take a new bottle of champagne that she will pop once we done with countdown

Bella: "we doing this guys we almost there.... twenty more minutes"

Everyone holds each other's hands and everyone starts saying their new year's resolutions

Aidan: "next year, I want to be happier than this year, I'm going to take good care of you Nella and I want us to have as much fun and possible and make alot of good memories"

Me: "next year I will graduate with flying colours and I will won't struggle to get a job and I'll be the best lawyer in the world...and also, I want to make lots of fun memories with my cowboy here, I'll love you even more next year"

He chuckles

Everyone says their resolutions

Brandon: "next year, I'm moving to Australia"

Us: "what!?"

.

.

.

.

.

💎LISA💎

.

.

.

.

The kids have fallen asleep, we sitting outside on the couches that are outside, we have long ate, I'm wearing my bikini and he has his briefs only.

I'm having nice cold cocktail while he's having his beers and some whiskey now and then. I'm now tipsy so is he.

We playing music but it's not too loud, I have my leg over him as we looking up at the stars with my head on his chest. He's brushing my hair as he keeps taking a sip of his drink then puts it down.

Me: "Q"

Quinton: "Liss"

Me: "we almost there, we'll be starting a new year, starting it as husband and wife"

Quinton:"yes bub, that is true"

Me:"it will be a year filled with lots of love and laughter"

Quinton:"that also is true my love"

Me:"we'll be stronger than ever before"

Quinton:"nothing is Ever coming between us ...we were tested to early in our marriage, but we still passed,cause of the love we have for each other...after everything that's happened this year... I know for sure that nothing but death will separate you and I"

Me:"my new year's resolution is that, I want to be a better mom,a even better wife, I want to grow more as a child of God...and I will make my gift known to the public,so I can be able to help people and put my healing powers to good use"

He looks at me

Quinton:"really?"

I nod

Quinton:"you ready for all that?"

Me:"yes, I am,but lesson learnt...only help from a distance"

We laugh a lil bit

Quinton:"you can say that again"

Me:"what's your resolution?"

Quinton:"next year I'll stop all the criminal activities and I want to explore and learn more about God"

I look up at him in total shock

Me:"are you serious?"

He nods

Quinton:"I want my kids to grow up in a warm loving home in no danger of the enemies I make in this business"

Me:"but you'll first get to the bottom of this guy before you stop right"

Quinton:"of cause...oh and I also want atleast three more babies next year"

Me:"there you go losing your mind again...you think this is some baby factory where you just pick and go"

Quinton:"I don't care what you say,I want my babies Lisa, I want them, you hear me?"

Me:"not in your wildest dreams Mr Clause"

Quinton:"you know I'm Santa,I canake things happen"

Me:"mxm shut up, I'm not getting pregnant next year in Jesus name,I have to finish my studies in peace without no pain please, Rae and Kyle are enough"

He laughs

Quinton:"we'll see about that"

We hear the radio countdown from thirty

We stand up

Me:"oh my goshhhh this is it!"

Quinton:"where's that champagne?"

He takes the bottle of champagne

"Five.... four.....three.....two.....one....HAPPY NEW YEAR!!!!!!!"

🎆💎*FIREWORKS*🎆💎

he pops the champagne and pours for us

Quinton:"to new beginnings,to family,to love and laughter"

Me:"to new beginnings, family love and laughter"

We cheers and drink up,we put the glass down and share a long heartfelt kiss

He pulls out

Quinton:'happy new year bub"

Me:"Happy New year love bug"

Quinton (shouts):"lets have some fuuunnnn!!"

He picks me up bridal style and runs with me towards the.....

Me:"no no no Quinton....(screams)...don't do it!!"

He jumps inside the pool, I hold my breath as I feel his arm carry me back up, I finally breath and wipe the water off my face with my hands

Me(shouts):"You Crazy!!!"

Quinton (laughing):"About You!!!!"

I laugh at him and splash him with water, we splash each other and play in the pool.

.
. .
. .
. .

💞THANDO♥

.
. .
. .

We watched as the fire works made a beautiful image in the sky

Me:"Happy New year Clyde"

Clyde:"happy new year Thando"

Damn Clyde is hardcore when it comes to sex, he's gifted and he knows how to hit the right spots,my punani is still burning from all that. I've never come across a guy like him ever. The way his touch makes me feel is even crazier,the way my heart beats for him is insane and scary. These feelings are just too much. But I'm scared, I'm scared that I might be feeling these feelings all by myself.

He's drunk now cause we've been drinking and smoking weed all night, while talking about stupid stuff.

Clyde:"so tell me Tee....how come your pussy is so heavenly?"

I laugh

Me:"I don't know.... how come your dick is so hypnotizing"

Clyde:"cause it controlled by Clyde...Kieth....O..O.. O'Brien"

I laugh,his eyes are small and he's out of it

Clyde:"did you notice the triple O there"

Me:"yeah...but don't you get tired, I mean you what? 48 now?"

Clyde:"48?...ppshhh girl, I'm 28...

He gets up and movea his body sexily

Clyde:"and I can still bump and grind"

I laugh as I'm also in total shock

Me:"oh my gosh,Robocop !? Is that you!?"

I didn't know he can move I thought he never dances actually cause like it looks impossible that he can

Clyde:"who you calling robocop?"

Me:"you!"

Clyde:"you being naughty again"

Me:"no I'm not"

Clyde:"you need a spanking"

I shake my head and run from him he chases me,he catches me as I was just about to pass the lounge,he throws me on the couch

Clyde:"I'm eating you here"

I giggle as I bite my lips he literally rips my clothes off and we at it again

Me:"go easy on me please Robo"

Clyde:"no mercy"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 27

-
-
-
-
-
-

💞THANDO♥

-
-
-
-
-
-

I got up early to make us breakfast in bed, I fryed some eggs, bacon, mini sausages and mashrooms with toasted bread.

I make my way upstairs, I get in the room and find he's not on his bed

Me:"baby! Breakfast is served"

I place it on the table, I can hear the water running so he's taking a shower.

This is the best new year ever, we had sex the whole night. He's a beast.

He makes his way back to the room with a towel wrapped around his waist while wiping his wet body

Me(cheerful):"morning!"

He looks up at me

Clyde:"hi"

Me:"I made you breakfast"

He looks at the food on the table

Clyde:"thanks"

Me:"yeah"

He looks around then looks back at me

Clyde:"I need to dress up"

Me:"go ahead"

Clyde:"uhmm can I get some privacy?"

I look at him I frown

Me:"oh? You want me to leave?"

Clyde:"if you don't mind"

I hesitantly get up

Me:"what about your breakfast?"

Clyde:"you can take it downstairs with you"

Ouch...okay.?

I take the tray and head out,I go downstairs and put his food in the microwave, I take mine and eat while watching TV.

I hear him coming down the stairs,he goes straight to the kitchen and warms his food, I look up at him as he sits next to me,he takes the remote and changes the channel then enjoys his food while watching soccer,I hate soccer,my step dad loved it too much,that's why I hate it.

Me:"I was watching you know"

He ignores me

Me(louder):"I was watching you know!"

He looks at me with that cold eye of his

Clyde:"so was I"

He looks back at the TV,why is he being so cold,or should I say,why is he being him boring self. I get up and head to the kitchen to wash the dishes, then clean up the house a bit.

Me:"your legs please"

He picks up his legs as I sweep the floor

Clyde:"would you hurry,you blocking the TV"

I sweep a bit faster so I can move out the way.

I head upstairs to take a shower,a million thoughts run through my mind as the water hits my back

why is Clyde acting this way? It's like nothing ever happened between us,it's like he wasn't making jokes and dancing for me just yesterday,it's like he never gave multiple orgasms just last night. Maybe I didn't do him as good as I thought? Or maybe my pussy is too loose for him,he is a giant after all. Why am I even stressing, I mean to him I'm a hoe, he was probably just using me to satisfy his needs and he couldn't care less about how I feel like the rest of them. Argh I hate this, I wish I never caught feelings, I need to terminate them ASAP before I torture my heart any further.

I get out of the shower and lotion my body, a knock comes through.

I wrap a towel around my breasts

Me:"come in"

He gets in

Me:"can I help you?"

He throws a small box ony bed

Clyde:"swallow those now"

I take the box and it's pills i head to the bathroom and swallow one, I almost forgot we didn't use protection

So he does remember everything that happened last night.

I head back to the room and he's not there anymore,I dress up then head downstairs, he's not in sight.

I go knock on his office door

"Come in"

I slowly make my way in

Me:"can we talk?"

Clyde:"no... I'm busy"

Me:"I won't be long"

Clyde:"get out"

I sigh then make my way out,this hurts, I don't understand why he's treating me like this, I thought after everything that's happened since Christmas he'd change a bit, I guess I was wrong my heart is torn to pieces,there's nothing more hurtful than a guy treating you like trash after you've given him your nani...but then again I'm used to it.

I spend my whole day in my room till I fell asleep.

"Thando"

I feel someone shaking me

Me:"mmmh"

Clyde:"wake up, dinner is ready"

I get up and my tummy decides to make a sound, I last ate in the morning.

I follow him downstairs,he has set the table, he cooked.

He sits down, I take my food and head upstairs

"Where do you think you going?"

I turn as I'm halfway up

Me:"to eat in my room"

Clyde:"you not eating in non of these rooms except here"

He points at the table

I obey and walk back to the table, I put my plate down and sit across him

Clyde:"come sit next to me"

I look up at him,is he serious?

Me:"I'm fine here"

He raises his brow, I get up and go sit next to him, we eat in silence until we were done.

I get up and go put my plate in the sink, I run water so that I was the dishes, I feel his arm as he puts his plate in the sink while standing behind me, too close, I can feel his muscular body against mine and his hard dick

Clyde(softly):"need help with that?"

He speaks against my ear making my knees weak

I shake my head

Me:"no... I.. I'm fine"

He places his hand on my tummy,he moves it down slowly, my pussy clenches, I just creamed myself as his hand reaches my punani,he cups it. A moan escapes my mouth, I lay my head back on his broad chest.

He turns me around, we stare at each other's eyes,his eyes are burning with lust as they are so small

Clyde:"I want you"

Me:"what about the dishes?"

Clyde:"they can wait"

He picks me up and smashes his lips on mine as we head upstairs to his room,he throws me on the bed and takes off my clothes roughly,he caresses my boobs as he kisses me, I take off his clothes as I caress his muscles,he kisses me down to my boobs as he licks my nipples slowly,he continues going down on me, Oh God!! He's about to muff me, I can't let him do that,I feel his cold lips kiss my wetness, I sit up quickly.

He looks at me

Clyde:"what's wrong?"

Me:"I can't let you lick me"

Clyde:"why not?"

He asks as he comes up and massages my boobs while kissing my neck

Me (moaning)..uhmm mmmh because...mmmh.. I...I just can't"

He pushes me to lie back down on my back and goes down on me,his lips reach my honeypot once more, I close my legs as his face stays buried in between my legs making the pleasures even worse as he does wonders with his tongue, I never knew how nice this is until today. He comes back up and kisses my lips as I feel his manhood enter me, I gasp.

He fucks me uncontrollably giving me multiple orgasms, he pulls out and releases on my tummy. He enters me again and we fuck the whole night, I think I'm getting addicted to his cane, I can't seem to resist it.

....

I'm woken up by a bright light coming from the window, I stretch my arms as I turn to look at him, he's sitting up busy on his laptop,I move next to him, I sit up and wrap my arm around his tummy and lay my head on his chest.

He stops pressing his laptop

Clyde:"I'm busy with something"

Me:"you know cuddling after an awesome steamy night never hurt anyone"

He shifts uncomfortably, I let go of him. I guess he doesn't like to cuddle,well I've never been cuddled anyway

Clyde:"this is really important"

Me:"I'm sorry.... I thought maybe....(sighs).. nevermind..uhm I'll leave you to it"

I get up with my shattered and naked self, I head to the bathroom, I feel, I feel like a hoe, he's treating me like one,I'm used to this treatment from a very young age, this treatment was my life,where they satisfy themselves and the next day,we pretend nothing ever happened until the next visit, the only difference is that,with Clyde there's many emotions involved with every touch and it hurts to see that, this might be nothing but just sex to him.

I take a shower after I'm done I was back to the room,he's still in the same spot,naked, looking at his laptop

I can't help but stare at his gorgeous body. He clears his throat bringing me back to planet Earth, I lotion his stuff then wear my clothes

Me:"should I make you breakfast?"

Clyde:"I have somewhere I need to be,do no thanks"

Me:"oh...maybe if you come back early we could go out since yesterday was the first and we didn't go anywhere"

Clyde:"do you know the mad traffic around these dates in Joburg?"

Me:"so that means we should be stuck indoors?"

Clyde:"I have better things to do"

He closes his laptop,I feel tears prickle my eyes

Me:"Clyde"

He looks at me

Me:"whats going on?"

Clyde:"I'm about to attend a very important meeting is what's going on"

I sigh and look down

Clyde:"what's up with you?"

I look up at him

Me:"I mean between us... what are we? Are we friends, fuck buddies or a couple?"

He chuckles

Clyde:"whoa...a couple?...(laughs a bit)...that's funny"

I frown

Me:"why's that funny?"

He chuckles then points at me and him

Clyde:"you...me...naahh sweetie, it won't work out"

I gasp

Me:"so...so this is just sex?"

Clyde:"look, it's been a while since I've fucked and it's been a while since you've been fucked so well...so this..this is a favor, for both of us,let's not confuse it with love or whatever you thought it was... okay?"

My chest is painful,he just broke my heart, I'm so so stupid! Stupid Thando!! Stupid stupid stupid! You know better than to put your feelings out there, something you've never done,why would you think this could be any different...whowould ever want to be or love a hoe like yourself? If there's one thing your step dad was right about, is the fact that noone will ever settle for a hoe like myself,love was not made for people like me. I don't know what was I thinking. Its just, for a moment when we have sex,the way he looks at me, touches me,makes me believe,gives me hope that I could also be loved,but I guess it all ends in bed.

"Thando?"

I look up at him

Clyde:"I hope you didn't catch any feelings...cause I'm not about that"

Me:"I did catch feelings"

He looks me with a frown

Clyde:"well you better quickly uncatch them"

Me:"how?"

Clyde:"figure it out"

He stands up

Me:"you mean you don't feel anything for me?"

Clyde:"Thando....."

He walks closer to me I stand up

Clyde:"baby....."

He cups my cheek,my eyes shut

Clyde:"I do feel something for you"

He gets even closer closing the gap between us

Clyde:"I feel horny"

I look up at him

Clyde:"that's all I feel"

I can't believe he just said that

I slap his hands off me then run out to my room

"Thando!!"

I bang the door and crouch myself on the bed holding on my legs as I bury my face in between my knees, I can't help but cry, I've never in my life cried for a guy, maybe it because I've never been hurt this much. I should've kept my mouth shut, I shouldn't have told him.

Doo doo!

"Thando! Open"

Me:"leave me alone"

"Stop this madness Thando, open this door so we can talk"

Me:"go away... I don't wanna talk to you"

"You better open this door before I break it down"

I ignore him as I continue crying

He fiddles with the door until it opens

He sits on the bed

Clyde:"Thando"

Me:....

Clyde:"look... I'm sorry if I gave you the wrong impression, but, the truth is, I really don't have any kind of feelings for you, besides lust, and I wanna be honest with you so I don't lead you on.... I do care for you though,and I want you to go back to school so you can become something in life....but...that's as far asy feelings go,and for a person like me, that's already too much, you've already seen different sides of me that not even my family are familiar with...so please Thando,get rid of those feelings cause they never going to work out...at least not with me"

I look at him for a while

Me:"is it because I was a hoe?"

Clyde:"it has absolutely nothing to do with that"

Me:"oh it has everything to do with that... you and everybody else will never fully forgive and forget my past, I never meant to be the person I was,I never asked to live that disgusting life...why do you have to punish me for it?"

Clyde:"don't talk like that....you only hurting yourself, until you love, forgive and forget your past self, only then you'll realise you don't really need anyone to love you...no one will ever love you if you don't love yourself,no one will forgive you if you don't forgive yourself and as long as you don't forget the past, everything around you will always remind you of who and what you were, blocking you from becoming what you were destined to be"

I wipe my tears

Clyde:"get up and dust yourself...you've been given another chance to change your past by creating a better future, let your past not be your downfall but let it be your motivation, that you've survived it all and now you can do better"

I smile

Clyde:"don't go looking for love Thando, love only brings you stress and heartache... people are full of disappointments, rather rely on your own love than relying on someone else to give it to you.... because expectations from people who won't do what you expect from them, hurts more than anything you've ever been through...trust me"

Me:"you right...it's time I fix myself"

Clyde:"yeah... finish school,get a job,make money, love yourself and get rich"

I laugh

Me:"yeah... I'll do just that"

I get up from the floor and stand on my feet and so does he

Me:"thanks Clyde... I needed to hear that"

Clyde:"you welcome"

He gets closer and kisses my lips,he deepens the kiss as he pushes me till my back is against the wall ,he presses himself on me, I can't keep up with my breathing.

He pull out still against me

Clyde:"we'll stop fucking after this"

I nod,he throws me on the bed and we on it again

"Aahhhhhhh Clyyyde!!!..fuck!!!"

He bangs me unmercifully,he pulls out and cums on my belly,he likes doing that. I drink the pills before we head to the shower.

Me:"so, no more sex"

He chuckles

Clyde:"yeah, no more, I need you to focus.... I want straight As from you throughout the whole year"

Me (giggles):"yes sir!"

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 28

•

•

•

•

•

💎LISA💎

•

•

•

•

•

Two months later

.

.

.

Argh!! Back to school! Whyyy! Thank God this is my last year,I'm so damn tired, I feel like quitting work, it's just triple the stress on top of being a student and a full time mom to two kids...oh Gosh not to mention being a wife but mostly a mother to my very demanding yet childish husband.

I feel like disappearing right now, Rachel is screaming at the top of her lungs... Kyle is also crying out loud,they on the floor and I'm just looking at them

What am I to do? I really don't know, these kids are getting toy last nerve

Me:"do y'all know how ugly y'all look when you cry?"

Wailing babies

Me:"what do y'all want from me guys? I already gave you food, I changed your nappies, I bathe y'all, I gave yall milk,we took a walk outside,I'm letting

yall play with your toys....what more do you want from mommy?"

I pick up Rae but she's still wailing making Kyle wails even louder

Tears escape my eyes

Me (crying): "what do y'all want from meeeee!!!"

They crying louder and louder and so am I

"What's going on in here!?"

I look at the door and a worried Quinton is making his way in

He takes Rae

Quinton: "sshhhhh baby... daddy's here now"

She calms down and stops crying

Me (crying): "are you kidding me!!... Argh!"

I pick Kyle up he stops crying, my daughter doesn't love me, this is heartbreaking, I give Kyle to his dad then storm off.

I can't take this, why does my baby hate me so much, she does this all the time, once she's done with her boob she cries and only stops when her dad takes her...

I throw myself on the bed with my tummy and cry

I feel him get on top of me he lays his head over my shoulder

"Why you crying?"

Me: "cause I'm sad"

Quinton: "why you sad?"

Me: "because"

Quinton: "because what?"

Me: "your daughter hates me"

Quinton: "what? What makes you say that"

Me: "she doesn't like it when I take her, she always cries but when you take her she becomes happy"

He moves the hair off my face

Quinton: "that's not true....okay maybe a little.....but not entirely...she doesn't hate you"

Me: "she does Q...she hates me"

Quinton: "that's your baby Liss..she loves you, she's still a baby she might feel comfortable in my arms more than she does in yours but that doesn't mean she hates you"

Me: "but I'm her mother Q...I gave birth to her, I breastfeed her...she should be more comfortable with me more than anyone else... I gave birth to that big eyeballed cutie"

He laughs

Quinton: "she's still a baby... you'll see the more she grows the more closer to you she'll be"

I wipe my tears he rolls off me and is now next to me

Me: "you think so?"

Quinton: "I know so... y'all make the best mother and daughter friendship ever, she'll tell you everything"

I smile

Me: "yeah...you right... she'll grow, and we'll be more closer"

Quinton: "that's right...now stop your crying"

Tears burn my eyes and I burst into a cry once again

Quinton (confused): "what's the matter now?"

Me: "I'm tired Q"

Quinton: "of what bub?"

He asks rubbing my back

Me: "of everything... I'm tired of this job, I'm tired of school, I'm tired of these kids, I'm just tired of everything..... I feel like quitting, I can't go on anymore"

He makes me look at him

Quinton:"I know...and I understand"

Me:"you do?"

Quinton:"yes...Bub... you still very young, yet you have so many responsibilities and challenges that you have to face with everyday while most ladies your age are enjoying their youth and having the time of thier lives because they ignore their responsibilities and choose fun, but you, you know your roles as the young woman you've become and no matter what you feel or go through everyday you still choose family, you still choose your dreams...and that, that takes alot of strength in you as a young woman you are, but Lisa, besides seeing the future and being a powerful child of God... being a woman is also your superpower, a very special superpower that only a few women embrace... I know sometimes it may feel like too much,but God wouldn't give you such powers if he knew you can't handle it..as the saying goes...with great power comes great responsibility, don't give up,my bub is no quitter"

These tears are now accompanied by a huge smile

Quinton:"now say it with me... I'm not a quitter"

Me:"I'm not a quitter"

Quinton:"louder... I'm not a quitter!!"

Me (shouts):"I'm not a quitter!!"

We burst into laughter

Quinton:"that's more like it"

I move closer to him and snuggle with him with my head on his chest

Me:"you should've been a motivational speaker"

He laughs

Quinton:"nahh that's not me"

Me:"but you always have the right words to say"

Quinton:"to you...you the only person I need to motivate,as your husband, when you feel like giving up, your husband should be the one to uplift you and remind you of who you are and where you going, cause I know all your dreams and I know how far you've come"

Me:"I love you so much"

Quinton:"I know"

I look up at him

Me:"aren't you going to say it back?"

Quinton:"I'm sure you know too"

Me:"yyeah I know...but I want to hear you say it"

He sighs and rolls his eyes

Quinton:"I love you Lisa"

Me:"no, say it the way I love it"

Quinton:"I love you bub"

Me (blushes):"I love you too"

He lifts my face and kisses me,we play with our tongues, biting and pulling my lips

I pull out as I hear his phone ring

He gets up and goes answer it by the balcony.

He comes back after a few minutes

Me:"who was that?"

Quinton:"just business,one of the guys updating me"

Me:"you know I know when you lying right? Now..there's something you not telling me"

He sighs and remains quiet

Me:"talk to me"

Silence

Me:"Quinton"

Quinton:"Mncedisi is back in town"

My heart stops for a few seconds

Me(whispers):"what?"

Quinton:"he's the one who's been taking out our guys one by one, he's the one who's been stealing from us....he's back and he wants revenge"

Me:"revenge?"

Quinton:"for his father"

Me:"this can't be good"

Quinton:"looks like I'll have to stay in the game for a while till we've sorted him out"

Me:"by sorting him out....you mean..."

Quinton:"kill him"

I shake my head

Me:"not more Johnson blood in our hands"

Quinton:"what other choice do we have"

Silence

I lie on his chest as my mind drifts far

.

.

.

.

☹CLYDE☹

.

.

.

.

Me:"how fucken hard can it be to locate someone!.... I don't pay your ass to give me the I don't know bullshit! Tomorrow you give me all the information I asked for or your ass is dead. You hear me!"

I hang up I take my glass of whiskey and galp it up.

I swear as soon as I get my hands on that stupid Johnson son I'm going to kill him this time around. Last time Lisa wanted us to give him a second chance... I let him go,we beat him up , blind folded and dumped him in a foreign country , I thought I made it very clear to him that he must never set foot here, but it's obvious he didn't get the message.

door knocks

Me:"come in"

The door flies open and Thando makes her way inside all cheerful,she's still in her uniform

Thando:"hey Clyde!"

Me:"Thandolwethu"

She blushes

Thando:"how you doing?"

Me:"I've been better"

Thando:"okay!.. Sooo at school today they told us that there will be a tour and it will be next month...."

She looks at me with a big smile

Me:"and?"

Thando:"can I please go?"

Me:"yeah sure whatever"

She jumps excitedly

Me:"I see you excited about this, this means you've made new friends?"

She's been hating school in the past weeks since she had no friends and girls seemed to be teasing her

Thando:"Not really....well just one"

Me:"mmh okay...are the others still teasing you?"

She nods looking down

Me:"you still don't want me to go sort them out for you?"

Thando:"no Clyde...it's cool and besides my new friend is so cool,the way he stood up for me when we first met was sooo lit those nasty girls left with a tail between their legs, you should've seen it"

Me:"he?"

Thando:"yeah,he's the only one who gets me... that's why I'm excited about this tour cause I won't be bored, he's a very cool, but I think our friendship will be a problem"

Yeah it will be a very big problem

Me:"why you say that?"

Thando:"with him being a jock and apparently most wanted guy in school,our friendship will only make things worse for me"

Me:"you should probably concentrate on your studies and forget about friends and bullies"

Thando:"you right...but what if the bullies don't stop"

Clyde:"don't you know how to fight?"

She laughs

Thando:"oh Clyde.. I just got into this school,it's a strict private school... I can't be getting into fights"

Me(chuckles):"so you telling me,if you were to get into a fight, you'd win?"

Thando:"I'd rearrange a bitch's face in a few seconds"

I can't help but laugh

Me:"you don't say"

Thando:"I'm telling you I know some of that Mohammed Ali kinda shit"

She says punching the air

Me(laughing):"yeah sure..that will protect save you"

Thando:"Uhm one more thing"

Me:"what?"

Thando:"tomorrow Chris is coming over, since we'll be writing Mathematics he asked me to help him out since I'm good at it"

Me:"who's Chris?"

Thando:"the friend I just told you about"

Me:"oh"

Thando:"so.. you don't mind? Or I can go to his place"

Me:"his place? You don't even know the dude that well"

Thando:"he's my classmate and he's popular so he can't be any harm"

I sigh

Me:"it's fine,he can come over here"

She jumps excitedly and claps her hands, she loves doing that

Thando:"thank you...you the best!"

She comes around and kisses my cheek then heads towards the door

Me:"Thando!"

She stops and looks back at me

Thando:"yes"

Me:"it starts off as just friends....be careful"

She looks at me with a confused expression

Thando:"what do you mean?"

I shake my head

Me:"nevermind"

She looks at me for a while

Thando (smiles):"okay!"

She walks out.

It's like she gets more beautiful with each passing day,her smile,her eyes,the way she walks,her curves, everything about her is just amazing, her giggling is the best, something inside me gets excited when she giggles.

I chuckle

This is ridiculous, I have to get rid of these little feelings i have for this little girl...a baby...a child, come on Clyde stop thinking with your dick and start using your head.

She's matric and she's seventeen, how many years ago did you finish matric? Ten to Eleven years ago? Damn,I shouldn't even have fucked her, I'm a rapist! I fucked a baby

phone rings

It's Quinton

Me:"yeah"

"Hey man, let's meet at my house tomorrow, I've located him"

Me:.....

"Yo? Are you there"

Me:"yeah yeah, I hear you,that's good I'll be there"

"Cool...hey, are you okay?"

Me:"you know me right?"

"Uhhh yeah I know you"

Me:"what kind of person am I?"

"Clyde...are you sure you okay?"

Me:"just answer the fucken question"

"You are an intimidating heartless motherfucker, you love your family but you hardly make it visible, you hate love, you'll never love and there's nobody out there who has guts to love you, you only fuck with bitches but you don't let bitches fuck with you...you just Clyde, you got no feelings...but you'd do anything for your family,yeah that's about it"

Me:"you know me well"

"But to tell the truth...there's a new ride of you that I'm not familiar with that's arising from you....

I don't know if it's just me or what"

Me:"bye"

I hang up, shit,new side? I don't want any new sides..that's it

I take my phone and make a phonecall

"Hey Clyde"

Me:"hey Chantelle"

"It's Tiffany"

Me:"oh..yeah, my bad Chant... I mean Tiffany..it's been a while"

"I thought you never saved my number"

Me:"my goodness,how can I possibly do that...you know you the best I've ever had"

"(Chuckles) well we do have some really wild memories... I miss you"

Me:"let's meet"

"Now?"

I check the time it's almost six

Me:"eight o'clock, at our usual spot"

"Uhhh I kinda have plans tonight,can we make it tomorrow?"

Me:"cancel...we meeting tonight"

She remains quiet then sighs

"Okay I'll be there"

Me:"good"

I hang up.

I carry on with some work,after an hour I go upstairs to freshen up, I put on some fresh clean clothes, I put my watch and cap on, I puff some cologne,grab my car keys and wallet then head downstairs

"Going out?"

I turn to be met by Thando in that tiny sexy sleepwear of hers

Me:"yeah"

Thando:"I just finished making dinner don't you wanna eat first?"

I check the time

Me:"I'm actually running late"

Thando:"mmh..you look good, is it business or pleasure?"

Me(chuckles):"it's really just...non of your business"

She smirks

Me:"don't wait up"

I kiss her cheek then head out

I drive to a hotel in Sandton, I get to the restaurant and find her sitting in the booth with a glass of champagne waiting on me,she still looks sexy as fuck, I make myself comfortable

Tiffany:"you an hour late"

Me:"I'm good thanks and yourself"

Tiffany:"still arrogant as fuck"

Me:"still fuckable as fuck"

She blushes

Tiffany:"you know I cancelled my plans for you, and you still make me wait"

Me:"did you order some of that for me?"

I call the waiter, he comes to us and I order a beer

Me:"so...uhmm... Tiffany, how have you been?"

Tiffany:"I've been good... great actually"

Me:"what's new"

Tiffany:"well for starters...."

She flashes her hand across my face

Me:"whoa..you married?"

Tiffany:"engaged"

Me:"wow...you happy?"

Tiffany:"yeah, I am"

Me:"with that huge ass rock, you should be"

She's a golddigger

Tiffany:"I'm in love Clyde"

Silence

I look at her for a while

Me:"then why did you agree to meet up with me?"

She looks down at her glass and takes a sip

Me:"let's go up to our room....shall we?"

I get up and help her up we book a room, I rip her clothes off as we enter.

And that's why I'm never believing in this shit called love, you show her love, buy her a huge ass diamond and she still fucks around behind your back.... with niggers like me

The next day

I grab my phone, I have ten missed calls from Thando , I get a little panic as I call immediately

Me:"Thando are you okay?"

"I'm fine, someone tried to break in last night, but I scared him away"

Me:"what the fuck? Are you okay? Did they break in? Did they hurt you?"

"No... I know where you hide your gun, I fired a few shots and he ran away...don't worry, I can take care of myself... nobody messes with Thandolwethu Sibiya"

A smile creeps on my face

Me:"okay Thandolwethu Sibiya...are you ready for school?"

"Yeah, should I call an Uber?"

Me:"yeah, I'll make you late, just take the Uber"

"Okay! Bye"

Me:"bye"

I hang up then take a deep breath

I look beside me and she's still fast asleep. I kiss her exposed breasts, she giggles as she wakes up, she looks at the time

Tiffany:"shit! I have to get home, my in laws are coming over today"

Me:"just a few minutes won't hurt"

I kiss her neck as I get on top of her, she moans as I rub my dick on her wet pussy , I rip yet another packet of rubber then fuck her senselessly.

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 29

-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

It's raining heavily and I'm getting ready for work. I don't even feel like going, this is a very good day to sleep all day eat and watch TV.

I just finished doing my the last touch ups. He wraps his arms around me

Quinton:"you look beautiful"

Me:"thanks handsome"

I turn,we gaze into each other's eyes before we lean forward for a kiss

I pull out and stare at his lips which are smudged with red lipstick

Me:"lipstick looks good on you"

Quinton;"Really?"

He pouts his lips, I laugh then peck them

Me:"yeah really ...let me get going"

Quinton:"why don't you dodge today then we make love the whoooole day"

My pussy clenches, Gosh will it ever stop reacting this way for him?

Me:"that sounds very very tempting,but I have to go to work and today there's an important meeting that and Emily together with Troy will bite my head off if I don't show up"

Quinton:"then you better get the hell out of here"

Me:"yeah"

I kiss him one last time

Me:"I miss you"

Quinton:"I miss you too"

I smile then turn and head out

I drive off to work.

I'm currently so happy with my life, I have everything every girl could ever dream of, working towards my dream career, my dream home, dream car, beautiful kids, caring family and close friends, and most importantly and the best part a loving supporting husband that loves me wholeheartedly and gives me the strength and courage to face each challenging day that passes by. I wish I can go back in time and tell my past broken self that, it does get better, way way better.

I get to work and head up straight to my office.

I already have a bunch of emails from Troy giving me a whole lotta work to do.

I get on with it

Door knocks

I didn't even get to make coffee as I just want to get this over and done with

Door knocks

I'm too focused on what's on my screen

"I've been knocking about a thousand times"

It's Kayla the receptionist

Me:"can I help you?"

Kayla:"Mr Mullur wants to see you"

Me:"what's it about?"

Kayla:"I never asked"

She turns her heels and walks out

Me:"bitch"
Lord forgive my language
I get up and head to his office
I knock,he looks up at me and signals me to come in
I make my way inside
Me:"hi"
Troy:"hey, how are you"
Me:"I'm... I'm good, yourself"
I take a seat opposite him
Troy:"is my presentation ready?"
Me:"yes it is done, I will go set up five minutes before the meeting starts"
Troy:"good... that's good"
He looks at me for a while I stare back
Me:"will that be all?"
He stared into my eyes for a while then breaks the contact
Troy:"Uhm..oh yeah, there's a big case that I'll be working with, Mr Robinson, a very important man, he needs me to defend him as he is accused of killing his wife"
Me:"mmh okay, so will you need me?"
Troy:"yeah, I need you to help me with background check on him, I feel like he's not telling me the whole truth so I need to investigate..and Imma need your help as we'll be working extra hours"
Me"extra hours?"
Troy:"yeah, just for a few weeks until I can defend him in court, cause I can't defend him if he's not telling me the truth"
I sigh as I think about it
Troy:"unless it's too much for you I can ask someone else..."
Me:"No...it's fine, I'll help you,and I can also ask Quinton for us to use his tech room"
Troy:"that'd be great...okay then"
He looks at his watch
Troy:"looks like it's five minutes before the meeting starts"
I get up
Me:"let me get going then"
I walk towards the door
"Lisa"
I hold the door and look back
Troy:"what you doing for lunch?"
Me:"Uhm,I'll probably get myself a nice big triple burger King at the eat with extra chips on the side covered with different types of sauces...mmmh...yeah that's what I'll do for lunch"
My tummy grambles
Troy:"damn... that sounds...wow"
Me:"wanna join me?"
He smiles
Troy:"I wouldn't wanna miss out on that"
I smile
Me:"it's a date then"
Troy:"on you right?"
Me:"you the boss... everything is on you"

Troy:"oh wow...boss abuse,it's cool"

I laugh and wink at him then head out.

Ever since the game on Christmas,after I talked to Quinton I also talked to Troy and he made me to believe that he really just meant he loves me as a friend, and Candra wasn't specific with her question, so he said yes he loves me cause he doesn't hate me... he promised me that he got rid of those feelings a long time ago, and we just really good friends now.

I head to the boardroom to set up.

A call comes through

Me:"love bug"

"Bub"

Me:"the meeting is about to start babe, can we talk later?"

"I'll be quick, I wanted to ask at what time will you be free for lunch, I want us to eat together"

Me:"oh...uhmm...I don't know hey, okay, it's just someone has already asked to join me for lunch"

"Oh okay... who?"

Me:"uhm... Kayla"

"Who's Kayla?"

Me:"the receptionist"

"The girl who you dislike who gossips alot"

I laugh, I forget that I tell this dude everything

Me:"yeah, that girl...she asked to join me for lunch"

I don't know why I'm lying, maybe it's because Quinton still doesn't like Troy ever since that day and he doesn't believe it when he said he only loves me as a friend and...well... I don't know what to believe,but what I know is nothing will ever go on between Troy and I.

"Oh okay, that's weird, I thought she doesn't like you"

Me:"me too"

"I hope she's not up to funny business cause I'll kill her with my bare hands"

Me:"she's smarter than that"

"I sure hope so.... okay then,I'll see you later"

Me:"love you"

"Love you too"

He hangs up

I hate lying to him, but if I told him he would've tripped and I'm not in the mood for that.

"Lisa!"

I look back

Troy:"the meeting is about to start"

Me:"let's go"

We head to the boardroom

.
. .
. .
. .

☺THANDO♥

.
. .
. .
. .

Having no friends can be an advantage at times like this, I have lots of study time, I've always been fond of school, I make sure I'm at the top of my grade. I can't make my parents proud anymore but I'll make sure I make Clyde proud of me so he knows that his money is not going to waste.

I'm at the library studying some physics, after a whole year of not going to school, I thought I would've lost my drive. I love physical science it's one of my favourite subjects.

"What you up to?"

I slowly look up in front of me

Me:"oh..hey Chris.."

Chris:"hey Thando,how are you"

Me:"I'm good... yourself?"

Chris:"I'm good too"

We stare at each other for a short while

Me:"oh what am I up to.. well I was just going over a few notes in physics"

He makes a face as if he just drank a horrible drink

Chris:"physics?"

Me:"yes"

Chris (chuckles):"I admire your intelligence you know"

I look down

Me:"you do?"

He sits next to me

Chris:"yeah... I mean, you so beautiful,yet you so clever...that's a rare talent to maintain"

I laugh

Me:"you think I'm beautiful?"

I look at him and find him looking at me

Chris:"of cause I think you beautiful...have you looked at the mirror before"

Me:"yeah I have...but, I'm not that beautiful"

Chris:"then you must be looking through the wrong mirror....you beautiful"

I smile

Me (blushing):"thanks"

No one has ever told me that I'm beautiful before ever since mom and dad passed away

Chris:"so your brother is still cool with me coming back with you today"

Me:"yeah he's still cool"

Chris:"cool...I'll see you after school then"

Me:"see you"

He gets up,pats my shoulder then heads out, I smile like a retard until my eyes meet the mean girls giving me the nasty stare, she looks at me up and down then heads out with her tails following behind her.

I roll my eyes and get back to work.

After a long day it's time for me to go home.

I go wait for Clyde by the spot, I find Chris already standing there with his friends, his very hot friends.

Me:"hey guys"

"Hey"

Chris:"okay guys, this is the Thando the girl I've been telling yall about"

"She's hot...I mean, nice to meet you"

Clyde's car parks in front of us

Me:"nice to meet you too, Uhm this is my ride"

Chris:"yeah, we'll talk"

He fist pumps them

Peeee

The car hoots

We get in, we both get in the back

Clyde:"get to the front Thando"

Me:"No..I'm good here"

He gives me an intimidating eye

I get off and head to the front seat

He speeds off

Me:"sooo...how are you?"

Silence

Me:"Uhm this is Chris, the friend I told you about"

Silence

Wow he's not about to be his boring self...at least not today

Me:"Chris...this is my Brother"

Chris:"nice to meet you bro"

He brings his fist towards him, Clyde just looks at it then back at the road

Chris:"oo-kay"

He sits back

I turn to look at him and mouth "I'm sorry"

We finally get to the house, I lead Chris to the lounge

Me:"please wait here while I go change quickly"

Chris:"no problem"

I run upstairs and look for something to wear, I wear my sweatpants and skinny, I remove the band that was holding my hair up and let my afro free, I head downstairs to the kitchen and pour some juice and snacks then head to the lounge and find them sitting there in awkward silence

Me:"there you go"

Chris:"thank you"

Clyde:"why aren't you dressed?"

Me:"what do you mean?"

Clyde:"go put on a top"

Me:"but this skinny is fine"

Clyde:"that's meant for underwear is it not?"

Me:"yeah but...."

Clyde:"but nothing Thando, go get dressed"

I huff and groan angrily then head upstairs, why did he have to embarrass me in front of Chris like that!?

I put on my tank top then head downstairs

Me:"happy?"

Clyde:"still not much of a different but it'll do"

Me:"yeah whatever"

I look at Chris

Me:"shall we get on with it?"

Chris:"yeah sure"

I take out my maths book a exam pad,pencil and calculator.

We get on with some work, this dude is really hot as he is stupid, he just doesn't understand a thing no matter how many times I explain to him

Me(irritated):"come on Chris we've been through the same thing over and over again...at least try get one thing right!"

He looks at me with a bit of a frown

Me(sighs):"I'm sorry Chris....

Chris:"I think I should get going"

Me:"No... I'm sorry I didn't mean to shout, and I didn't mean what I said"

Chris:"maths is just not my thing, thanks for trying to help...I'll call my driver to come pick me up"

Me:"come on Chris don't say that, I don't know what got over me, I'm sorry"

Chris:"it's fine... I know, I'm stupid, I'm not as clever as you and I'll never be... my dad reminds me everytime "

Me:"Chris I really didn't mean it...you might not be the cleverest or the smartest but everyone needs a little push before they can get it right, and besides,you have a very special talent and that's rugby, you can't be good at everything"

Chris:"yeah.... but you seem to be good at everything, I mean you get the highest marks in every class"

Me:"yeah, but there is one thing you better than me at

Chris:"what's that?"

Me:"rugby...oh and soccer and basketball, you even the captain of the rugby team...now I can never out beat that"

He smiles at me

Chris:"you right about that"

I laugh

Chris:"you have a beautiful smile"

Me(blushing):"thanks"

He moves closer, I watch him as his face gets closer my eyes are glued to his pinkish lips, he's now only an inch away as our noses touch

"Aghm kagham"

Someone clears his throat we quickly move away from each other

I turn and find Clyde standing behind us

Me:"oh...hey there"

Clyde:"it's getting late"

Me:"oh but we were....

Chris:"no, he's right, it's late, I should get going"

Clyde:"good, your driver is waiting for you outside"

I help him pack his books then accompany him out

We get to the car

Chris:"guess I'll see you tomorrow"

Me(smiling):"I guess so"

He stares into my eyes for a while he gets closer and hugs me unexpectedly I hug him back, he moves his head and we look at each other,he's looking at my lips I move my face closer he also moves closer our lips touch,he pulls me bottom lip and we share a kiss.

I pull out

Me:"goodnight"

Chris:"goodnight"

He gets in the car and it drives off

I get back to the house
Clyde is standing by the door
I stand in front of him
Me:"may I come in?"
Clyde:"brother?"
Me:"huh?"
Clyde:"is that what I am to you?"
Me:..."
Clyde:"hm?"
Me:"uhm....yeah.. I mean you too young to be my father"
He Chuckles
Clyde:"so I see...so you kiss all your "friends" "
He makes inverted commas with his hands
Me:"no, just this one, may I come in now?"
He looks at me for a while then finally makes way for me to come in
Me:"should I prepare you something to eat before I go to bed?"
Clyde:"I'm good"
He heads up stairs I switch off the lights and head to my room I find him sitting on my bed
I go sit on the bed
Me:"something wrong?"
Clyde:"yeah"
Me:"what's wrong?"
He looks at me for a while
Clyde:"I.. I mean.. no.. nothing is wrong... I just wanted to give you this"
He hands me a pretty box with a nice ribbon
I get excited
Me:"what's this?"
Clyde:"open it"
I untie the ribbon, and open the box
It's two framed pictures, the first one is a picture of my mom, dad and I.
Me:"oh my god...Wow..Clyde, how did you... this is...it's beautiful"
I look at him he's half smiling
I look back at the box and look at the other pictures, it's a picture of him and I on Christmas day
at the mall, standing next to the Christmas tree
I laugh at our pose, he looks like a different person here
Me:" the best day of my life"
Clyde:"mine too"
Me:"thank you so much Clyde, this is..it's the best gift ever"
Clyde:"I'm glad you like it"
Me:"I love it...wait, why am I getting a gift? Is it my birthday or something?"
Clyde:"no...it's just something I thought of...it's not a gift, well it's kind of but I just...
Me(smiles):"well thank you for the kind thoughts"
He smiles
Me:"I'll forever keep these close to my heart"
He gets up
Clyde:"goodnight Tee"
Me:"goodnight cly"

He walks out and closes the door

I put my framed photos nicely on either sides of my bed, I stare at the picture of my parents, I wonder how he got it, but I don't care I just love it so much. I tuck myself in bed and hug it till I blank out

I feel the bed moving I get up and jump on the person and strangle him

Me:"who are you and who sent you!!"

He tries to get me off I press his his neck harder

Me:"I'm gonna kill you... Clyde!!! Clyde!!"

he moves his hand and switches on the lamp.

I quickly let go of him and get off him

Me:"oh my goodness Clyde! What are you doing here!?..

He coughs

Me:"are you okay...did I hurt you?"

I rub his neck

Clyde:" you almost killed me...damn,where do you get so much strength?"

I laugh

Me:"what are you doing here in the middle of the night anyway?"

He adjusts himself properly and gets in the covers

Clyde:"I had a nightmare"

Me:"nightmare?"

I get inside the covers

Clyde:"yes a horrible scary nightmare"

Me:"Really? What was it about?"

He gets closer

Clyde:"this big ugly monster was chasing me and I tried running but I couldn't and it was getting closer and closer my legs were sinking deeper and deeper into the ground....it's like the ground was swallowing me I couldn't move... until, until it was right next to me and.....

I look at him in anticipation

Clyde:"and it was right next to me when it finally..."

He grabs my shoulder roughly

Clyde:"Gets me by my shoulders!"

I scream out loud he laughs at me

Me:"don't scare me like that"

Clyde:"now you see why I can't sleep in that room by myself?"

Me:"the great O'Brien is scared?"

Clyde:"yes..yes he's peeing his pants scared...and needs to be held"

He gets closer and holds me,my breath hitches as my body becomes weak

We sink in the covers and I turn my back on him, I hold his arms that are around me

Me:"I can't believe you just admitted to be peeing your pants scared"

Clyde:"don't you ever tell a soul"

I giggle and we talk all night till we dozed off

.

.

.

.

.
. .
. .
. .

The kids have gone to bed, it's almost midnight and my wife is still not home yet, I'm getting worried cause she's not picking up my calls actually it just takes me straight to voicemail. I switched off all the lights and I'm sitting in the dark lounge drinking whiskey to calm my worried nerves.

She always reports if she'll be working late but not today, I hope she's okay, if she's not back by midnight, I'm tracking her.

I hear the door opening, that must be her, I hear her footsteps getting closer she's tiptoeing towards the lift.

Me:"where you coming from?"

She stands still with her back facing me

Silence

Me:"where are you coming from?"

She slowly turns to look at me

Her:"I.. I..

Me:"you you what?"

She sighs... okay she's hiding something

Me:"talk!"

She gets a fright

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 30

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

💎LISA💎

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Me:"love bug...you scared me"

Quinton:"oh I'm sorry sweetie that wasn't my intentions, so tell me love, where the fuck you coming from?"

Me(sighs):"okay... I thought you would be sleeping by now and we'd talk tomorrow morning"

Quinton:"well, lucky for you, I'm wide awake, so we can talk right now"

I walk up to him and sit on the couch

Me:"I had back to back meetings today and a whole lotta work to do"

Quinton:"what made it so hard for you to inform me like you always do?"

Me:"I meant to tell you but it slipped my mind, forgive me please"

He looks into my eyes as if he's searching for something

Quinton:"what aren't you telling me?"

Me:"well there's this big case I was asked to help with, it's one of the biggest clients and it's a big case we'll be dealing with, so now I'll be required to work extra hours with the Attorney"

Quinton:"and who's this Attorney you'll be working extra hours with?"

Me:.....

Quinton:"Troy?"

Me:.....

Quinton:"I don't like repeating myself.... cause I might scare you again"

Me:"yes, it's Troy"

He looks into my eyes once more,his rainbow eyes now totally grey,with disappointment on his forehead

Me:"it's just work Quinton,and I promise you baby, you have nothing to worry about"

Quinton:"nothing to worry about?....let's see, you want me to believe that you rejected my lunch date earlier to have lunch with one of the people whom disgust you the most instead of me, the whole day I never even popped up on your mind just to inform me about your work plans, then you come into this house sneaking in with hopes that I'd be asleep and you won't have to explain anything... nothing to worry about? The fuck I doubt it"

Me:"Quinton please just trust me"

Quinton:"where exactly are you coming from?"

Me:"okay, earlier,Kayla didn't ask to join me for lunch, I offered Troy to join me but when lunch time came it was way too busy in the office and ended up not having lunch,so we knocked off work pretty late and I was starving, Troy suggested we get something to eat first before we go home so we stopped by a restaurant and had something to eat,the conversations were flowing and before I knew it,time flew by... that's were I'm coming from"

Quinton:"you came home late because of Troy.....and it had nothing to do with work"

Me:"yeah but....

Quinton:"I've heard enough,I'm going to bed"

He stands up and walks away, I watch him getting the lift and heading up.

I sigh and lay back on the couch holding my head.

I really didn't think the late lunch would take that long,now this is giving Quinton other ideas,now it'll be hard to convince him nothing is going on between Troy and I.

I shouldn't have lied to him about the lunch, Great! I've ruined things again, I'm always messing up,but it's not like I slept with the guy... Argh what am I saying, the fact is that I hurt his feelings. Troy is my boss, I really don't know how this is going to work.

I close my eyes

Me(sighs):"Our Father, Who art in Heaven, hallowed be Thy name; Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven. Give us this day our daily bread; and forgive us our trespasses as we forgive those who trespass against us; and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.for thy is thy kingdom thy power and thy glory, forever and ever. Amen"

I take off my shoes and bra,then take out my laptop and get on with some work.

Triii triii

I switch off my alarm, today is Saturday so no classes but I got work.

I look around looks like I fell asleep on the couch, I have a blanket over me he must've put a blanket over me last night while I was sleeping.

I get up and quickly go freshen up, I asked one of the helpers to prepare soft porridge while I get ready for work.

I'm now dressed up so I wake up Quinton.

I sit on the bed and Pat him softly

Me:"Q ...wake up love bug"

Quinton:"mmmh"

Me:"I made porridge for you"

He fiddles on the bed then sits up

Me:"good morning"

Quinton:"morning"

Me:"about last night....."

Quinton:"don't sweat it....let's forget about it"

Me:"I feel like I owe you an apology at least"

Quinton:"you said you prepared soft porridge?"

He asks getting up and putting on pants

Me:"Uhm yeah"

He's already washing his face, I leave him to finish up while I go dish up for him.

I bump into one of the helpers I asked to prepare the porridge

Me:"did you put salt?"

Her:"yes mam"

Me:"okay good, thanks hey"

She walks away I dish up for Quinton and place it on the table, he makes his way in and sits by the table.

Me:"would you like butter or peanut butter?"

Quinton:"butter and milk please"

I put the butter and sugar for him, he mixes for himself as I leave the warm milk next to him to pour for himself.

Me:"okay, I'll see you later then"

Quinton:"you not going to eat first?"

Me:"oh... no, I have to get going now"

Quinton:"you always in a rush"

Me:"you want me to eat with you?"

Quinton:"I'd love that"

Me:"okay, I'm sure I have ten minutes to spare"

I check the time in my wrist watch,

Shit I'm late

Me:"ohh make that five....four"

Quinton:"just go"

Me:"No,I'll eat quickly"

Quinton:"you can grab something in the way...go"

He looks down at his plate and plays with his food, now I feel bad

"Mamaa! Mamaa!"

That's Kyle coming down with Mah Vic carrying him

Me:"hey baby"

I kiss him but don't take him

Me:"bye baby"

I walk towards the door, I hear Kyle crying for me

"(Crying)mamaaaaaa!!"

I get in the car and speed off

My heart sinks, I miss my babies,just spending time with them, ever since after the holidays I've been so caught up with work and school, it's either I come back and they asleep or I'm too tired and sleepy to play with them.

After this big case ,I'm asking for leave at work just to get some time with my family.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

👑QUINTON👑

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

I lost my appetite after taking one spoon of that horrible porridge, it's either Lisa didn't take her time making that or she wasn't the one who cooked it. I don't know what's up her, she's just too invested in her work and school, not that I'm complaining I mean I want the best for her, and I respect her dreams but I would appreciate it if she also made us part of her priorities and include me in her dreams, I feel like I'm out of the picture, but that's just Lisa being focused, she's always been that way, but what makes me uncomfortable is Troy, when it comes to men who are interested in her she becomes totally blind.

Then there's Mncedish on the other hand who's becoming a nuisance, I tried hacking him, everything but its like he doesn't exist so I'm guessing he's changed his identity and everything so now I'll have to search him practically as in I have to send out my guys, well, the little that's left of them and hire the best PI's in the country, I'll find him within five days, that's what I'm sure of, I must admit he's really gotten good at this, he's taken out most of my men and has made all our drug deals unsuccessful. When I get my hands on him, I'm gonna kill that dog.

Yonela told us she thinks she saw him at a garage but she thinks she was just hallucinating, I think she really did see him.

I'm now getting ready for work, I mean the legal side of my work, for those who don't know I own my own company, it's quite.. okay...it's very successful, it's only two years old but you'd swear it's been running for twenty years, well I did get alot of help from the connections I have and the money I make from the family business made it easy for my company to grow rapidly in a short period of time.

I'm all dressed up, I hate dressing up in suits but that is the dress code, I do look extremely dashing handsome in it if I say so myself, but I'm just more of a Jean and golf shirt kinda guy. I puff some cologne then head downstairs. I find Mah Vic feeding the kids I walk up to them.

Me:"if it isn't Mr cuddle muffins and princess Thumbelina"

I kiss them all over their faces.

Me:" bye bye my babies, daddy will be back later...do you want me to get you anything?"

Kyle:"fdshdskjfyvkj bbbrrrrr dadadadadaada, mama mama"

Me:"you want me to get you mama?"

Kyle:"mama mama mama"

He keeps saying that

Me:"okay I'll get you mama, and you Thumbelina? You want anything?"

She keeps quiet and keeps smiling

Me:"I love you too....Mah Vic,I'll see you later"

Mah:"I'll see you, should I cook dinner for you again or Mrs O'Brien will be back early?"

Me:" please do cook, I'm loving your meals even more now"

Mah:"then I'll do so"

I kiss my pumpkins once more then run out, I speed off to work.

My phone has been going off non stop, the office is really busy as always. I get to the office and I'm already crowded

"Sir Mr Berwick made an appointment for Monday, will you be free"

Me:"schedule him"

"You have meetings with the board of directors later on at one o'clock sharp"

Me:"got it"

"your new PA is already in your office, you asked HR manager to appoint one for you"

Me:"yes I did"

I finally get to my office and everyone leaves me in peace, I close the door and lean against it closing my eyes as I take a deep breathe

"Rough morning?"

I open my eyes to be met by a weirdly dressed woman

I walk towards my desk and take a sit

I arrange my laptop and files nicely in the desk, I look up at her and she's still standing,this woman really looks awkward, she has sloppy long hair I don't think she took time to comb it, she's wearing a oversized floral shirt and formal long brown pants,she's also wearing really big nerdy glasses. Is this some sick joke? Who would hire someone like this? Let alone let her inside the building even worse My Office!!?

Me:"you know what...don't bother sitting down, please go home"

Her:"oh... you don't need me today?"

Me:"No... I don't need you, ever"

Her:"but... I I got the job"

Me:"well now you don't, please, I have alot of work ahead of me"

Her:"if I may ask sir... Why am I being dismissed?"

Me:"because I don't need you"

Her:"but it was informed that you need a PA"

Me:"look at yourself,then take a good look at me....do you think you are fit to be my PA? Go with me to meetings, fly with me to different countries and meet high class people..do you really think you are fit?"

Her:"sir I really need this job, might not be the most presentable of people but this is all I have, I promise I will be the best PA you've ever had, look, I already know that you have an important meeting at one o'clock this afternoon, and you also have an appointment scheduled for tomorrow with an important client, I can draw up your diary neatly and orderly to keep you updated with all your important an not so important errands... please sir, give me a chance, I have a family I need to feed, they were already so excited when I told them I got this job after a long time of suffering, it would be really heartbreaking to go back home and tell them I lost it before it even began"

I look at her for a while, I think about all the times I've helped needy people and they betrayed

me, and it's always women, it's either they become jealous of my life or they end up seducing me.

I'm tired of helping people, people are snakes, this woman sounds very convincing, but I don't even know her, although she looks harmless.

Me: "I'm sorry, but you'll have to look elsewhere"

Tears fall from her eyes

Her: "I understand, I wish I had better clothes to impress you, it's just so hard looking after myself when I have a five year old daughter .. fight....fighting..(she breaks down)... I'm sorry, I'll leave"

She takes her purse and walks out.

Fighting? Fighting what?

It's the last time I'm falling for these sobby stories, they the reason for the mess Lisa and I have been through.

I call the HR manager

"Mr O'Brien"

Me: "get to my office...now"

I drop the call and continue with some work.

A few minutes later there's a knock at my door

Him: "boss"

Me: "I give you a simple instruction and you fail to follow...where's the PA I asked for?"

Him: "but Sir I thought she was right here this morning waiting for you in your office"

Me: "that woman? That looks like you just picked out from the street, are you fucking kidding me?"

Him: "No boss, I'll get you someone else, it's just, I thought her academic record was good"

Me: "you useless, I'll get a PA on my own since you failed...maybe I'll get a new HR manager too"

Him: "No no, please, I'm so sorry it won't happen again"

Me: "damn right it won't happen again cause you fired"

He holds his head

Him: "please boss, please, I'm sorry it won't happen again, please don't fire me"

Me: "get out of my office, and get me a new selection of people I will interview on my own"

Him: "but Sir, I can't do that"

Me: "why not?"

Him: " you just fired me"

Me: "well now I'm unfiring you...Get to work!"

Him: "oh thank you thank you"

He runs out my office.

I chuckle and shake my head as I continue with my work.

.
. .
. .
. .

☹️CLYDE ☺️

.
. .
. .
. .

Me:"are you sure about what you just said?"

"Yes sir, I saw him checking in the Reef hotel, I got all his details and everything"

Me:"let's meet up, I need you to tell me more"

"Yes boss, time and place?"

Me:"downtown, at our usual spot, twelve o'clock"

"I'll be there"

Me:"good"

I drop the call.

Finally,we got the bastard,now we can be ten steps ahead of him like it's always been,I must say,he's gotten really good,he must've been training,but looks like he didn't train enough.

I get up and go get myself ready, I'll call an Uber for Thando today,I can't fetch her.

The day goes by fast I, I have everything I need to know about Liam, turns out during his hide out he met a girl and they have a new born baby boy but he's been keeping them secret to protect them from this dangerous game he's playing, looks like he wasn't smart enough.

After sorting out other errands of my businesses I'm now on my way home, I check the time, it's 22:30pm it's pretty late I'm sure Thando has long fallen asleep. I'm not sure what is it with me and that girl, she's exposing me, the person I've went through hell to hide under all this hardcoreness, the person who I've been protecting all these years, the happy playful caring guy who loved easily and was easily loved, I've been to hell and back trying to be the kind of person everyone knows me as today,the kind of person I'm really not, I can't let her, I can't allow her to expose,to destroy what I've worked so damn hard to achieve.

I refuse!

I get home and the lights are off,I'm guessing she's fast asleep, I lock then switch on the lights, the house is still as I left it,some of my paperwork that I left on the table is still messed up on the table, the dishes haven't been touched, the pots are clean no cooking has been done,this is so unlike Thando, my house is a mess! I hate mess...dirty dishes, fuck I never leave dishes to stay dirty for this long, damn damn damn....

Me:"Thando!"

This girl is testing me, I don't even usually leave the house a mess like I did today....but just this once I had an emergency,she decides not to do her chores,at least just wash the fucken dishes!

I get to her room and bang on her door

Me:"Thando,wake up...what's up with you today? You better have a very good excuse young lady to why the house is still as messy as I left it..or I swear to God..."

I open the door and switch on the light,my eyes wonder around her room as her bed is still neat and lean and there's no sign of her

Me:"Thando!?"

Her school bag is not where it stays,no sign of dirty uniform or school shoes

Me:"She never came home"

My heart skips a beat,where the fuck could she be at fucken eleven o'clock at night!?

My phone beeps I take it out of my pocket and take a look at it, as I open the message

"Y'all took away what I loved, I'll take away what y'all love,one by one... starting with her *photo**"

I open the photo, she's still in her school uniform all tied up

Me (angrily throws the phone against the wall):"That son of a bitch!!"

.
. .
.

.
. .
LISA

Me:"it looks like to me this man's riches all lied in the hands of his wife"

Troy:"noo but this woman was nothing before Mr Robinson came into her life"

I sigh

Me:"I don't know anymore, this guy obviously hid his tracks or whoever killed his wife"

Troy:"looks like we'll have to do more investigation, did you ask Quinton?"

Me:"I couldn't...things aren't...it's just not....(sighs)...I'll ask him when the time is right"

Troy:"oh.... okay"

Me(yawns):"damn, excuse me"

He chuckles

Me:"what's the time anyway?"

I check the time

Me:"shit! It's almost midnight Troy!!"

I get up from the floor as we were working on the short coffee table in his office while sitting on the floor.

Troy:"I didn't realize it was this late"

Me:"oh God, Quinton must be so worried, I told him I'd be home by nine latest"

I say putting on my shoes, I take out my phone and it's off

Me:"great, no wonder it has been quiet, the battery is off, just great"

Troy:"I'm sure he'll understand, you did explain how important this is right?"

Me:"yeah I did, but still....Argh I need to get going"

Troy:"I'm also right behind you"

We pack up and walk out, more like March out till we reach the basement and go to our cars

Troy:"goodnight Lisa"

I open my car then look up at him

Me:"goodnight Troy"

I get in my car and drive off.

I get home and the lights are off, I head upstairs, I first pass my babies rooms and check up on them, they sound asleep, after kissing each one I head up to our room, I find him fast asleep, I first take a shower, before heading back to bed.

I get in the covers I snuggle close to him and wrap my arms around him. He shifts uncomfortably causing me to let go of him then he moves to the far end of the bed.

Me (whispering):"goodnight love bug, I love you"

I also turn my back on him as I was about to close my eyes I hear his phone ring, he shuffles a bit before answering it

Quinton:"what the fuck?"

...

Quinton:"what!? When!?"

...

Quinton:"calm down,I'll be right there"
H hangs up as he gets off the bed and starts dressing up
Me:"what's going on?"
He puts on his sweatpants and jacket
Quinton:"Thando has been kidnapped"
Me (shocked):"what!?!... I'm coming with"
Quinton:"No..stay here,I'll tell you everything"
He grabs his car keys and walks towards the door, he stops by the door and turns to look at me
Quinton:"I love you too"
We maintain eye contact for a while before he runs out

HAPPILY EVER AFTER???

S2

Insert 31

-
-
-
-
-

💎LISA💎

-
-
-
-
-

"Bub"

"Wake up Liss"

I slowly open my eyes

Quinton:"good morning"

Me:"good morning"

Quinton:"slept well?"

My heart skips a beat

Me:"Thando!"

Quinton:"relax,she's fine"

Me:"fine? How? What happened?"

Quinton:"we found her all tied up in some warehouse, but there wasn't a single scratch on her, although we couldn't catch Mncendy andy, looks like the basturd knew we were coming, it's seems as though he's trained and prepared himself well for this stupid revenge of his"

Me:"how did you know where he was keeping her?"

Quinton:"Clyde has a tracker inside her body"

Me:"what? How do you put a tracker inside ones body?"

Quinton:"there are ways"

Me:"is she aware of this?"

Quinton:"of cause not"

Me:"wow....do I have a tracker in my body?"

Quinton:"of cause not"

He makes a face

Me:"Quinton"

He laughs

Quinton:"I'm kidding, you don't have a tracker in you"

Me:"you better be telling the truth cause I'll go check"

Quinton:"but a tracker in you wouldn't be such a bad thing, would it?"

Me:"it wouldn't,but I don't want it"

Quinton:"I'd never put anything in your body that you not comfortable with"

Me:"good, now kiss me"

He leans closer and we kiss I pull out

Me:"you need to find Mncedisi fast Quinton"

Quinton:"give me a few days,he's days are counted"

Me:"drama is the last thing we need right now"

Quinton:"you working today?"

Me:"No"

Quinton:"good, I was thinking since it's Sunday today we go out with the kids to the mall maybe and just get some fresh air and have a bit of fun,it's been a while"

Me:"yeah you right, it's been a while, but I'm on call today,so I might be called if I'm needed....."

Quinton (interrupts):"hold it right there, you mean to tell me you will be working even on Sundays?"

Me:"looks like it"

Quinton:"are you still a part time employee or what? Cause the way you've been going on, seems as though you full time,or am I missing something?"

Me:"it's part time,it's just that since we...."

Quinton (interrupts):"I don't care about no fucken big client,I'm sure Troy has worked with many big clients during his years of work and they've been successfull without your help,all of a sudden he can't deal with a big case without your help, are you the only paralegal at that firm?"

Me:"No..but.."

Quinton:"No! There's no but...are you forgetting that you a mother,there are kids that you should be raising,but you hardly ever home,are you forgetting you are married? You have a husband that also needs your attention, okay fine let's put that aside.. Lisa, you are a full time student, you doing your most important year,your last year,when are you planning on focusing on that? Cause by the looks of things you too caught up with this job of yours that you forgetting you need straight As in order to be officially hired as a full time employee at that precious firm of yours, mmh remember that?"

His words hit home I look down and play with my fingers

Quinton:"now I've told you this more than a thousand times, I respect your dreams and goals, but I'm telling you this now...you need to get your priorities straight or you might loose way more than just yourself"

Me:"I'll quit then"

Quinton:"that's not what I meant, you love this job and it obviously means alot to you, but all I'm saying is don't shut the rest of your life out"

Me:"but you also mean alot to me,my babies they mean alot to me and so does my work,it's all I've ever dreamed about, back in school,I remember all I ever wanted was to become a successful lawyer and become a career driven woman ,not married,no kids, I wanted to make it

on my own, independence...but God had other plans for me, and now, I'm confused,what should I do Quinton? Quit everything I've ever dreamed of and focus on my family and the people close to me? Since it seems as though I can't share my focus,what should I do love bug?"

We gaze into each other's eyes, his hand reaches for my cheek as he caresses it gently

Quinton:"you'll figure it out...just know that I'll be right here waiting for you once you've figured it out"

He gets closer and sits next to me then pulls me into his embrace,his natural scent fills me up,power.

Me:"let's get ready,so we can go to the mall"

Quinton:"took the words right out my mouth"

I laugh as we get up,he makes his way in the bathroom

Me:"heeeey...not so fast Mister"

He turns to look at me

Me:"this bed is not going to make itself"

He groans loudly shaking his shoulders,I laugh

Quinton:"do we have to?"

Me:"iJob yiJob sbari"

He chuckles then rolls his eyes

Me:"don't you eyeball me child"

We make the bed, which took quite some time with Q keep pushing me on the bed and chasing me around tickling me,not to mention him jumping on the bed after we had just finished making it, I swear that gets on my last nerve at times, although he will never know how angry that made me because I kinda joined him too and jumped on the bed when he did it...you can't blame me though as the saying goes,if you can't beat them, join them.

We now taking a bath,after the bath we prepared the kids to get ready,it takes about three hours to get out of this house

We now on our way to the mall, laughing at Quinton's goofy jokes and my stupid not funny but funny jokes .

Quinton:"ncwoo you still suck at this joke thingy"

I laugh

Me:"mxm, at least my Kylie and Rae get my jokes, right babies?"

I look back at them in their seats they smiling

Me:"you see they can't even hide their cute gums"

Quinton:"yeah whatever, so bub"

Me:"yes my lumlums"

He smiles blushing

Quinton:"lumlums? Sounds yummy"

I laugh at his goofy face

Quinton:"I should call you my yumyums"

I can't stop laughing,this guy is crazy for real people

Quinton:"anyway yumyums,when are we expanding our family"

Me:"as soon as I turn thirty"

Quinton (laughs):"you are so full of jokes hey"

I laugh

Me:"I'm dead serious,two kids are a very huge family already,then we'll have our last born when I turn thirty"

Quinton:"now you know I want a big family, and these two are nothing close to that, I want my

cheaper by the dozen family"

Me:"heee there you go loosing your mind again...I guess you will just have to keep dreaming
lumlums"

Quinton:"oh come on yumyums it'll be fun,I promise I'll do most of the babysitting if necessary"
I look at him as if he just lost his mind which he has

Quinton:"come on...think about the bedroom fun huh huh?"

He plays with his eyebrows up and down naughtily making me burst into laughter

Me:"please stop"

Quinton:"Come on yumyums... I'll make sure it extra yummy"

He winks,I'm in stitches

Me:"oh what the hell, let's make sure we need a very huge family car"

Quinton:"now that's the spirit...up top"

We high five

Quinton (singing):"more sex,more sex,more sex oh yeah more sex"

I'm finished with laughter

Me:"Quinton! There are kids here you know"

Quinton:"oh please they have no idea what I'm saying"

I look at them and they are fast asleep

Me:"oh well...(singing)...more sex, more sex, more sex....

Q&I:"more sex oh yeah more sex, more sex!!"

We burst into laughter and carry on talking about other not so important stuff.

we finally get to the mall, we do alot of shopping going in and out of shops buying alot of cute
and unnecessary things for the kids.

We now seated at a restaurant waiting for our food.

Me:"Q, do you think we spoiling our kids?"

Quinton:"oh I don't think so, we are, actually you are, you spoiling them rotten, I mean look at all
the stuff you bought, they'll grow out of these things in no days time"

Me:"okay, you don't have to rub it in, it's just all these things are so adorable"

My phone beeps,I look at it,it's a reminder that I should be at work later today from Troy.

Quinton:"I wonder what exactly I missed about going shopping with you? Cause damn girl, this
is exhausting,now I remember why I didn't like it so much"

I reply the message then focus back on Quinton

Me:"but you missed it"

He side smiles

Quinton:"yeah I did, I missed you"

I smile at him for a while,my phone beeps it's another message it's an update on the case we
working with, I reply, then focus back on him.

Me:"I remember a time when I was so cautious about what we spent our money on and
calculated the costs of everything"

Quinton:"I remember that, when you made sure in just one thousand Rand, we could get
clothes and the groceries needed in the house,no matter how tough and rough it got you made
sure there's always something warm for us to eat"

My phone beeps, I look at it, I reply the message, I laugh a bit Troy sent me a joke. I look back
up at him and notice his bored face

Me(chuckles):"sorry about that....Who thought that in just a matter of time we'd be here and I'd
be going all wild blowing your bank account"

I laugh, I look up at him and he's just faintly smiling

Me:"what?"

Quinton:"I miss you though"

Me:"what do you mean? I'm right here?"

Quinton:"I know, and I can't help but watch you slowly distancing from me"

Me(worried):"you scaring me now? What have I done"

Quinton:"you think you still the same old Lisa?"

Me:"what is this about? Is it about me spending your money more now? Are you saying I've changed to being a golddigger? Cause if that's...

Quinton (interrupts):"I never said anything of such, like come on,we married,my money is your money vise versa no one is golddigging anyone....this is not even about the money,I don't care about that... I care about you"

Me:"I don't have time for this,where is this food anyway!?"

I lift my hand up the waitress comes to us

Waitress:"yes mam"

Me:"yes mam what?...where's the food we ordered a half hour ago?"

Waitress:"it's a bit busy today mam so your order....."

Me:"I don't give a damn about that, I'm hungry now, y'all should hire more stuff if y'all short and stop being stingy with these scarce jobs...if I can't get quick service I can go somewhere else where I'll get way better service"

Waitress:"I'll go get your food right away mam"

Me:"don't bother with mine,I lost my appetite"

Waitress:"please mam, I'll make sure your food comes now now"

Me:"I said I lost my appetite,are you deaf?"

Quinton:"you don't need to be so rude bub"

Me:"are you defending her?"

Quinton:"no...but you are making a scene...(looks at the waitress)...lady,please do carry on with our order,we can wait and also bring hers too.. okay?"

Waitress:"yes sir, coming right up,were yall offered something to drink"

Me:"No.. that should've been the first thing we got but....."

He holds my hand on top of the table

Quinton:"two appletizers would be nice thanks"

Waitress:"I'll be right back"

Quinton:"thank you"

She walks away

Me:"Nxa...all they do is hurry up for the white people here, look at that table they came after us but their mouths are full...bloody racists!"

Quinton:"sshhhhh Lisa..(firm tone clenched teeth)...keep your voice down"

Me:"mxm"

I fold my arms and sit back

Quinton:"what's wrong with you?"

Me:.....

Quinton:"you see what I mean? This is the kind of person you've become, this is not the Lisa I know and fell in love with"

Me:"you saying you don't love me anymore?"

Quinton:"that's not what I'm saying but..."

Me:"well if you hate me so much why don't you just divorce me? I'll gladly prepare the papers for you!"

Quinton:"keep. It. Down....I can't believe you just said that...why are you even fighting me? Why can't we have a peaceful conversation?"

My phone beeps it's a message from Troy he needs me in thirty minutes

I reply him telling him I'll be right there.

I look up at Quinton he has the bored expression again

Me:"I have to go"

Waitress:"your food and drinks"

She puts them on the table

Quinton:"where you off to?"

Me:"needed at work"

He looks at the waitress

Quinton:"thanks"

She walks away

Quinton:"can't you atleast eat your food first then I'll take you"

I look at the kids who are seated on the babies chairs next to our table

Me:"you can eat and also eat mine for me,then take yourself and the kids home, I'll call an Uber"

I get up and take my purse and phone

He shakes his head

Quinton:"what time will you be home?"

Me:"I should be back by 20:00pm on the dot"

Quinton:"really?"

Me:"I promise"

Quinton:"I guess I'll see you then"

I kiss his forehead

Me:"see you"

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

👑QUINTON👑

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

She sways her ass and leaves

Me (whispers):"I love you too"

I don't know if it's just me but I feel like I'm the only person putting effort in this marriage, is Lisa falling out of love with me? That question has been ringing in my mind for the past few weeks. I can't lose her, I'll do anything in my power to remind her of how much we love each other, great, now I sound obsessed or desperate.

I lost my appetite too, I call the waitress and settled the bill. I take my kids and stroll through the mall pushing them in their two in one pram.

As we walking I notice a little girl standing near a window of a toy shop, she looks five or six, looks like she's crying but silently. My curiosity gets the best out of me and I approach her.

Me:"hey, how are you"

She looks at me and doesn't say a word

Me:"smart...never talk to strangers"

She never nods

Me (chuckles):"but I just wanted to help,I notice you crying and it broke my heart seeing such a beautiful princess like you crying,I wanted to know what could be wrong with this gorgeous princess here"

She looks back at the window and points at the big teddy of then all

Me:"you want a teddy?"

She nods

Me:"mmmh...let me see what I can do"

I walk into the shop pushing the stroller, I buy the teddy for her.

I give it to her

Me:"there you go Miss...??"

Her:"Tracey"

Me:"Tracey, beautiful name, Mr teddy here is lucky to have you"

She attacks me with a hug, hugging my legs, I crouch down to her level and give her a proper hug

Tracey:"thank you so much!"

Me:"you welcome...hey,who you here with anyway?"

Tracey:"my mom, but she's at work"

Me:"she works around here?"

She nods

Tracey:"yes"

Me:"well,it's not safe here,let's get you back to her shall we?"

She nods

Me:"lead the way Tray tray"

She giggles and leads us to outside the mall,we head towards a carwash.

It's something like a strip carwash if I may call it, where sexy ladies dressed in bikinis wash cars, I used to like washing my car here a while back

Me: your mom works here?"

Tracey:"yes,there she is"

She points at one Hella sexy brunette with the sexiest body there, she spots us and walks towards us

Shit! Don't stare Quinton, look at the face,not the legs stupid! Face!

She finally gets to us

Her:"Tracey! Where did you run off to and caused trouble this time?"

Tracey:"I was just looking at the toy store mommy and I met this guy"

Did this child just call me "this guy"?

I look at her mother

Her(surprised):"Mr O'Brien?"

How does she know me?

I look at her confused

Her:wait,maybe you'll recognize me if I do this"

She ties her hair then takes her glasses and puts them on, I can't believe my eyes,it's the woman who I rejected at work yesterday

Her:"remember me now?"

Me:"ohh,oh yeah"

Tracey:"Mr O'Brien? This is the dooshbag guy that didn't give you a job?"
Me(Chuckles):"the dooshbag guy?"
Her:"Tracey...shush, don't mind her... I was just angry and I said some stuff.... about you, but it doesn't matter now"
Me:"oh...okay"
They laugh at me
Me:"so I know that your daughter is Tracey, and I know this might make me more of a dooshbag, but who is Tracey's mom's name again?"
Tracey:"you don't even know her name! You were right mom, he is a scumb...."
Her(interrupts):"Tracey!...(clenched teeth)..shut. Up. Please"
I laugh
Me:"that's okay, I understand where she's coming from"
Her:"I'm Stacey Morgens by the way"
Me:"Stacey and Tracey...hey that rhymes"
They laugh
Me:"Uhm look Stacey, I will make things right,the way I dismissed you wasn't cool nor professional... so I'll tell my HR to rehire you tomorrow"
Stacey:"really!?"
Me:"it's the least I can do"
Stacey:"thank you so much,and I have your office number incase you forget"
We laugh
Me:"here also take my phone number,just incase, I do get very busy in the office and tend to forget some things"
Stacey:"oh okay...there you go"
She gives me her phone and I dial my number in it
Tracey:"will you save it as dooshbag? Or dooshes?"
Stacey:"Tracey, stop!"
I can't stop laughing
Me:"I didn't know miss cry baby here is one babble mouth"
We laugh
Tracey:"you a cool dooshbag,cause you bought me this huge teddy bear"
We laugh
Stacey:"wow that's one huge ass teddy...did you say thank you?"
She nods
Me:"followed by a big hug actually"
Stacey:"well that's good"
Me:"you usually work here?"
She looks down embarrassed
Stacey:"yeah, sometimes, I have other peace jobs here and there, I mean I'm just trying to put food in my baby's tummy"
Me:"that's understandable"
She nods her eyes land down on my babies
She bends down at them, I try not to look at her curves
Stacey:"are these your kids?"
Me:"yeah those are my world"
Stacey:"they so cute...yeah y'all so adorable, yes you are,and you and you"
They giggling as she plays with them

Me:"they seem to like you too as much as they like Tracey"

She giggles as she stands up

Stacey:"you have beautiful kids"

Me:"and you a beautiful daughter...you shouldn't allow her to wonder the mall alone, anything could happen, kids their age are very targeted by criminals"

Stacey:"she just runs off this one, but you right, I'll keep a closer eye on her, it'll be better once she starts school"

Tracey:"what's the use of starting school if I'm

Stacey (interrupts):"Now Tracey,we've talked about this"

My phone rings, I answer

Me:"Bub"

"Love bug...are y'all home yet?"

Me:"no we still at the mall"

"Oh great, please buy me chocolates,lots and lots of them, pleeeeeease"

Me(chuckles):"okay will do"

"You the best... I love loving you"

Me:"I love loving you too"

I hang up

Me:"we should get going"

Stacey:"okay!.. thanks again,for the teddy"

Me:"no biggie...bye Tracey"

Tracey:"bye doosh...I mean bye..."

Me:"you can call me Quinton"

Stacey:"that's uncle Quinton to you"

Tracey:"bye uncle Quinton"

Me (chuckles):"bye bye"

I head back inside the mall to buy the chocolates.. I also get some roses and a few things I want to cook for dinner..yep I said it..I'll cook well I'll try, I wasn't really blessed when it came to that department only Clyde was the fortunate one, I wanna surprise Lisa, she'll love it for sure. By the time we get home the kids are fast asleep,I go tuck then in, I'm only left with an hour to prepare everything before my wife gets home.

I start with the chopping, I first fry some onions and put spices, I wait for it to cook properly as I prepare other stuff, everything is going quite smoothly, nothing burnt yet.

After setting the table and everything with candles and rose petals, I even made the lights deem for that romantic vibe, I've never in my life done anything like this, I usually just book a hotel where everything is already done for us,so I hope it's almost perfect.

I check the time,it's 20:05pm

Shit she's almost back, I quickly go upstairs and freshen up, I dress up in a nice fresh outfit, puff some cologne and head downstairs.

I set the sound system and put love song playlist.

Me:"perfect"

She should be here any minute now

I sit by the chair and wait as I already lit the candles

I check the time it's 20:58 she's supposed to be long home, she did promise eight o'clock

Maybe she got held up,I'll wait a bit longer I'm giving her nine thirty, I'm sure she'll be home by then.

Might as well open the champagne, I pour for myself and for Lisa. I click the glasses together

Me:"cheers Bub"

I drink up... I check the time once more its now 21:55pm

I'm almost finished with the bottle of champagne

I look at her glass which is still full

Me:"are you going to drink that wifey?"

Silence

Me:"I guess not"

I take her glass and gulp it down

I blow out the candles

Me:"so much for efforts...mxm"

I go upstairs to take my car keys, I check on the kids they sleeping peacefully and mah Vic is in her room. I head out, I can't stop thinking where is my wife doing what with who, I need some air.